

God Answers Your Questions

Containing one hundred and forty-one readings systematically arranged for home and class study, and answering nearly three thousand questions

by

W. L. Emmerson

www.CreationismOnline.com

SIGNS PUBLISHING COMPANY
1950
WARBURTON, VICTORIA, AUSTRALIA.

NEVER before have so many voices clamored for audience as in our day. From public platform, through the medium of the press, and over the ether, leaders of thought and action are insistently proclaiming their particular recipes for remedying the ills of mankind. Yet so diverse and mutually contradictory are they, that, instead of quieting man's fears and giving assurance and hope to a perplexed generation, the confusing Babel serves only to increase disquiet and deepen perplexity and despair.

Amid the darkness of earth's night of sin and woe, the hearts of men everywhere yearn for some authoritative Voice greater than man's to guide their erring steps into paths of truth and righteousness and peace.

To those who have had "ears to hear" such a Voice has spoken through the centuries in the pages of Holy Writ. And no less in the crisis hours of history to which we have come, has it a message of hope and courage for every responsive soul.

For many, however, a very real problem presents itself as the pages of the Sacred Volume are turned with sincere desire to understand its message of life. "How can I find an answer to the particular problem about which I am exercised? I have my Bible, but I need some guide to lead me along its highways and byways and point out its glories and holy truths."

It is to help meet this commonly felt need that the present work is sent forth. Its plan is simple. In one hundred and forty-one readings carefully compiled in counsel with experienced ministers, Bible teachers, and other Christian workers, an endeavor has been made to set forth the whole range of Bible teaching about the world and man, sin and salvation, the meaning of history, and the ultimate purpose of God—not in the form of a fallible human commentary, but as God's own answers in His own words to the age-long questions in the minds of men. And those who will prayerfully apply themselves to their study will find, we confidently believe, within the sacred pages of God's Word, a perfect answer to every problem, whether concerning this life or the life to come.

In the compilation of these studies, consideration has been given to all relevant passages, and from them the most pointed texts have been chosen in order to present comprehensively, yet within reasonable compass, the fundamental teachings of the Bible. In many places reference is also made to supporting texts, and with the aid of the marginal references in his own Bible the diligent student will be able to develop each theme at will.

While the essential purpose of the volume is to let the Bible speak for itself, brief explanatory notes, often in the words of great preachers and teachers, have been added here and there to emphasize the message of the inspired Word. In selecting these comments, no account has been taken of denominational barriers. The only criterion has been the sincerity and truth of their witness to the Evangelist of God.

It is thus hoped that those who approach the Bible for the first time will here find clear and simple guidance as they seek to comprehend the great doctrines of Holy Scripture, and that those who have made the Bible a life-long study may be led into a deeper and more blessed understanding of the profundities of divine revelation.

One other feature deserves special mention—the fine selection of masterpieces of sacred art with which the work has been profusely embellished. There have of course, been false prophets wielding brush and chisel, just as there have been false prophets in the pulpit. But none can deny that consecrated art has given a powerful witness to the truths of the gospel. Conscious of this debt, we have associated with the Bible studies some of the most inspiring examples of modern religious art, in order that the message of the Scriptures may be seen with the eyes as well as perceived by heart and mind. In both home and class study this pictorial presentation of the gospel will be of particular value in the instruction of the young.

Besides the plates illustrating Bible teachings, many photographs, taken by the author during extensive travels through Bible lands, have been included to show how modern discoveries have vindicated the truth of the Bible record.

That many, through these pages, may gain a new love for the Book of books and hear more clearly the "still small voice" which is seeking to make itself heard amid the din and clash of earthly strife is the sincere prayer of

THE AUTHOR

Contents

How we got our bible
Is our bible complete?
Can we believe the bible?
A book from heaven
Why we need the bible
How to understand your bible
A personal creator
Can we know God?
Does god care?
The demands of holiness
Is God in control?
How the world began what is man?
When came evil?
Do we need to be “saved”?
Was Jesus divine?
Prophecies that came true
Why Christ came
Did Jesus need to die?
The power of the resurrection
What is Jesus doing now?
Grace meets the sinner’s need
What is predestination?
Conviction of sin what is conversion?
Blessings of forgiveness
Justified by faith
Born from above
Reconciled to God
Righteousness by faith
God’s ten words
The laws of sacrifice
Which law was nailed to the cross?
God’s two covenants
Why God can have no rival
Man’s modern idols
The holiest name
God’s memorial
How old is the “week”?
A test of loyalty
The sabbath and the “sabbaths”
Did Jesus keep the sabbath?
The sabbath and the resurrection how was the sabbath changed?
Britain’s earliest faith
The bible sabbath recovered
How to observe the sabbath
God’s appeal to youth
The sanctity of life
Modern morals and the moral law
The rights of man
The power of the tongue
Deceitful riches
In his steps
Living by faith
Christian growth
Walking in the light
Bible perfection
Joy in the lord

Enduring to the end
Is God responsible?
Why do the innocent suffer?
The divine refiner
Suffering for Christ's sake
The privilege of prayer
How to pray
Prayers God will answer
For whom should we pray?
The holy spirit
Happened at Pentecost?
The spirit and the life the gifts of the spirit
Who are the angels?
Why are some angels bad?
Spiritualism-ancient and modern angel ministry
The Israel of god
The church of Christ
The privilege of worship
The ministry of song
The fellowship of saints
Is baptism essential?
A lesson in humility at the lord's table
Saved to serve
The great commission
What we owe to God
Freewill offerings
Ministry to the needy
A sacred ordinance
The ideal husband
The ideal wife
Privileges of parenthood
The home and the child
Best stories from the best book
A pattern for youth
Ideals of womanhood
The gospel of good health
The bible and diet
Menace of intemperance
Christian temperance
The powers that be
Privileges of citizenship master and servant
Does prophecy matter?
Light in a dark place
Can we understand prophecy?
God's blue-print of history
The anarchy of nations antichrist unmasked
The battle-ground of empires
Heaven's zero hour
Will Christianity survive?
The future unsealed
Dissolving empires
Through tribulation to triumph
The great conspiracy
America and world destiny
Heaven's last appeal
Marks of the remnant
The two seals
When the storm breaks
The "blessed hope"
Will Christ really come?

Is the end near?
 What do these things mean?
 Will the world be converted?
 God's strange act
 The saints' reward
 Satan's last battle
 Is death the end? Are the dead alive?
 When will the dead rise?
 Will there be a day of reckoning?
 When will the judgment begin?
 The day of the Lord
 How will God punish the wicked?
 Will hell burn forever?
 Shall we go to heaven?
 "thy kingdom come" God's "new order who will be there?"

Until the day of his death, Bede continued his work of translating the Scriptures into Anglo-Saxon.

1. The Scriptures

How We Got Our Bible

1. How close was man's earliest fellowship with God?

"And they heard the voice of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day.... And the Lord God called unto Adam." Genesis 3:8, 9.

2. By what tragedy was this intimate communion broken?

"Your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid His face from you." Isaiah 59:2.

3. After the entrance of sin what modified method of communication did God adopt?

"God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spoke in time past unto the fathers by the Prophets." Hebrews 1:1.

4. In process of time what nation did God single out to be the special medium of His revelations?

"What advantage then has the Jew? ... Much every way: chiefly, because that unto them were committed the oracles of God." Romans 3:1,2. (See also Romans 9: 4.)

5. What further provision did God make in order to keep a knowledge of His will before His chosen people?

"And the Lord said unto Moses, Write this for a memorial in a book." Exodus 17:14. (See also Exodus 24:4.)

In His providence God gathered up the record of the past and communicated it to Moses, instructing him to write it in a book to form the nucleus of a written revelation which could be handed down from generation to generation without fear of corruption. By inspiration Moses wrote the books of Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, and Deuteronomy, which became known as "the book of Moses" (2 Chronicles 25: 4), "the book of the law of Moses" (Joshua 23:6), and in later times the Pentateuch. Moses undoubtedly also wrote the Book of Job.

6. Who was commissioned to continue the sacred record after the death of Moses? "And Joshua wrote these words in the book of the law of God." Joshua 24: 26.

7. When Israel settled in Canaan through whom did God give further guidance and reproof to His people? "The Lord testified against Israel, and against Judah, by all the prophets, and by all the seers." 2 Kings 17: 13.

During the period of the monarchy there were added to the books of Moses and Joshua, the books of Samuel, the earlier parts of Kings and Chronicles, the psalms of David, Proverbs, the Song of Solomon, Ecclesiastes, and the writings of the earlier 'prophets, Isaiah, Jeremiah, Hosea, Joel, and Amos.

8. During the captivity of Israel and Judah or immediately after the return what new books were incorporated into the Scriptures?

Ezekiel, Daniel, Obadiah, Nahum, Habakkuk, Zephaniah, and perhaps the latter parts of the books of Kings and Chronicles.

9. How did the returned captives indicate their desire to understand the words of the Lord? "And all the people gathered themselves together; ... and they spoke unto Ezra the scribe unto bring the book of the law of Moses, which the Lord had commanded to Israel." Nehemiah 8:1. (Read verses 1-8.)

10. What remaining books were added in post-captivity days to complete the Old Testament as we now have it?

Ezra, Nehemiah, Esther, Haggai, Zechariah, and Malachi.

With the Book of Malachi, written about 400BC, the canon of the Old Testament was completed, having been in process of formation for over 1,000 years.

11. How did Jesus refer to the Scriptures in His day?

“These are the words which I spoke unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms, concerning Me.” Luke 24:44.

This threefold division was the customary classification of the Old Testament books in the days of Jesus, the “Law of Moses” -including the five books of the Pentateuch; “the prophets” comprising Joshua, judges, 1 and 2 Samuel, 1 and 2 Kings, Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, and the twelve minor prophets. While the third division was called “the psalms” because these were first in order, but it included also Proverbs, Job, Song of Solomon, Ruth, Lamentations, Ecclesiastes, Esther, Daniel, Ezra (including Nehemiah), and 1 and 2 Chronicles.

12. What form did the earliest writings of the New Testament take?

“I charge you by the Lord that this epistle be read unto all the holy brethren.” 1 Thessalonians 5:27; (See also Colossians 4:16.)

As time passed it became more and more difficult for the apostles personally to visit all the groups of Christian believers which were springing up. So in order to meet the need of further instruction in the faith, to combat prevailing error, and to warn against strange and heretical teachers, they were led to send forth messages of warning and exhortation. (See 1 Corinthians 1:1,2; Galatians 1:1,2; Ephesians 1:1; James 1:1; 1 Peter 1:1, etc.)

13. What portions of the New Testament were next written?

“Forasmuch as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among us . . . it seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus, that thou might know the certainty of those things, wherein thou has been instructed.” Luke 1: 1-4.

Some thirty-five years had passed since Jesus was taken away, and persecution was decimating the ranks of the disciples. Soon there would be no one who had been with Jesus to tell the story of His life and teachings. So several were led to prepare authoritative accounts, and the Gospels came into being. The earliest was written by Mark; Matthew wrote his Gospel soon after, followed by Luke. John’s Gospel came much later, and was perhaps the last of the New Testament books to be written.

14. In addition to his Gospel what further record was Luke inspired to set down in writing?

The “Acts of the Apostles” as they went forth to fulfil the great commission given them by Jesus. (See Acts 1:1.)

15. With what wonderful prophetic communication was the New Testament completed?

“The revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto Him, to show unto His servants things which must shortly come to pass; and He sent and signified it by His angel unto His servant John.” Revelation 1:1.

By AD 100 all the books of our present New Testament had been written. That this was in the providence of God is clearly evident, for not one of the apostles, save perhaps John only lived to see the beginning of the second century. The believers now began systematically to copy out and circulate the apostolic writings with the Old Testament Scriptures. From the middle of the second century, testimony is forthcoming from every part of the Roman Empire to the general acceptance of the whole Bible, as we know it, as the inspired Word of God.

16. How did God intend that the Bible should be used?

a.It was to be read publicly in the assemblies of God’s people. “Go thou, and read in the roll, which thou has written from My mouth, the words of the Lord in the ears of the people in the Lord’s house.” Jeremiah 36: 6. (See also Nehemiah 8:8.)

b.It was to be earnestly studied by the individual believer. “Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needs not to be ashamed.” 2 Timothy 2:15.

17. What blessed result would follow the wholehearted acceptance of the Word?

“These are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing you might have life through His name.” John 20:31.

Is Our Bible Complete?

1. Do all Bibles contain exactly the same books as our Authorized and Revised Versions?

No, the Douay Bible of the Roman Catholic Church contains what is known as the Apocrypha. This comprises seven extra books in the Old Testament, namely: Tobit, Baruch, Judith, Wisdom, Ecclesiasticus, and 1 and 2 Maccabees, together with seven additional chapters to the Book of Esther and sixty-six extra verses in the third chapter of Daniel called, “The Story of the Three Children.”

2.What does the Roman Catholic Church say with reference to the contents of her Bible?

“If anyone does not receive the entire books with all their parts as they are accustomed to be read in the Catholic Church, and in the Old Latin Vulgate Edition, as sacred and canonical. . . let them be anathema.” Decree of the Council of Trent, 1546.

3. Can we ascertain what books there were in the Old Testament as used in the days of Christ?

“The books which are definitely enumerated [by the Jews] as part of the collection of Holy Scripture are exactly the same as those books of the Old Testament which are now received. And there is no trace of any explicit difference of opinion on the subject, or of any attempt to extend the collection by the addition of later writings.” -Bishop Westcott in “The Bible in the Church,” page 49.

4. From what Old Testament books did Christ and the apostles quote?

While Christ and the apostles quoted from practically every book in the Protestant canon they never quoted any of the apocryphal books as Scripture, nor even recognized their existence. This indicates conclusively that they did not regard any-of these latter as of divine origin.

5. Did the early church accept the apocryphal writings?

"The apocryphal books were not admitted into the canon of Scripture during the first centuries of the Christian church. As Bishop Barnet well observes, We have the concurring sense of the whole church of God in this matter." - Thomas Hartwell Horne, B.D., in "An Introduction to the Critical Study and Knowledge of the Holy Scriptures," pages 458, 459.

6. Have any Roman Catholics ever questioned the inclusion of the Apocrypha in their Bible?

Yes. The great Roman Catholic scholar Jerome, when instructed by Pope Damasus about AD 400 to prepare the standard Latin Vulgate version, wanted to exclude the Apocrypha as having no place in Scripture. He was prevented from doing so however, and under pressure allowed them to remain to be "read for purposes of edification." Thus the Roman Catholics cannot even claim the support of their chief translator for the Apocrypha.

7. What other Catholic authorities have pronounced against the authority of the apocryphal writings?

Augustine followed Jerome in recognizing a difference between the canonical and apocryphal books. The Spanish and Trans-alpine churches rejected the Apocrypha. The British Catholic scholars Bede, John of Salisbury (1180), and William Ockharn (1347) all separated the apocryphal books. Cardinal Ximenes, in his magnificent Polyglot Bible, separated the Apocrypha from the rest of Scripture in the sixteenth century.

Even after the Council of Florence in 1442 and the Council of Trent in 1546 had pronounced the apocryphal books equally as inspired as the other books, Sixtus of Siena (1566) insisted on separating the Apocrypha from the rest of the canon, and Bernard Lamy declared, "Nevertheless they are not of the same authority."

8. Why then does Rome insist on retaining the Apocrypha?

Because the apocryphal books can be quoted in support of some of the false doctrines of the church.

(a) Prayers for the dead are advocated. "If he had not hoped that they that were slain should have risen again, it had been superfluous and vain to pray for the dead." 2 Maccabees 12:44.

(b). The dead are represented as praying for themselves. "O Lord Almighty, Thou God of Israel, hear now the prayers of the dead Israelites, and of their children, which have sinned before Thee." Baruch 3: 4.

(c). The meritorious value of almsgiving is emphasized. "For alms does deliver from death, and shall purge away all sin. Those that exercise alms and righteousness shall be filled with life." Tobit 12:9.

(d). The doctrine of purgatory is suggested. "The souls of the righteous are in the hand of God, and there shall no torment touch them." - Wisdom 3: 1.

"The apocryphal books prove by contrast that the books of the Hebrew canon, as a whole, are generically distinct from the ordinary religious literature of the Jews; and establish more clearly than anything else the absolute originality of the gospel." - Bishop Wescott in - "The Bible in the Church," Page 291.

9. To what conclusion must we therefore come with respect to the Apocrypha? That it has no place in the canon of divine revelation.

10. What solemn warnings should be heeded by those who seek to add to or detract from Holy Writ? "You shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall you diminish ought from it, that you may keep the commandments of the Lord your God which I command you." Deuteronomy 4:2.

Can We Believe the Bible?

WHAT, claim does the psalmist make for the Scriptures?

"Thy Word is true from the beginning." Psalm 1-19: 160.

The "higher critics" dispute this statement, declaring that they have discovered many historical, geographical, chronological, scientific, and other "mistakes" in the Scriptures. They therefore contend that if the Bible is not accurate in details which can be tested by outside evidence, it certainly cannot be "infallible" in its spiritual teaching.

2. How important is it that we be certain as to the basis of our faith? "If the foundations be destroyed, what can the righteous do?" Psalm 11:3.

3. How should Christians prepare themselves to meet these attacks upon the Bible?

"Be ready always to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason for the hope that is in you with meekness and fear." 1 Peter 3: 15.

4. To what do the Scriptures direct us to turn for evidence in support of their trustworthiness?

"Ask now the beasts, and they shall teach thee; and the fowls of the air, and they shall tell thee: or speak to the earth, and it shall teach thee: and the fishes of the sea shall declare unto thee." Job 12:7, 8.

5. How do the heavens witness to the truth of the Bible?

"C7lie heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament shows His handiwork." Psalm 19: 1.

"Everything points with overwhelming force to a definite event, or series of events, of creation at some time or other. The universe cannot have originated by chance out of its present ingredients, and neither can it always have been the same as now." - Sir James Jeans in "Eos," pages 52-55.

6. What witness do all created things give to their Maker and to the truth of the Bible record?

“For the invisible things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead.” Romans 1:20.

“Today scientists of the first rank have almost unanimously declared that science demands the intervention of a Creator.” Reverend E. J. Gill before the British Association.

“The exquisite structure of the sun, the planets, and the comets could not have had their origin but by the plan and absolute dominion of an intelligent and powerful Being.” - Isaac Newton.

7. Mention some striking facts of the natural world which were actually anticipated in the Bible long before they were discovered by the scientists.

a. “He . . . hangs the earth upon nothing.” Job 26: 7.

The suspension of the earth in space was discovered by Copernicus in 1475.

b. “He looks to the ends of the earth, to make the weight for the winds.” Job 28:24, 25. Galileo (1630) was the first to affirm that air had weight.

c. “Who has measured the waters in the hollow of His hand, and meted out heaven with the span, and comprehended the dust of the earth in a measure, and weighed the mountains in scales, and the hills in a balance?” Isaiah 40:12.

Only in recent years has it been realized how important are the proportions and balance of the land masses and oceans on the earth’s surface.

d. “They [the heavens and the earth] shall perish; but Thou remains; and they all shall wax old as does a garment.” Hebrews 1: 11.

Not, until the twentieth century was the progressive aging and disintegration of matter by radioactivity discovered. Nature is going down the steps; any upward step is impossible.” - Sir James Jeans in “The Universe Around Us,” Page 306.

e. “For the life of all flesh is the blood thereof.” Leviticus 17:14.

The circulation and function of the blood was discovered by William Harvey in 1615.

“Tested by cosmogony, astronomy, geology, and zoology, physiology and comparative anatomy, natural philosophy and sanitary science, etc., this Book evinces superhuman knowledge and wisdom. Hence the Bible is a scientific marvel. It belongs to the oldest class of literature, yet it is the youngest and newest in adaptation to scientific discovery, and perpetually keeps abreast of human progress.” - Dr. Arthur T. Pierson in “Many Infallible Proofs.”

8. How have men spoken “to the earth” and what has it taught?

Buried civilizations of earlier days have yielded their treasures to the spade of the archeologist.

9. What are some striking examples of Bible facts once denied by the critics, but which have been completely confirmed by modern archeological discoveries?

a. They declared that Abraham was a half -savage nomad quite incapable of the activities credited to him in the Biblical record. But in recent years it has been proved by Professor Leonard Woolley that a high state of civilization existed in the Near East long before the days of Abraham. (Read Woolley’s “Ur of the Chaldees.”)

b. They ridiculed the account of the capture of Jericho by Joshua until Professor Garstang of Liverpool University excavated the site and declared: “Set side by side with the Biblical narrative the material evidence is seen to bear out, in every essential detail, the record of the capture and destruction of Jericho by the Israelites under Joshua.” - Joshua, Judges.

c. They once denied the existence of the Hittites. But Professor Wm. Sayce of Cambridge proved the existence and extent of the Hittite Empire by excavating thousands of remains from all over Asia Minor and Northern Syria. (Read Sayce’s “Monument Facts and Higher Critical Fallacies.”)

d. They denied that there ever was a king of Babylon called Belshazzar. Today more than 500 tablets mentioning his name are known. (Read Dougherty’s “Nabonidus and Belshazzar.”)

e. They, asserted that the Book of Acts was entirely untrustworthy in its history and geography. Sir William M. Ramsay, however, after years of travel in Asia Minor, conclusively declared, “Luke’s history is unsurpassed in respect of its trustworthiness.” (Read “Luke the Historian,” by A. T. Robertson.)

10. What testimonies have noted excavators borne respecting the results of archeological research?

“The Higher Criticism is bankrupt whenever tested by the facts of modern discovery and scientific archeology. The rout is complete.” - Professor. Sayce in a letter to the Reverend A. H. T. Clarke of Devizes, quoted in the Church of England Newspaper.

“A little dose of archeology is a wonderful corrective to the fertile imagination, and furnishes a wholesome check to speculative criticism.” - Canon Girdlestone in a Foreword to “Biblical Discoveries in Egypt, Palestine, and Mesopotamia.”

“Modern criticism, neither on internal nor on external grounds has been able to throw any doubt on the authenticity of a single book of our New Testament. Their authenticity, accuracy, and honesty are super-vindicated by every new investigation.” - Professor B. B. Warfield, in “New Testament Criticism.”

11. In what striking prophecy did a noted scientist foreshadow the vindication of the Bible by scientific research?

“When science makes its next attack upon theology, if indeed that shall ever be again, it will find an armament, largely furnished by itself, which has made the Bible as impregnable as nature.” - Professor Henry Drummond in he “Expositor,” Third Series, Volume I.

12. In what Biblical terms may we therefore express our confidence in 1 the trustworthiness and accuracy of the Scriptures?

“Thy Word-is very pure: therefore Thy servant loves it.” Psalm 119: 140.

A Book from Heaven

1. WHAT terms applied to the Biblical record affirm its divine origin?

“The Book of the Lord.” Isaiah 34: 16. “The Gospel of God.” Romans 1:1. “The Oracles of God.” Romans 3:2. “The Word of God.”- Hebrews 6:5. “The Word of Christ.” Colossians 3:16.

2. From whom do the Bible writers claim to have received their messages?

“And God spoke all these words.” Exodus 20:1. “The Spirit of the Lord spoke by me, and His word was in my tongue.” 2 Samuel 23:2. “The revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto Him, and He sent and signified it by His angel unto His servant John.” Revelation 1:1.

3. How explicitly do they disclaim credit for their compositions?

a.They specifically disavow responsibility for their revelations. “I certify you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me is not after man. For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.” Galatians 1:11, 12.

b.They often did not understand their writings. “I heard, but I understood not.” Daniel 12: 8.

4. Do the Bible writers claim inspiration only for the general thought or teaching of Scripture or for the actual Words?

“He said unto me, Son of man, all My words that I shall speak unto thee receive in your heart, and hear with your ears.” Ezekiel 3:10. “Which things also we speak, not in the words which man’s wisdom teaches, but which the Holy Ghost teaches.” 1 Corinthians 2:13.

5. How do they acknowledge each other’s inspiration?

“I Daniel understood by books the number of the years, whereof the word of the Lord came to Jeremiah the prophet, that He would accomplish seventy years in the desolation of Jerusalem.” Daniel 9:2. “Our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given unto him has written unto you.” 2 Peter 3:15.

6. What seal does Jesus set on the inspiration of the Scriptures?

“All things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms, concerning Me.” Luke 24: 44. “The Scripture cannot be broken.” John 10:35.

7.Are there any evidences apart from the claims of Scripture that the Bible is an inspired Book?

Yes, there are many, of which may be specially mentioned: (a) its marvelous unity, (b) its superhuman range of teaching, (c) its perpetual freshness and universal appeal, (d) its transforming power upon the individual, (e) the fulfillment of its prophecies, and (f) its indestructibility.

8. Why is the Bible’s unity of doctrine so remarkable? The Scriptures comprise sixty-six books written by some forty or more authors over a period of one and a half millenniums. Yet there is one system of doctrine, one rule of faith, and running from Genesis to Revelation there is one dominant theme, redemption through the cross of Christ. The unity and plan exhibited on every page of the Scriptures testify to an activity more than human guiding the pens of the writers and guiding the church in gathering the books which had been so written.

9. How completely is human wisdom eclipsed by the teachings of the Bible?

“Where is the wise? Where is the scribe? Where is the disputer of this world? Has not God made foolish the wisdom of this world?” 1 Corinthians 1: 20.

The Scriptures offer a clear solution to all the problems of life. They treat upon God and man, the meaning of sin and suffering and death, of origin and destiny, in a manner understandable to the simplest and yet inexhaustible in their profundity. They exhibit a coherence and a sense of proportion not found elsewhere. How did the Hebrews, surrounded by nations steeped in polytheism and nature worship, come to possess so unique a body of doctrine if not by divine revelation?

10. What is notable about the perpetual freshness and universal appeal of the Scriptures?

“The Word of God lives.” 1 Peter 1: 23.

Though this Book has neither been added to nor detracted from for nearly two thousand years it meets the needs of men today as fully as it met the needs of those who were contemporary with the original writers. It appeals not to one class of society, but to every sort and condition of men from highly civilized peoples to savages in the darkest corners of the earth. Nor is even this all. Its message never palls. The oftener it is read, the more it is enjoyed. The deeper the mine is dug the broader grows the vein and the richer the ore. These are not the marks of merely human genius.

11. What remarkable power upon the individual does the Bible possess?

“For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because, when you received the Word of God which you heard of us, you received it not as the word of men, but as it is in truth, the Word of God, which effectually works also in you that believe.” 1 Thessalonians 2:13. (See also 1 Peter 1:23.)

The Bible is something more even than a unique system of religion and ethics. It is possessed of a power which is not paralleled by any human composition. The Bible comes to men sunk in degradation and sin, arrests them in their downward course,

and builds up characters of righteousness. Those who have experienced its transforming power have no need to be convinced by argument. They know that the Bible is not a human book.

The original "Bounty" Bible and Prayer Book used by John Adams on Pitcairn Island. As sole survivor of the "Bounty" mutineers, he used this treasured Book to educate the children and to administer the island. It is now back on Pitcairn after having been carefully repaired.

"I cannot argue with you," said an old Highlander to Claudius Buchanan; "I cannot present theological facts or reasons; I cannot explain the philosophy of revelation. But I know this, that when I was a man of evil character the Bible got hold of me and quelled the tiger in me."

12. Who only could have inspired the marvelously accurate prophecies of Scripture?

"I am God, and there is none like Me, declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done." Isaiah 46:9, 10.

"The revelations of prophecy are facts which exhibit the divine Omniscience. So long as Babylon is in heaps; so long as Nineveh is empty, void, and waste; so long as Egypt is the basest of kingdoms; so long as Tyre is a place for the spreading of nets in the midst of the sea. So long as the great empires of the world march on in their predicted course-so long have we proof that one omniscient Mind dictated the predictions of that Book." H. L. Hastings in "Will the Old Book Stand?" Page 19.

13. How has the Bible been able to survive the constant persecution to which it has been subjected through the ages?

"Heaven and earth shall pass away: but My words shall not pass away." Luke 21:33. "The Word of God lives and abides for ever." 1 Peter 1:23.

No book has lived through such fierce and relentless persecution. Antiochus Epiphanes vented his wrath against the Old Testament Scriptures, and the Roman emperors, especially Diocletian, against the New. In the subsequent centuries there has hardly been an hour's cessation of attack upon it. Yet in spite of all the assaults of infidelity, pseudo-science, and higher criticism, this wonderful Book is still the "best seller" of all. The reason can only be that the Mind which inspired its contents has also preserved it from every attack, that the world might never lack a sure Guide to this life and the life to come.

14. Surveying all these evidences what must be our verdict concerning the Bible?

"All Scripture is given by inspiration of God." 2 Timothy 3:16. "Holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Ghost." 2 Peter 1:21.

"The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life." John 6: 63.

Why We Need the Bible

1. WHAT knowledge is unattainable by human wisdom?

"Can thou by searching find out God?" Job 11: 7. "How unsearchable are His judgments, and His ways past finding out!" Romans 11:33.

2. How only can we attain unto this knowledge?

"The secret things belong unto the Lord our God: but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children for ever." Deuteronomy 29:29.

"The Scriptures are the only records in which God has been pleased to consign His truth to perpetual remembrance." - Calvin.

3. What confidence may we have in the knowledge which comes to us through the Word of God?

"Have not I written to thee excellent things in counsels and knowledge, that I might make thee know the, certainty of the words of truth; that thou might answer the words of truth to them that send unto thee?" Proverbs 22:20, 21.

"There is no sure doctrine but such as is conformable to the Word of God. This Word is the only truth; it is the sure rule of all doctrine and of all life, and can never fail or deceive us." - Protest of the Princes, cited in DAubigne's "History of the Reformation," Volume IV, page 75.

4. To a world alienated from God through sin what assurance does the Bible bring?

"I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation, to every one that believes." Romans 1:16.

"The Christian religion has news about God and man; and its first news-yes, let us admit the fact-is bad news, the news of man's sin and God's wrath against sin, but the Christian religion has not only bad news: it has-and this is the important thing about it-good news." - Revelation A. H. Rees, MA, in the Church Times.

5. What spiritual transformation is made possible through the Word?

"Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the Word of God, which lives and abides forever." 1 Peter 1:23.

6. How does the Word continue to bless the transformed life?

a. It gives understanding. "The entrance of Thy words gives light; it gives understanding unto the simple." Psalm 119: 130.

b. It keeps from sin. "Thy Word have I hid in mine heart, that I might not sin against Thee." Psalm 119: 11.

c. It guides in the way of life. "Thy Word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path." Psalm 119: 105.

d.It builds up. “And now brethren, I commend you to God, and to the Word of His grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.” Acts 20:32.

e.It gives hope. “For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the Scriptures might have hope.” Romans 15:4.

7. How completely does the Bible meet human needs?

“All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: that the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.” - 2 Timothy 3:16, 17.

“The object is not merely to convince and to convert him; it is to furnish all the instruction needful for his entire perfection. There is no deficiency in the Bible for man in any of the situations in which he may be placed in life; and the whole tendency of the Book is to make him who will put himself fairly under its instructions absolutely perfect.” - Albert Barnes.

8. What value therefore does Job place upon the Word?

“Neither have I gone back from the commandment of His lips; I have esteemed the words of His mouth more than my necessary food.” Job 23:12.

9.What supreme gifts come to us through the Word of God?

“These things have I written unto you that you may know that you have eternal life.” 1 John 5:13. “He called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.” 2 Thessalonians 2:14.

10. Where will the Bible lead those who take it as their guide?

“O send out Thy light and Thy truth; let them lead me; let them bring me unto Thy holy hill, and to Thy tabernacles.” Psalm 43:3.

“I want to know one thing-the way to heaven; how to land safe on that happy shore. God Himself has condescended to teach the way. He has written it down in a book. Oh, give me that Book! At any price, give me that Book of God!” - John Wesley.

The sterling qualities in Timothy’s character were developed because of his interest and diligence in studying God’s Word.

11. On the other hand, what dire results will follow its neglect? “Who so despises the Word shall be destroyed.” Proverbs 13:13. “There is Jehovah’s revelation of Himself to men. Receive it or be lost. Reject it and perish!” - C. H. Spurgeon.

12. What then should-be our attitude to the Word?

a.Seek after it. “Seek you out of the Book of the Lord, and read.” Isaiah 34: 16.

b.Give earnest heed to it. “Therefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let them slip.” Hebrews 2:1.

c.Obey it. “Be you doers of the Word, and not hearers only.” James 1: 22.

A message of life and comfort from the Book that never grows old.

How to Understand Your Bible

1. W11AT is the Apostle Paul’s desire for all believers?

“I cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers; that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him.” Ephesians 1:15-17.

2. How early in life may the study of the Bible be profitably begun?

“From a child thou has known the Holy Scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation.” 2 Timothy 3: 15.

Catherine Booth had read the Bible through eight times before she was twelve years of age.

3. How constant thereafter should be, our study?

“These [in Berea] were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the Word with all readiness of mind, and searched the Scriptures daily, whether those things were so.” Acts 17: 11.

“Do not believe me simply unless you receive proof of what I say from Holy Scripture.” - Cyril of Jerusalem, in “Catechumen,” 4, 17, 33 (AD 348).

4. In what spirit should we approach the Word?

a.As God’s Word to us. “For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because, when you received the Word of God which you heard of us, you received it not as the word of men, but as it is in truth, the Word of God, which effectively works also in you that believe.” 1 Thessalonians 2: 13.

b.Ready to obey its precepts. “If any man will to do His will, he shall know of the doctrine.” John 7: 17.

5. What attitude is fatal to profitable Bible study?

“You reject the commandment of God, that you may keep your own tradition.” Mark 7: 9.

T. H. Huxley’s fine statement on studying the book of nature is equally applicable to the study of the written Word. “Sit down before fact [and the Bible] as a little child, be prepared to give up every preconceived notion, follow humbly wherever nature [and the Bible] leads, or you shall learn nothing.”

6. Is lack of education a bar to the understanding of the Word of God?

“I thank Thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because Thou has, hid these things from the Wise and prudent, and. has revealed them unto babes. Even so, Father: for so it seemed good in Thy sight.” Matthew 11:25, 26.

7. Why is human wisdom no help in comprehending the Word?

“The natural man receives not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.” 1 Corinthians 2:14. (See also 1 Corinthians 2:11)

8. Whence may we obtain the necessary spiritual discernment?

“We have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.” 1 Corinthians 2: 12. (See also verse 10.)

9. Is all Scripture equally understandable?

“Our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given unto him has written unto you; in which are some things hard to be understood.” 2 Peter 3:15, 16.

10. How then should we begin our Bible study? “Desire the sincere milk of the Word.” 1 Peter 2: 2.

11. Having mastered the fundamental principles of the gospel, to what should we proceed?

“Strong meat belonged to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.” Hebrews 5:14.

12. How did the Apostle Paul reprove certain believers for lack of progress in study?

“For when for the time you ought to be teachers, you have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat.” Hebrews 5:12.

How many are there today in the same spiritual condition, old in association with the faith and yet babes in understanding! Such is not the Father’s plan for His children. The Christian life should be an Advance, a growing day by day in grace and in the knowledge of God.

13. What admonition does he give to those who have failed to dig deep into the mine of truth?

“Leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto Perfection.” Hebrews 6:1.

Not forsaking or abandoning them, but leaving them as a child leaves the letters of the alphabet, or as a plant lifts its head above the ground and presses upward toward the sun, yet ever drawing sustenance from its root.

14. What principles should govern our study of the Word?

a. Associate relevant Scriptures. “Comparing spiritual things with spiritual.” 1 Corinthians 2:13.

b. Synthesize and build up. “Precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little.” Isaiah 28:10.

“The infallible rule of ‘interpretation of Scripture is the Scripture itself; and, therefore, when there is a question about the true and full sense of any Scripture (which is not manifold, but one), it must be searched and known by other places that speak more clearly.” - Westminster Confession of Faith (1647).

15. How much of the Bible may we profitably study?

“All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness.” 2 Timothy 3:16. “And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, He expounded unto them in all the Scriptures the things concerning Himself.” Luke 24:27.

“Guard against favorites in the Word of God. Take the Bible as a whole; reverence every part of it. Study every portion of it. You will find none unprofitable. The more your mind is enlarged to grasp and come in contact with revelation as a whole, the more will your tone of piety be healthy, and the more will your principles be fixed, broad, and firm.” - Revelation H. Stowell.

16. To what portions of Scripture should we give special attention?

“Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of these things, though you know them, and be established in the Present truth.” 2 Peter 1:12.

The message of Noah was urgent “present truth” to the generation before the Flood. The books of Daniel and the Revelation together with other prophecies of the latter days” and the last time” are equally urgent and important to Christians today. (See Daniel 12:4; Revelation 1:1-3.)

17. What beneficent results come from a diligent study of the Word?

a. It points the way to personal salvation. “The Holy Scriptures are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus.” 2 Timothy 3:15.

b. It equips for the service of God. “Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needs not to be ashamed.” 2 Timothy 2:15.

c. It gives sure hope of future glory. “The hope which is laid up for you in heaven, whereof you heard before in the word of the truth of the gospel.” Colossians 1:5.

2. God

A Personal Creator

1. WITH what affirmation does the Bible open?

“In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.” Genesis 1:1.

“How tremendous are the implications of this simple statement! It denies atheism by declaring that there is a God. It denies agnosticism by implying that God may be known. It denies pantheism by distinguishing between the Creator and the creation. It denies polytheism by revealing that God is One. Indeed, there is no false ‘ism’ which is not condemned by this statement.” - Dr. W. Graham Scroggie, in “The Christian.”

2. In what other ways does the Bible teach that God is a personal Being?

a. He is described as “living.” “He is the living God.” Jeremiah 10:10.

b. Personal faculties and actions are attributed to Him. “The eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, and His ears are open unto their prayers: but the face of the Lord is against them that do evil.” 1 Peter 3: 12.

c. Jesus is declared to be the “Son” of God and Jesus claims God as His “Father.” “God sent forth His Son. .. to redeem them that were under the law.” Galatians 4: 4, 5. “And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice⁹ He said, Father, into Thy hands I commend My spirit.” Luke 23:46.

d. He is called the “Father” of man and the righteous are described as His “sons.” “But to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things.” 1 Corinthians 8:6. “You are the children of the Lord your God.” Deuteronomy 14:1.

3. What testimony does nature bear to the existence and personality of God?

“The invisible things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made even His eternal power and Godhead.” Romans 1:20.

“There is nothing between absolute scientific belief in a creative Being and the acceptance of the theories of the fortuitous concurrence of atoms. If you think strongly enough you will be forced by science to the belief in God, which is the foundation of all religion.” -Lord Kelvin.

“What a thunderstorm of facts! But what do they all signify? Is it all a meaningless maze of materialistic facts, or is it one syllable in God’s explanation of Himself to men, so that the ‘meanest flower that blows’ and the merest hint of design, show the working of the mind and power of One whom a son may call Father?”-Revelation Leslie D. W. Weatherhead in “The Eternal Voice.”

4. How do the Scriptures therefore regard those who deny His existence?

“The fool has said in his heart, There is no God.” Psalm 53:1.

“Posterity will one day laugh at the foolishness of the modern materialistic philosopher. The more I study nature, the more I stand amazed at the works of the Creator. I pray while I am engaged in my work at the laboratory,” - Louis Pasteur.

“Atheism, unlike agnosticism, with which it should not be confused-Atheism, the denial of God, is not a system of philosophy fit for intelligent people; seeing that it totally fails to account for the universe, life, and human experience. And also is generally rejected by scientific opinion, at least in this country.”-Dr. Heywood, Bishop of Ely, in the Church Times.

5. How do the Scriptures emphasize the unity of the Godhead? “God is one.” Galatians 3: 20.

6. What does the Bible say of God in contrast with other alleged gods?

“Though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, (as there be gods many, and lords many,) but to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we in Him.” 1 Corinthians 8:5, 6.

7. What title does the Lord take to distinguish Himself from all other claimants? “The Lord is the true God.” Jeremiah 10:10.

8. What difference is there between the personality of God and of man?

a. He is invisible to mortal eyes. “Lo, He goes by me, and I see Him not: He passes on also, but I perceive Him not.” Job 9:

11.

b. He is not subject to the limitations of human personality. “God is a spirit.” John 4: 24.

c. His attributes are inherent in Him, whereas man’s are derived from God. “The Father has life in Himself.” John 5: 26.

d. In all things He infinitely transcends His creatures. “His understanding is infinite.” Psalm 147: e. “With God all things are possible.” Matthew 19: 26. “There is none holy as the Lord: for there is none beside Thee.” 1 Samuel 2: 2.

9. How enduring is the being of God?

“Even from everlasting to everlasting, Thou art God.” Psalm 90:2.

10. What Bible statements indicate that God has a definite dwelling-place?

“The Lord’s throne is in heaven.” Psalm 11:4. “Hear Thou in heaven Thy dwelling-place.” 1 Kings 8: 39. (See also Psalm 103:19.)

11. Though dwelling in heaven, is He limited thereto?

“Am I a God at hand, said the Lord, and not a God afar off? Do not I fill heaven and earth?” Jeremiah 23: 23, 24.

12. How close does He seek to come to His creatures?

“I dwell in the high and holy place, with him also that is of a contrite and humble spirit.” Isaiah 57: 15.

13. What should the majesty and love of God evoke from us?

“O come, let us worship and bow down: let us kneel before the Lord our Maker.” Psalm 95: 6.

14. What are the essential factors in acceptable worship?

“God is a spirit: and they that worship Him must worship Him in spirit and in truth.” John 4:24. “Without faith it is impossible to please Him.” Hebrews 11:6. “Worship the Lord in the beauty of holiness.” Psalm 29: 2.

15. For what are the ungodly condemned?

“The God, in whose hand thy breath is, and whose are all thy ways, has thou not glorified.” Daniel 5: 23.

16. In what tragic way has their worship been diverted through sin?

“Who changed the, truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever.” Romans 1:25.

17. What appeal, therefore, does Paul make to the wicked?

“We preach unto you that you should turn from these vanities unto the living God, which made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein.” Acts 14:15.

18. What, in fact, will be the theme of the last gospel appeal to the world?

“Fear God, and give glory to Him; and worship Him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.” Revelation 14: 7.

“It may well be that this announcement of God as the Creator is the very thing that our own generation needs most to consider, if it would retrace its steps from the broad road leading to destruction which evolution and modernism have opened up. The more thoughtful thinkers are warning us that the only escape from the paths of error is for mankind to return to the first words of the Bible, that God is the Creator.” - Sir William Dawson in “The Bible Confirmed by Science.”

Can We Know God?

1. IN what tragic state of ignorance did Paul find the people of Athens?

“As I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD.” Acts 17: 23.

2. By contrast what striking affirmation did Paul make?

“I know whom I have believed.” 2 Timothy 1: 12.

“The heart of religion is not an opinion about God such as philosophy might reach as the conclusion of its argument it is a personal relationship with God.” - Dr. W. Temple, Archbishop of Canterbury, in “Nature, Man, and God,” page 54.

3. How does he express his desire for others?

“I cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers; that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him.” Ephesians 1:15-17.

The only knowledge which is of any avail in the light of eternity is a personal, intimate knowledge of God. Christianity is not merely belief in certain facts about a Person; it is rather a knowledge of that Person. Only this can transform lives and solve the problems of humanity. Christianity is not a philosophy, but a life -not a knowledge of abstract principles, but a personal knowledge of faith and love of God in Christ.”-Dr. Barry in Ellicott’s “Commentary.”

4. Can unaided human reason attain to a knowledge of God?

“Touching the Almighty we cannot find Him out.” Job 37:23.

Skilled as man may be in the elucidation of the mysteries of the universe, he cannot find out God. Elihu spoke truly when he said, “Behold, God is great, and we know Him not, neither can the number of His years be searched out.” Job 36:26.

5. Why cannot we search out God in the same way that we study natural phenomena?

a. Because He cannot be apprehended by the physical faculties. “You have neither heard His voice at any time, nor seen His shape.” John 5: 37.

b. Because the finite mind cannot comprehend the infinite. “That which is far off, and exceeding deep, who can find it out?” Ecclesiastes 7: 24.

c. Because sinful man cannot approach unto God. “Thou can not see My face: for there shall no man see Me, and live.” Exodus 33: 20.

6. Though man cannot find out God, what does God offer to do for man?

“I will make known My words unto you.” Proverbs 1: 23. “He opened the ears of men, and sealed their instruction.” Job 33: 16.

7. Through what channels does God make Himself known to man?

a. Through His works. “The invisible things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead.” Romans 1:20. (See also Psalm 19:1.)

b. Through inspired men. “God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spoke in time past unto the fathers by the prophets.” Hebrews 1:1.

c. Through Jesus. “We know that the Son of God is come, and has given us an understanding,- that we may know Him that is true.” 1 John 5:20. (See also John 1:18)

d. Through the Spirit in personal experience. “You have an unction from the Holy One, and you know all things.” “You need not that any man teach you.” 1 John 2: 20, 27.

8. Why do many fail to apprehend God?

“The natural man received not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned. 1 Corinthians 2:14.

9. On what conditions is this spiritual perception given?

a. Spiritual desire. “Yea, if thou cried after knowledge, and lifted up thy voice for understanding; if thou seek her as silver, and searched for her as for hid treasures; then shall thou understand the fear of the Lord, and find the knowledge of God.” Proverbs 2:3-5.

b. Faith. “He that comes to God must believe that He is, and that He rewards them that diligently seek Him.” Hebrews 11:6.

c. Readiness to obey. “His secret is with the righteous.” Proverbs 3:32.

10. What are some of the blessings which a knowledge of God brings to the believer?

a. Peace. “Acquaint now thyself with Him, and be at peace: thereby good shall come unto thee.” Job 22:21.

“God has made us for Himself and we are restless until we find our rest in Him.” - Augustine.

b. Joy. “Thou wilt show me the path of life: in Thy presence is fullness of joy; at Thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore.” Psalm 16:11.

The world is full of pleasure, but how little joy! The appearance of happiness is but a cloak to conceal an aching heart, a feeble attempt to escape from the sorrow which is sapping the life of mankind. How different is the joy of knowing Him! It is not superficial and transient, but deep and enduring.

c. Understanding. “Then shall we know, if we follow on to know the Lord.” Hosea 6:3. “For the Lord gives wisdom.” Proverbs 2:6. (See also James 1:5.)

d. Comfort. “Who comforted us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God.” 2 Corinthians 1:4.

e. Confidence and hope. “I know whom I have believed, and am persuaded that He is able to keep that which I have committed unto Him against that day.” 2 Timothy 1:12.

11. What supreme blessing does the knowledge of God bring to the believer?

“This is life eternal, that they might know Thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom Thou has sent.” John 17:3.

12. What urgent call therefore comes to us?

“Seek you the Lord while He may be found, call you’ upon Him while He is near.” Isaiah 55:6.

God is infinitely willing and desirous of bestowing His companionship upon us. Tenderly He pleads for us to come to Him. He will not force an entrance into the sanctum of the soul if we do not wish to know Him, but He knocks at our heart’s door, and if we will open to Him, He will come in and abide with us.

13. How should we respond to the call of God?

“When Thou said, Seek you My face; my heart said unto Thee, Thy face, Lord, will I seek.” Psalm 27:8.

To know Him; to talk with Him; to tell Him all our joys and sorrows, and to hear His words of comfort; to walk with Him in the daily tasks of life and to feel the support of His powerful arm - what a glorious privilege! Shall we refuse such an invitation?

14. What benediction does Peter pronounce upon believers?

“Grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.” 2 Peter 3:18. “Grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord.” 2 Peter 1:2.

“He leads me beside the still waters.”

Does God Care?

1. WHAT do the Scriptures teach concerning the character of God? “God is love.” 1 John 4:8. “Good and upright is the Lord.” Psalm 25:8.

2. How was God’s goodness expressed in creation?

“And God saw everything that He had made, and, behold, it was very good.” Genesis 1:31.

3. Though tarnished by sin what witness does nature still bear to His love? “The earth is full of the goodness of the Lord.” Psalm 33:5.

4. How does God feel toward mankind alienated from Him through sin?

“I have loved thee with an everlasting love: therefore with loving-kindness have I drawn thee.” Jeremiah 31:3.

5. By what act is God’s love toward man supremely revealed?

“In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that God sent His only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through Him.” 1 John 4:9.

“Love is the ‘Alpha and Omega’ of redemption, the love of God to man. Read it in the journey of the Mediator from heaven to earth! Read it in His pilgrimage through the land of sorrow! Behold Him ‘nailed to the shameful tree!’ See the blood and water gushing from His side! Hear the sound of the waterspouts, as the floods of wrath roll over Him! Then ask the reason. The answer is: ‘God is love.’ ” “Evangelistic Cyclopaedia,” pages 290, 291.

6. To how many is the message of the gospel extended?

“The same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon Him. For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.” Romans 10:12,13.

7. How patiently does God wait for a response?

“The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some men count slackness but is long-suffering to us ward not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.” 2 Peter 3:9.

8. What does He promise to those who return to Him?

“I will love them freely: for Mine anger is turned away from him.” Hosea 14:4. (See also Jeremiah 3:12.)

9. Into what intimate fellowship with Himself does He admit them?

“Behold, what manner of love the Father has bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God.” 1 John 3:1.

10. Are there any limits to the goodness of God to His children?

“He that spared not His own Son, but delivered Him up for us all, how shall He not with Him also freely give us all things?” Romans 8:32.

11. May we count on His goodness at all times?

“The Lord will command His loving-kindness in the daytime, and in the night His song shall be with me.” Psalm 42:8. “The mountains, shall depart, and the hills be removed; but My kindness shall not depart from thee.” Isaiah 54:10.

12. What loving control does He exercise over all the circumstances of our lives?

“And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to His purpose.” Romans 8:28.

13. How comprehensive is His promise of help?

“And God is able to make all grace abound toward you; that you, always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound to every good work.” Corinthians 9: 8.

14. Assured by such promises what are we urged to do?

“Cast thy burden upon the Lord, and He shall sustain thee.” Psalm 55: 22.

“If you tell your troubles to God, you put them into the grave: they will never rise again when you have committed them to Him. If you roll your burden anywhere else, it will roll back again, like the stone of Sisyphus.” - C. H. Spurgeon.

15. How do we know God’s goodness will be even more strikingly manifest toward His children in the future?

“Eye has not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God has prepared for them that love Him.” 1 Corinthians 2:9.

“The biggest thing with which the mind can cope is the infinite love of God; and all our sanctified powers, and all the ministries of holy fellowship, and all the exploration of eternity will never reach a limit in its unsearchable wealth. The biggest thing you and I will ever know is the love of God in Jesus Christ our Lord.” -Dr. J. H. Jowett.

16. In what appropriate way may we acknowledge the goodness of the Lord?

“Oh that men would praise the Lord for His goodness, and for His wonderful works to the children of men!” Psalm 107: 8.

The Demands of Holiness

1. BESIDES perfect love and omnipotent power, what is another of the fundamental attributes of God? “The Lord is righteous in all His ways, and holy in all His works.” Psalm 145:17.

2. By what name is His holiness declared? the midst “I am God, and not man; the Holy One in of thee.” Hosea 11:9.

3. What qualification, therefore, is absolutely essential?

“Follow holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord.” Hebrews 12:14.

4. What, therefore, was the inevitable consequence of the entrance of sin?

“Your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid His face from you, that He will not hear.” Isaiah 59: 2.

5. Is this separation final?

“He retained not His anger for ever, because He delights in mercy.” Micah 7:18.

6. What promise of restoration does God make to those who will respond to His plan of mercy?

“You shall be holy: for I the Lord your God am holy.” Leviticus 19: 2. (See also 1 Peter 1:16.)

“The conditions of eternal life, under grace, are just what they were in Eden-perfect righteousness, harmony with God, perfect conformity to the principles of His law. God has made provision that we may become like unto Him, and He will accomplish this for all who do not interpose a perverse will, and thus frustrate His grace.” - E. G. White in “Thoughts from the Mount of Blessing,” page 116.

7. By what process may we recover God’s righteousness and the privilege of fellowship?

“The righteousness of God is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference.” Romans 3:22.

“The power of working does not spring out of ourselves, but from God, and therefore cannot have any intrinsic merit in it, for which we can claim salvation as a due. We are created anew in Christ Jesus, and were admitted into a state of salvation not because we have done good works, which merited salvation thereby. But we were admitted into that state by God’s free

grace, in order that we might do good works, which God before prepared for us as our appointed path to lead us to heaven.” - Bishop C. Wordsworth.

8. What confession is necessary as a preliminary to the reception of God’s righteousness? “O Lord, righteousness belongs unto Thee, but unto us confusion of faces, as at this day.” Daniel 9: 7.

9. If we confess our unrighteousness what will God do for us through Christ?

“If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.” 1 John 1:9.

It is the will of God to cleanse us from sin, to make us His children, and to enable us to live a holy life. So we may ask for these blessings, and believe that we receive them, and thank God that we have received them. It is our privilege to go to Jesus and be cleansed, and to stand before the law without shame or remorse.” - E. G. White in “Steps to Christ,” pages 55, 56.

10. How is the reconciliation of God’s justice and His mercy through Christ described? “That He might be just, and the justifier of him which believes in Jesus.” Romans 3:26.

11. When will God finally decide who may be restored to eternal association with Him, and what will be the basis of selection?

“He has appointed a day, in the which He will judge the world in righteousness by that Man whom He has ordained.” Acts 17:31.

12. How complete will be the knowledge on which God’s judgment is based?

“The Lord looks from heaven; He beholds all the sons of men. From the place of His habitation He looks upon all the inhabitants of the earth. He considers all their works.” Psalm 33: 13-15.

13. How will God deal with persistent sinners in the judgment? “He shall say depart from Me, all you workers of iniquity.” Luke 13:27.

14. What will be the blessed reward of those who, through Christ, accept the righteousness of God? “Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me at that day: and not to me only but unto all them also that love His appearing.” 2 Timothy 4:8.

15. In order, therefore, to attain unto eternal fellowship with God, what must we diligently seek?

“Seek you first the kingdom of God, and His righteousness.” Matthew 6: 33. Proud and self sufficient Nebuchadnezzar had to learn the lesson that “the Most High rules in the kingdom of men.”

Is God in Control?

1. HAD God a definite purpose in creating the earth?

“He created it not in vain, He formed it to be inhabited.” Isaiah 45: 18.

“If it is, from God that our life derives its meaning then in His will is the one final principle by which all human ends can be measured. In His will is the true goal of all endeavor, the one absolute standard of righteousness, the reward and crown of all moral striving. Here is the ultimate standard and conviction beyond all the contingencies of history, which must be the pole-star of the human pilgrimage.” -Canon F. R. Barry in “What Has Christianity to Say?” page 163.

2. How completely are the plans of God laid for the outworking of His purpose? “Known unto God are all His works from the beginning of the world.” Acts 15:18.

3. How perfect are the counsels of the Lord?

“With Him is wisdom, He has counsel and understanding.” Job 12:13. “His understanding is infinite.” Psalm 147:5.

4. In whom does the divine purpose center?

“Who has saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to His own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began.” 2 Timothy 1:9.

5. How has God emphasized the immutability of His counsels?

“God, wilting more abundantly to show unto the heirs of promise the immutability of His counsel, confirmed it by an oath.” Hebrews 6: 17.

6. Though men may plan wisely, what all too often frustrates their desires? “To will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not.” Romans 7:18.

7. By what attribute, however, is God’s wisdom reinforced?

“God has spoken once; twice have I heard this; that power belongs unto God.” Psalm 62:11. “He is strong that executes His word.” Joel 2:11.

8. Is there any doubt then as to God’s ability to bring His counsels to fruition?

“Who works all things after the counsel of His own will.” Ephesians 1:11. “My counsel shall stand, and I will do all My pleasure.” Isaiah 46:10.

“God is omnipotent. He can do anything and all things. There is absolutely nothing too hard for Him. There are countless blessed and glorious applications of, and inferences from, this great truth; it will take you your entire lifetime to discover them all, and you will rejoice in them throughout all eternity.”-R. A. Torrey.

9. By what name does God declare His omnipotence? “I am the Almighty God.” Genesis 17:1.

10. How was God’s omnipotence demonstrated in creation?

“He spoke, and it was done; He commanded, and it stood fast.” Psalm 33:9. “Thou has made the heaven and the earth by Thy great power and stretched out arm, and there is nothing too hard for Thee.” Jeremiah 32:17.

11. How is His power continually manifest in nature?

“While the earth remains, seedtime and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease.” Genesis 8:22. “Upholding all things by the word of His power.” Hebrews 1:3.

Commenting upon the frequent references to the sustaining power of God in the psalms, A. C. Welch says:

“The psalmist does not conceive the universe as owing its existence to the fiat of the Almighty, but then left to go its own way. To him the same divine care which brought it into being is needed if it is to be maintained.... The world became an ordered place through the divine wisdom; it continues in its seemliness because this is never withdrawn.” – “The Psalter in Life, Worship, and History.”

12. To what does God draw attention in order to inspire confidence in His activity among men?

“If you can break My covenant of the day, and My covenant of the night, then may also My covenant be broken with David My servant.” Jeremiah 33:20, 21.

13. What authority does He exercise in the kingdoms of men?

“The Most High divided to the nations their inheritance.” Deuteronomy 32:8. “He changed the times and the seasons. He removes kings, and sets up kings.” Daniel 2:21. “The Most High ruled in the kingdom of men, and gives it to whomsoever He will.” Daniel 4:17.

“World events which shape the lives and destinies of millions do not too obviously bear the mark of divine plans, Yet when we have realized the fact of man’s free will do we not see in all history, past and contemporary, His story.” - Revelation Leslie D. Weatherhead in “The Eternal Voice.”

14. How does God make even the acts of wicked men work out His will?

“As for you, you thought evil against me; but God meant it unto good.” Genesis 50:20. “Surely the wrath of man shall praise Thee: the remainder of wrath shall Thou restrain.” Psalm 76:10. “Through the greatness of Thy power shall Your enemies submit themselves unto Thee.” Psalm 66:3.

“All that is memorable in the annals of history; all the rising and fall of empires; all the turns in human life, take place according to His plan. In vain men contrive and combine to accomplish their own counsels; unless they are parts of His counsel likewise, the efforts of their utmost strength and wisdom are crossed and reversed by the feeblest and most unthought of circumstances.” - Isaac Newton.

“We believe that behind all this [present] welter of suffering and death-struggle there stands One who slowly, but unerringly, is working out His great purpose, of love for His children.”-Dr. Lunt, Bishop of Ripon.

“The happiest people today are those who are convinced that ultimately man’s destinies are with God, that behind terror and destruction, perplexity and darkness, God is supreme.”-Dr. E. W. Barnes, Bishop of Birmingham.

15. Can anything prevent the fulfillment of God’s will in the lives of those who yield themselves to Him?

“I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.” Romans 8:38, 39. (See also John 10:29.)

16. Though, in His all-seeing purpose, He may permit evil for a time to hold sway, how complete will be His final triumph?

“He will finish the work, and cut it short in righteousness.” Romans 9: 28.

“This world had its beginning for a purpose; it will be brought to its conclusion when that purpose shall have been accomplished; and then the after-world will start upon its eternal course.”-Canon Girdlestone in “Dies Irae,” page 239.

17. What song of triumph will be raised in that day? “The Lord God omnipotent reigns.” Revelation 19:6.

18. For what then should we earnestly pray?

“Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven.” “For Yours is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory.” Matthew 6:10,13.

3. The World and Man

How the World Began

1. WHERE does our knowledge of the world begin?

“In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.” Genesis 1:1.

“Only one key can open the universe, that key is the living God.” - Dr. Parker.

2. By what agencies did God create the worlds?

a. Through Christ. “God, who created all things by Jesus Christ.” Ephesians 3:9. (See also John 1:1-3.)

b. With the aid of the Holy Spirit. “And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.” Genesis 1:2.

3. What purpose had God in creating the earth?

“He created it not in vain, He formed it to be inhabited.” Isaiah 45:18.

4. How did God prepare the earth as the abode of living creatures?

“And God said, Let the waters under the heaven be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear: and it was so. And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called He Seas: and God saw that it was good.” Genesis 1:9,10.

“The Bible recognizes no long ages in which the earth was slowly evolved from chaos. Of each successive day of creation, the sacred record declares that it consisted of the evening and the morning, like all other days that have followed.” - E. G. White in “Patriarchs and Prophets,” Page 112.

“If the word day in these chapters does not mean a period of twenty-four hours, the interpretation of Scripture is hopeless.” - Professor Marcus Dods in “Genesis,” Page 4.

5. What forms of life did God first create upon the earth?

“And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit tree.” Genesis 1: 11.

6. Having clothed the earth with vegetation, what orders of creation did God next bring into existence?

“And God said, Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that has life, and fowl that may fly above the earth. Let the earth bring forth the living creature, cattle, and creeping thing, and beast of the earth.” Genesis 1:20-24.

7. How is the doctrine of evolution expressly contradicted in Scripture?

“And the earth brought forth grass, and herb yielding seed after his kind.” Genesis 1:12. “And God made the beast of the earth after his kind, and cattle after their kind.” Genesis 1:25.

“In all this great [British] museum there is not a particle of evidence of the transmutation of species. The theory is not founded on observation, and is wholly unsupported by facts.” Dr. Etheridge.

“The first leaf of the Mosaic record has more weight than all the folios of men of science and philosophers.” - Jean Paul.

8. What further statement proves conclusively that man was directly created and is not the result of evolution from lower orders of life?

“And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.” Genesis 2: 7.

“There is a gulf between animal and man that no evolution hypothesis has been able to bridge.” - Sir Ambrose Fleming in the British Weekly.

“I know nothing about the origin of man except what I am told in Scripture-that God created him. I do not know anything more than that, and I do not know anybody who does.” - Sir William Dawson in “The Christian Commonwealth.”

9. What attributes of God were specially manifested in creation?

“He has made the earth by His power, He has established the world by His wisdom, and has stretched out the heavens by His discretion.” Jeremiah 10:12. “The earth is full of the goodness of the Lord.” Psalm 33:5.

10. How long was God occupied in the work of creation?

“In six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea and all that in them is.” Exodus 20:11.

11. What did God do on the seventh day?

“And on the seventh day God ended His work which He had made; and He rested on the seventh day from all His work which He had made.” Genesis 2:2.

12. For all future time what high honor was given into this day?

“And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it He had rested from all His work which God created and made.” Genesis 2:3.

“God Himself measured off the first week as a sample for successive weeks to the close of time. Like every other, it consisted of seven literal days. Six days were employed in the work of creation; upon the seventh God rested, and He then blessed this day and set it apart as a day of rest for man.” - E. G. White in “Patriarchs and Prophets,” Page 111.

13. Of what was His holy day to be a continual reminder?

“Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy. For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is.” Exodus 20:8-11.

Assembling fossil bones. Man is not an evolutionary jig-saw puzzle, but the product of God’s creative act.

What Is Man?

1. WHAT does God claim with reference to man’s origin?

“I have created him.... I have formed him; yes, I have made him.” Isaiah 43: 7.

2. What physical nature has he in common with other living creatures?

“And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground.” Genesis 2: 7. “He gives to all life, and breath, and all things.”

Acts 17:25. “They have all one breath.” Ecclesiastes 3: 19.

3. How does man differ from the lower orders-of creation?

a. God communicated to man a nature akin to His own. “In the image of God made He man.” Genesis 9:6.

b. He intended man for communion with Himself. “Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds out of the mouth of God.” Matthew 4: 4.

4. With what faculties are we able to apprehend God and His will?

“With my soul have I desired Thee ... with my spirit within me will I seek Thee early.” Isaiah 26:9.

5. Of what three parts is man thus composed?

“I pray God your whole spirit and soul [mind] and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.” 1 Thessalonians 5: 23.

6. Having given men the capacity for communion what invitation does the Creator extend to them?

“Seek Him that makes the seven stars and Orion, and turned the shadow of death into the morning, and makes the day dark with night.” Amos 5:8.

7. How are we encouraged to avail ourselves of the privilege of communion? “He rewards them that diligently seek Him.”

Hebrews 11:6.

8. How does God desire us to regard Him?

“Have we not all one Father? has not one God created us?” Malachi 2: 10.

“God is universal Sovereign-Father, and all men are by nature His children. The age-long tragedy of mankind springs from the fact that, though the Fatherhood abides, the son ship is broken. Mankind does not live in the spirit of son ship or in the fellowship of sons. The Christian message is that men may enter into the consciousness and experience of son ship through Jesus Christ.” H. M. Hughes in “The Christian Idea of God,” page 139.

9. What harmonious relation should likewise obtain between man and man?

“Thou shall love thy neighbor as thyself.” Mark 12:31. “A new commandment I give unto you, That you love one another; as I have loved you, that you also love one another.” John 13:34.

10. What authority did God give man on the earth?

“Thou made him to have dominion over the works of Thy hands; Thou has put all things under his feet.” Psalm 8: 6.

11. Though God has made man His steward, how doles He declare His ownership? “Whatsoever is under the whole heaven is Mine.” Job 41:11.

12. What is required of a steward?

“It is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.” 1 Corinthians 4:2.

13. Will God call man to account for his stewardship?

“Every man shall receive his own reward according to his own labor.” 1 Corinthians 3:8.

14. What is required of a faithful steward?

“Therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God’s.” 1 Corinthians 6: 20.

15. What will the unfaithful steward forfeit?

“If thou warn the wicked of his way to turn from it; if he do not turn from his way, he shall die in his iniquity.” Ezekiel 33:9.

16. How just will be God’s apportionment of reward and punishment?

“The soul that sins, it shall die. The son shall not bear the iniquity of the father, neither shall the father bear the iniquity of the son: the righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him, and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon him.” Ezekiel 18:20.

17. Will God take pleasure in withdrawing life for ever from the sinner?

“I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked; but that the wicked turn from his way and live: turn you, turn you from your evil ways; for why will you die?” Ezekiel 33:11.

18. What gracious offer, therefore, is made to those who repent and seek to fulfil the divine intention? “Repent, and turn yourselves from all your transgressions; so iniquity shall not be your ruin.” Ezekiel 18:30.

Whence Came Evil?

1. HAD evil any part in God’s original creation?

“And God saw everything that He had made, and, behold it was very good.” Genesis 1:31.

2. With whom, then, did sin originate?

“He that committed sin is of the devil; for the devil sinned from the beginning.” 1 John 3:8.

3. Who is the devil?

“That old serpent, called the devil, and Satan, which deceived the whole world.” Revelation 12:9. “If ever an idea was Biblical, it is the existence of a personal devil.” - Goethe.

4. What was his original name and from what high estate has he fallen? “How art-thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning!” Isaiah 14:12.

5. What was Lucifer’s original character?

“Thou was perfect in thy ways from the day that thou was created.” Ezekiel 28:15.

6. What sinful thought arose in Lucifer’s mind?

“Your heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou has corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness.” Ezekiel 28:17.

7. Who associated themselves with Satan in his opposition to God? “The angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation.” Jude 1:6.

8. What was the result of Lucifer’s rebellion?

“And there was war in heaven: Michael and His angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, and prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven.” Revelation 12:7, 8.

9. Where was Satan exiled?

“I beheld Satan fall from heaven.” Luke 10:18.

“Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! For the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath.” Revelation 12:12.

10. By what means did he deceive our first parents?

“The serpent beguiled Eve through his subtlety.” 2 Corinthians 11: 3. (Read Genesis 3: 1-6.)

“All the problems that perplex us, all the pain that pursues us, and all the yearnings of the soul that drive us—every great problem is answered in Genesis.”—Revelation Dr. J. C. Massie.

11. How has Satan since been occupied in the earth?

“The devil, as a roaring lion, walked about, seeking whom he may devour.” 1 Peter 5: 8.

“And now I will ask a strange question: who is the most diligent bishop and prelate in all England, that passes all the rest in doing his office? I will tell you—it is the devil. He is the most diligent preacher of all others; he is never out of his diocese; he is never far from his cure; you shall never find him unoccupied; he is ever in his parish; he keeps residence at all times; you shall never find him out of the way. He is the most diligent preacher in all the realm.”—Bishop Latimer in a sermon entitled “Sermon of the Plough.”

12. Who volunteered to defeat Satan’s designs?

“For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil.” 1 John 3:8. (See also Hebrews 2:14.)

13. On what occasion was the overthrow of Satan first foreshadowed?

“I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her Seed. It shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise His heel.” Genesis 3:15. (Compare Romans 16:20, RV.)

Of the third chapter of Genesis, R. C. Trench, Dean of Westminster, declared: “It is the only chapter which, if we could conceive it as being withdrawn, would leave all the rest of Scripture unintelligible. Take this away, this record of the fall, and of the provision which God so graciously made to repair these consequences, to build up the breach which Adam had made, take this away and you take away the key of knowledge to all the rest of the Bible. Nor is it the Bible alone which would thus become unintelligible, but the whole condition of the world around us, of man and of nature, of our own selves above all, would present itself to us as an inexplicable riddle. What a riddle indeed does it evermore continue to be to all those who refuse to accept the solution of it here offered! There are indeed in this chapter almost as many mysteries as there are words.” — “Sermons Preached in Westminster Abbey,” pages 48, 49.

14. How was Christ’s power over Satan and his evil agents manifested during His earthly ministry?

“When the even was come, they brought unto Him many that were possessed with devils: and He cast out the spirits with His word.” Matthew 8:16.

15. In the hour of death what reference did Jesus make to the shortness of Satan’s power? “This is your hour, and the power of darkness.” Luke 22:53.

16. How had He previously foretold, the end of Satan’s dominion? “Now shall the prince of this world be cast out.” John 12:31.

17. After His ascension, whom did Jesus commission to continue His controversy with Satan?

“I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witness; to open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God.” Acts 26:16,18. “You shall be witnesses unto Me.” Acts 1:8.

18. What struggle is the lot of the children of God in all ages?

“For we wrestle not against flesh and blood but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.” Ephesians 6:12.

19. How may we obtain full protection against Satan?

“Put on the whole armor of God, that you may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil.” Ephesians 6:11.

20. What assurance of triumph is given to every child of God?

“He that is begotten of God keeps himself, and that wicked one touched him not.” 1 John 5:18.

21. What seeming triumph will Satan achieve in the last days, and why?

“Now the Spirit speaks expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils.” 1 Timothy 4: 1.

22. Yet in spite of Satan’s apparent victories, how fearfully do the evil angels contemplate the coming judgment?

“The devils also believe, and tremble.” James 2:19.

23. To what end will Satan ultimately come?

“And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone.” Revelation 20:10.

24. What end did Paul predict also for the evil angels? “Whose end shall be according to their works.” 2 Corinthians 11:15.

25. What assurance are we given that the tragic story of rebellion will never again be repeated? “Affliction shall not rise up the second time.” Nahum 1:9.

Do We Need to Be Saved?

1. WHAT high privilege was vouchsafed to man in the beginning?

“So God created man in His own image, in the image of God created He him; male and female created He them.” Genesis 1:27.

2. How was man’s loyalty to God put to the test?

“And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou may freely eat: but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shall not eat of it: for in the day that thou eats thereof thou shall surely die.” Genesis 2:16, 17.

3. How did, Satan subvert our first parents from allegiance to God?

“The serpent beguiled Eve ‘ through his subtlety.” 2 Corinthians 11:3. (Read Genesis 3:1-6.)

4. What tragic change came in the relations between men and God as a result of the fall?

a.They became sinners in His sight. “Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all Men, for that all have sinned.” Romans 5:12.

b.They lost the privilege of open communion with God. “Therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden of Eden.” Genesis 3: 23.

c.They were doomed to die. “Dust thou art, and unto dust shall thou return.” Genesis 3:19.

5. What heritage did the fall thus confer upon the whole human family?

“Behold, I was shaped in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me.” Psalm 51:5.

“If there be any truth in the Bible, it is this: that sin is not a stage in upward evolution, a mere survival of animal tendencies which is gradually being outgrown, nor a mere’ result of untoward circumstances, or a lack of education or experience. But a lawlessness of the human will, a perpetually renewed rebellion against God, which disorders human nature by depriving it of the fellowship of God.”-Bishop Charles Gore.

6. How sadly has man been marred by sin?

a.His understanding is darkened. “Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from’ the life of God through the ignorance that is in them.” Ephesians 4: 18.

b.His heart is full of evil. “The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?” Jeremiah 17: 9.

c.His conscience is defiled. “Unto the . . . unbelieving is nothing pure; but even their mind and con-, science is defiled.” Titus 1: 15.

d.He is spiritually dead. “You, being dead in your sins.” Colossians 2: 13.

“Total depravity,” means, as Principal Denney says, “the depravity which sin has produced in human nature extends to the whole of it.”

7.How completely is he alienated from God?

“The carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.” Romans 8:7.

8. Are any excluded from condemnation?

“But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: the Scripture has concluded all under sin.” Galatians 3:11-22. “The whole world lies in wickedness.” 1 John 5:19.

9. How impotent is the sinner to work righteousness?

“Can the Ethiopian change his skin, or the leopard his spots? Then may you also do good, that are accustomed to do evil.” Jeremiah 13:23.

“Sin has so affected his nature that he cannot do anything that is good without the grace of God.”-Dr. Griffith Thomas.

10. How hopeless is his condition apart from God?

“At that time you were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world.” Ephesians 2: 12.

11. To what end, therefore, must unaided man inevitably come?

“To be carnally minded is death.” Romans 8:6. “How can you escape the damnation of hell?” Matthew 23:33.

“There is nothing, I believe, which at the present time needs more to be insisted on than the reality of guilt.

It is not an illusion, which we should be taught to disregard in view of God’s infinite love; it is as real as life or death, a gigantic problem alike for God and man. His condemnation of sin, His wrath repelling sin, resting over sin, are not figments of our ignorance and fear; they are absolutely real things, to which our conscience bears a true though awfully inadequate testimony.”-Principal Denney.

12. What cry of despair may well come from his lips?

“O wretched man that I am! Who shall deliver me from the body of this death?” Romans 7:24.

13. Because of man’s impotence to save himself, what is his only hope?

“Now set your heart and your soul to seek the Lord your God.” 1 Chronicles 22:19. (See also Jeremiah 29:12-14.)

14. How has God demonstrated His desire to restore man to fellowship with Himself? “Yet does He devise means, that His banished be not expelled from Him.” 2 Samuel 14:14.

15. Through whom has the possibility of restoration come?

“For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believes in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.” John 3:16.

16. How universal is God's offer of mercy?

"For God has concluded them all in unbelief, that He might, have, mercy upon all." Romans 11:32.

17. In what striking way is the comprehensiveness of redemption emphasized? "Wherefore He is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by Him." Hebrews 7:5.

18. Is there any other way of escape than God's?

"Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved." Acts 4: 12.

19. What should be the sinner's response?

"Wash me thoroughly from mine iniquity, and cleanse me- from my sin." Psalm 51:2. "Create in me a clean heart, O God," Psalm 51:10.

20. How is redemption compared with God's creative work?

"If any man is in Christ, he is a new creation." 2 Corinthians 5: 17 (RV, margin).

21. In what scripture does God claim to be both Creator and Redeemer?

"But now thus said, the Lord that created thee, O Jacob, and He that formed, thee, O Israel, Fear not: for I have redeemed thee." Isaiah 43:1.

22. What satisfaction does a knowledge of salvation bring?

"Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered. Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin." Romans 4:7,8.

Was Jesus Divine?

1. WHAT challenging question must every soul answer for himself? "What think you of Christ?" Matthew 22:42.

2. How do the Scriptures help us in settling this vital problem?

"These are written, that you might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God." John 20:31.

There are two absolutely essential elements in historic Christianity. One is a personal God. The other is the incarnation of God in Jesus.

3. What definite statement does the Bible make concerning the. nature of Christ?

"Without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh." 1 Timothy 3:16. "The Word was God." John 1:1.

4. How did Jesus emphasize His oneness with the Father?

"I and My Father are one." John 10:30. ("See also John 17:11, 21, 22.)

5. What other claims are made by or for Jesus which compel us to recognize Him as God incarnate?

a.Omnipotence. "All Power is given unto Me in heaven and in earth." Matthew 28:18.

b.Omniscience. "In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge." Colossians 2:3.

c.Perfect holiness. "In Him is no sin." 1 John 3:5. (See also Hebrews 4:15.)

d.Eternal existence. "He is before all things." Colossians 1:17. "Whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting." Micah 5:2.

e.The sum of divine attributes. "For in Him dwells all the fullness of the Godhead bodily." Colossians 2:9. "I personally have traced over 500 passages which affirm or imply the deity of Jesus."-Dr. W. Graham Scroggie, DD, in "The Christian."

6. Because He revealed in their entirety the attributes of the invisible God how could He well be described? "Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature." Colossians 1: 15.

7. While truly God, how truly was He also man?

"But when the fullness of the time was come, God sent forth His Son, made of a woman." Galatians 4: 4. "And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us (and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth." John 1:14.

"This blessed union is incapable of dissolution. As there ever has been, and ever will be, the eternal Son of God, so will there ever remain the eternal Son of man." Archbishop Butler's "Sermons," Series 1, page 73.

8. When was the incarnation of the Son of God decided upon?

"Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you." 1 Peter 1: 20.

9. To whom was the first intimation of the incarnation made?

To the serpent in Eden. "I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her Seed. It shall bruise thy head, and thou shall bruise His heel." Genesis 3: 15.

10. How did the news come to Mary that God was to become incarnate in human flesh?

"The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that Holy Thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God." Luke 1:35.

Was Jesus divine? The Roman centurion voiced his conviction: "Truly this Man was the Son of God." Mark 15:39.

"If our Lord had entered the race by natural generation, it would be extremely difficult for us to believe that

the Child of Mary was the Word incarnate. We should have been almost compelled to think of Him as a mere man, who, in an unusual degree, had received the indwelling of the divine life. He might thus appear to us as the First-born among many brethren, but He could not be our Redeemer.”-Dr. D. M. MacIntyre, DD, in “Christ the Lord.”

11. By what act did the wise men from the east recognize the divinity of Jesus?

“And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary His mother, and fell down, and worshipped Him.” Matthew 2:11.

12. How did God testify to Jesus’ divinity at the commencement of His ministry?

“For He received from God the Father honor and glory, when there came such a voice to Him from the excellent glory, This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.” 2 Peter 1:17.

13. How was Jesus’ divinity manifest in His life?

a. By His miracles. “The power of the Lord was present to heal them.” Luke 5:17.

b. By His authoritative teachings. “His word was with power.” Luke 4:32. “Never man spoke like this man.” John 7:46.

14. What divine prerogative did He exercise?

“But that ye may know that the Son of man has power on earth to forgive sins, Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto your house.” Matthew 9:6.

15. What paramount gift did He claim ability to confer?

“For as the Father raised up the dead, and quickened them; even so the Son quickened whom He will.” John 5:21.

“Jesus knows no more sacred task than to point men to His own person. The Jesus who thinks thus of Himself, and who looks on humanity with such a confidence in His power to redeem them from the terrible misery in which He sees every one round about Him, stands as a fact before us, a fact that has no equal.” - Hermann in “Communion with God.”

16. What testimony did the disciples bear’ to His divinity?

“Thomas answered and said unto Him, My Lord and my God.” John 20:28. “Simon Peter answered and said. Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.” Matthew 16:16.

17. Who else during Christ’s life on earth recognized His true nature?

“And devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying, Thou art Christ the Son of God.” Luke 4: 41.

18. To whom did Jesus declare He would return?

“I came forth from the Father, ‘and am come into the world: again, I leave the World, and go to the Father.” John 16:28.

19. What position does He now occupy in heaven?

“Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God; angels and authorities and powers being made subject unto Him.” 1 Peter 3:22.

20. When will Christ’s divinity be manifest to all?

“In the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of His glory.” Matthew 19:28.

21. What confession will all men then make?

“That every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.” Philippians 2:11.

22. How vitally important is the acceptance of the doctrine of the incarnation?

“Hereby know you the Spirit of God. Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: and every spirit that confessed not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof you have heard that it should come. And even now already is it in the world.” 1 John 4:2, 3.

Prophecies That Came True

1. How did the woman of Samaria testify to the Jewish expectation of the Messiah, or Christ?

“The woman said unto Him, I know that Messiah comes, which is called Christ.” John 4: 25.

“In the New Testament the name Christ is used as equivalent to the Hebrew, Messiah [Anointed], the name given to the long promised Prophet and King whom the Jews had been taught by their prophets to expect.”-William Smith’s Dictionary of the Bible, Article, “Jesus Christ,” page 307.

2. What declaration did Jesus make to her concerning Himself?

“Jesus said unto her, I that speak unto thee am He.” John 4: 26. (See also Matthew 26:63, 64.)

3. What evidence did Jesus offer His disciples in support of His claim?

“O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets, have spoken: and beginning at Moses and all the prophets, He expounded unto them in all the Scriptures the things concerning Himself.” Luke 24: 25-27.

4. How was the Messiah to be manifested?

“For unto us a Child is born, unto us a Son is given.” Isaiah 9:6 (Matthew 1:22, 23).

5. Along what human line of descent would He come?

“There shall come forth a Rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots.” Isaiah 1:1 (Matthew 1:1).

6. Where would Messiah be born?

“But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall He come forth unto Me that is to be Ruler in Israel.” Micah 5:2 (Matthew 2:4-6).

7. In what miraculous way would He be conceived?
 “Therefore the Lord Himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a Son.” Isaiah 7:14 (Matthew 1:20).
8. What danger would threaten His early years?
 “Thus said the Lord; A voice was heard in Ramah, lamentation, and bitter weeping; Rachel weeping for her children refused to be comforted for her children, because they were not.” Jeremiah 31:15 (Matthew 2:16-18).
9. Where would He be temporarily exiled?
 “When Israel was a child, then I loved him, and called My Son out of Egypt.” Hosea 11:1 (Matthew 2:13-15).
10. By whom would His ministry be announced?
 “The voice of him that cries in the wilderness, Prepare you the way of the Lord, make straight in the desert a highway for our God.” Isaiah 40:3 (Luke 3:4).
11. What would be the nature of Messiah’s blessed ministry?
 “The Spirit of the Lord God is upon Me; because the Lord has anointed Me to preach good tidings unto the meek; He has sent Me to bind up the brokenhearted.” Isaiah 61:1 (Luke 4:16-19).
12. Before His passion what symbolic exaltation would He receive?
 “Behold, thy King comes unto thee: He is just, and halving salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass.” Zechariah 9:9 (Luke 19:35).
13. By whom would Messiah be betrayed?
 “Yes, Mine own familiar friend, in whom I trusted, which did eat of My bread, has lifted up his heel against Me.” Psalm 41:9 (Luke 22:3; John 13:2, 21-26).
14. For what price would He be sold?
 “And I said unto them, If you think good, give Me My price; and if not, forbear. So they weighed for My price thirty Pieces of silver.” Zechariah 11: 12 (Matthew 26: 14-16).
15. In what spirit would He endure His sufferings?
 “He was oppressed, and He was afflicted, yet He opened not His mouth: He is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so He opened not His mouth.” Isaiah 53:7 (Mark 15:3-5).
16. How was Messiah’s vicarious suffering foretold?
 “But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon Him; and with His stripes we are healed.” Isaiah 53:4, 5 (Matthew 8:17).
17. How exactly were the details of the crucifixion foretold?
 “They pierced My hands and My feet.” “They Part My garments among them, and cast lots upon My vesture.” Psalm 22:16, 18 (John 19:24).
18. Where would Messiah rest in death?
 “And He made His grave with the wicked, and with the rich in His death.” Isaiah 53:9 (Matthew 27:57-60).
19. In what words was His resurrection foreshadowed?
 “For Thou wilt not leave My soul in hell; neither wilt Thou suffer Your Holy One to see corruption.” Psalm 16: 10 (Acts 2: 25-27).
20. In view of His minute fulfillment of messianic prophecy how confidently did Paul witness that Jesus was the Christ?
 “And Paul reasoned with them out of the Scriptures, opening and alleging, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead; and that this Jesus, whom I preach unto you, is Christ.” Acts 17:2, 3.

Why Christ Came

1. WHY cannot God reveal Himself directly to sinful man?
 “Thou can not see My face: for there shall no man see Me, and live.” Exodus 33:20.
2. What means did He adopt to make known His will after the entrance of sin?
 “God at sundry times and in divers manners spoke in time past unto the father’s by the Prophets.” Hebrews 1:1.
3. How did men treat the revelation of God through the prophets?
 “But they mocked the messengers of God, and despised His words, and misused His prophets.” 2 Chronicles 36:16. (See also Nehemiah 9:30, 31; Jeremiah 7:25, 26.)
4. Through whom did He finally decide to speak to man?
 “God has in these last days spoken unto us by His Son.” Hebrews 1:2.
 “Because men rejected the messages which God sent, through human instrumentalities,” says Dr. A. W. F. Blunt, Bishop of Bradford, “it becomes at least not inconceivable that God might seek a way of showing to man all of Himself that could be apprehended by man, and that He might choose to do so by living a human life, by Himself becoming incarnate, and not, as before, by merely inspiring human agents.” Recall to Religion,” page 265.
5. What did God primarily seek to reveal in Jesus?
 “No man has seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, He hath declared Him [made Him known, Weymouth].” John 1:18. (See also Matthew 11:27; Luke 10:22.)

6. How perfectly did He make known the character of God?

“He that has seen Me has seen the Father.” John 14:9. “For in Him dwells all the fullness of the Godhead bodily.” Colossians 2:9.

“I recall an occasion in my parochial experience when I was visiting a nurse who was ill; and in speaking of prayer I took occasion to ask her how she thought of God when she said her prayers. Her reply was: I think of Him as Someone like ourselves, only perfect. In fact, I think of Jesus Christ.” - Dr. B. Heywood, Bishop of Ely, in “This Our Faith,” page 81.

7. Beside revealing God to man, what example did Jesus set of submission to the will of God?

“I delight to do Thy will, O My God: yes, Thy law is within My heart.” Psalm 40:8. “We always those things that please Him.” John 8:29.

8. How did He demonstrate the possibility of a life of victory over sin? “In all points tempted like as we are yet without sin.” Hebrews 4:15.

9. By His sinless life what did He condemn?

“For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh.” Romans 8:3.

10. Having revealed by His life what man was intended to be, what blessed gift did Jesus offer through His death on Calvary?

“For if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one Man, Jesus Christ, has abounded unto many.” Romans 5:15. (See also verse 17.)

11. What will the acceptance of His gift of grace effect? “The blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin.” 1 John 1:7.

12. How complete a deliverance from sin did He make possible?

“Thou shalt call His name Jesus: for He shall save His people from their sins.” Matthew 1:21. came not to judge the world, but to save the world.” John 12:47.

13. What glorious prospect has He set before saved sinners?

“For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.” 2 Peter 1:11.

14. Is there any way back to God other than by Jesus Christ?

“I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life: no man comes unto the Father, but by Me.” John 14:6 “Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.” Acts 4:12.

“Upon some mountain peaks there is only one solitary path and he who will not climb through this narrow place cannot reach the summit and must fall to his death. So, too, there is only one way to eternal life—Christ.”—Emil Brunner in “Our Faith.”

15. How should we respond to such a Savior?

“Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved.” Acts 16:31.

“The acceptance does not accrue to the individual till he believes and so receives. The gift is not put into the hand till it is open and empty. But the gift has been bought ready for the recipient long before he kneels to receive it. It was his, in provision, from the moment of the purchase; and the glorious Purchaser came up from the depths where He had gone down to buy, holding aloft in His sacred hands the golden gift, ours because His for us.” H. C. G. Moule in “Romans,” Page 127.

16. What feelings should a knowledge of salvation evoke in us? “Thanks be unto God for His unspeakable gift.” 2 Corinthians 9:15.

Did Jesus Need to Die?

1. WHEN was Jesus chosen to be the world’s Redeemer?

“Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for .You.” 1 Peter 1:20.

2. To what lengths did God know His Son would need to go in order to save man? “The Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.” Revelation 13:8.

3. How certain was Jesus of the predestined course of His life?

“This that is written must yet be accomplished in Me, And He was reckoned among the transgressors: for the things concerning Me have an end.” Luke 22:37.

“Christ’s death was not simply a fitting conclusion to a life of self-sacrifice and obedience to the uttermost, but He was born to die, and His death effected something vital for our salvation, which His earthly incarnation, had it ended in some other way, could not have secured for us.”—Dr. Chavasse in “The Atonement in History and in Life,” edited by Canon L. W. Grenstead.

4. In what words did Jesus testify to His willingness to suffer for men?

“Therefore does My Father love Me, because I lay down My life, that I might take it again. No man takes it from Me, but I lay it down of Myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again.” John 10:17, 18.

5. What did the death of Christ thus reveal?

“God commended His love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.” Romans 5:8.

“There was a cross in the heart of God before there was one planted on the green hill outside Jerusalem. And now that the cross of wood has been taken down, the one in the heart of God abides, and it will remain as long as there is one sinful soul for whom to suffer.”-Dr. Dinsmore in “The Atonement in History and in Life,” edited by Canon L. W. Grenstead.

6. Beside manifesting the extent of the love of God and of Christ for man, what further purpose did the cross serve?

It indicated the immutability of the law of God. “Whom God has set forth to be a propitiation through faith in His blood, to declare His righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God.” Romans 3:25.

“Repentance was not enough. His [man’s] sin had to be adequately dealt with. It demanded expiation; and expiation mean open confession and full reparation. In this stern and inexorable law lies the necessity of an atoning sacrifice for the sin of the world.” - Dr. David Smith.

7. What penalty had man incurred through sin?

“The wages of sin is death.” Romans 6:23. “Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.” Romans 5:12.

8. Could God abolish the penalty of the law?

“It is easier for heaven and earth to pass, than one tittle of the law to fail.” Luke 16:17.

9. What, therefore, was necessary for the salvation of man?

A sinless man, not involved in the penalty, and possessed of life, inherent and underived, must vicariously accept it on behalf of the race.

10. Who only could fulfil the requirements of such a vicarious sacrifice?

“God sent forth His Son, made of a woman, made under the law, to redeem them that were under the law.” Galatians 4: 4, 5. “Who did no sin.” 1 Peter 2:22.

“Though God is the Author of the atonement, and without Him fallen humanity would have been unable to offer it, yet it was made by man, acting in the true conditions of man’s nature.” Mason in “The Faith of the Gospel,” page 209.

11. How does Paul state the doctrine of vicarious atonement?

“For He has made Him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in Him.” 2 Corinthians 5:21.

12. What divine dilemma, did Jesus thus resolve?

“To declare, I say, at this time His righteousness: that He might be just, and the justifier of him which believes in Jesus.” Romans 3:26.

13. As a result of Christ’s paying the penalty of transgression what privileges are offered to man?

a. Deliverance from Satan. “Who has delivered us from the power of darkness.” Colossians 1:13.

b. Revocation of our sentence to death. “Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life.” Romans 5:18.

c. Forgiveness of sin. “Be it known unto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins.” Acts 13:38.

d. Reconciliation to God. “All things are of God, who has reconciled us to Himself by Jesus Christ. To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto Himself.” 2 Corinthians 5:18, 19.

e. New status of son ship. “The Spirit itself bears witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: and if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ.” Romans 8:16, 17.

f. Sanctification. “By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.” Hebrews 10:10.

g. Eternal life. “Whosoever believes in Him should not perish, but have eternal life.” John 3:15. “He that believes on the Son has everlasting life: and he that believes not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abides on him.” John 3:36.

14. How complete is the restoration made possible through the sacrifice of Christ?

“He is able also to save them to the utter-most that come unto God by Him, seeing He ever lives to make intercession for them.” Hebrews 7:25.

15. In what way do the wicked regard the preaching of the cross? “For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness.” 1 Corinthians 1:18.

16. On the other hand, what does the cross mean to the repentant sinner?

“But unto us which are saved it is the power of God.” 1 Corinthians 1: 18.

“Never you be ashamed of the blood of Christ. I know it is not the popular religion of the day, but the whole Bible from cover to cover is saturated, reddened with the blood of Christ. You are blood-bought Christians. The uniform we Christians wear is scarlet. If you are ashamed of your uniform, man, for goodness sake leave the service. Oh, never be ashamed of Christ.” -Father Stanton of St. Albans, Holburn.

17. How will our salvation be consummated?

“So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for Him shall He appear the second time without sin unto salvation.” Hebrews 9:28.

18. What reward will Jesus receive in that day for all His sacrifice on our behalf?

a. Satisfaction. “He shall see of the travail of His soul, and shall be satisfied.” Isaiah 53:11.

b. Universal adoration. "Wherefore God also has highly exalted Him, and given Him a name which is above every name. That at the name of Jesus every knee, should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth." Philippians 2:9,10.

The Power of the Resurrection

1. How short did Jesus declare His, sojourn in the tomb would be?

"The Son of man, shall be betrayed into the hands of men: and they shall kill Him, and the third day He shall be raised again." Matthew 17: 22, 23.

2. By whom was the resurrection of Christ foretold in the Old Testament?

By David. "My flesh also shall rest in hope. For Thou wilt not leave My soul in bell; neither wilt Thou suffer Your Holy One to see corruption." Psalm 16: 9, 10.

3. What happened when the predicted time limit expired?

"There was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it." Matthew 28:2.

"He was dead! His enemies thought they had done for Him, and they were glad. His friends thought He was done for, and they were sad. But Heaven watching was preparing the music that should ring around the world declaring the defeat of evil, and the mastery of sin, and the ransom of the race."-Dr. G. Campbell Morgan in "the Gospel According to John."

4. To whom was the resurrection of Jesus first announced?

"And the angel answered and said unto the women. He is not here: for He is risen, as He said. Come, see the place where the Lord lay." Matthew 28:5, 6.

5. To whom did Jesus show Himself after His resurrection?

"He was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve: after that. He was seen of above five hundred brethren at once; of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep." 1 Corinthians 15: 5, 6

"It has been well said, "While the literal bodily resurrection of Jesus Christ is the cornerstone of Christian doctrine it is also the Gibraltar of Christian evidence and the Waterloo of infidelity and, rationalism."

6. For how long was Jesus seen by His disciples?

"To whom also He showed Himself alive after His passion by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God." Acts 1:3.

7. What power was manifest in the resurrection of Jesus?

"Though He was crucified through weakness, yet He lives by the power of God." 2 Corinthians 13:4. "Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father." Romans 6:4.

The resurrection "takes God out of the realm of speculation and theory, and brings Him down into the realm of history and of fact. He is no impersonal or semi-personal principle or abstract force; He is a Person; He is a Doer. The resurrection of Jesus is His deed."-Dr. W. T. Conner.

8. What did the resurrection confirm?

Jesus was "declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the Spirit of holiness, by the-resurrection from the dead." Romans 1:4. (See also Acts 13:33.)

9. What did it also convincingly demonstrate?

"Now if Christ be preached that He rose from the dead, how say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead?" 1 Corinthians 15:12.

10. As a result of His resurrection what did Jesus claim?

"I am He that lives, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of bell and of death." Revelation 1:18.

11. What proof of this was given immediately after He had risen?

"And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose, and came out of the graves after His resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many." Matthew 27:52,53.

12. Of what then may believers be assured?

"This is the will of Him that sent Me, that every one which sees the Son, and believes on Him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day." John 6:40. (See also 1 Corinthians 15:23,52.)

13. What triumphant acclamation will be upon the lips of the redeemed in that day? "O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?" 1 Corinthians 15:55.

14. How vital is the resurrection in the plan of salvation?

"If Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain. And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain; you are yet in your sins. Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ are perished." 1 Corinthians 15:14-18.

15. What prominence, therefore, did Paul give to the resurrection in his preaching?

“And Paul, as his manner was, reasoned with them out of the Scriptures, opening and alleging, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead; and that this Jesus, whom, said he, I preach unto you, is Christ.” Acts 17:2,3 (margin). (See also Acts 26:22, 23.)

16. What attitude to this great truth should we share with him?

“I count all things but loss ... that I may know Him, and the power of His resurrection; if by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead.” Philippians 3:8-11.

What Is Jesus Doing Now?

1. WHEN Jesus had fulfilled His purpose on earth, where did He go?

“God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.” 1 Timothy 3:16.

2. In what circumstances did the ascension of Jesus take place?

“He led them out as far as to Bethany, and He lifted up His hands, and blessed them. And it came to pass, while He blessed them, He was parted from them, and carried up into heaven.” Luke 24:50,51. (See also Acts 1:9.)

3. Where is Jesus now?

“Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God.” 1 Peter 3:22. (See also Hebrews 10:12.)

4. For what reasons did Jesus return to heaven?

a. That the Holy Spirit might be given. “It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you.” John 16: 7.

b. That He might begin His intercessory work for us. “It is Christ that died, yes rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also makes intercession for us.” Romans 8:34. (See also Hebrews 7:25.)

c. That He might prepare a home for His people. “I go to Prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto Myself. That where I am, there you may be also.” John 14:2,3.

5. What special name is given to Christ in His office as Intercessor?

“We have a great High Priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God.” Hebrews 4:14. (See also Hebrews 8:1.)

6. How superior, however, is our High Priest to any earthly ministrant?

“For such an High Priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens.” Hebrews 7:26.

7. To what order of priesthood is the priesthood of Christ likened?

“Called of God an High Priest after the order of Melchisedec.” Hebrews 5:10.

8. Why was this comparison appropriate?

“He shall be a Priest upon His throne.” Zechariah 6: 13. “Melchisedec, king of Salem, Priest of the Most High God.” Hebrews 7:1.

9. In what sanctuary does Christ now minister?

“A minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pitched, and not man.” Hebrews 8:2.

10. What Bible writer was privileged to look into this heavenly sanctuary?

John the revelator. “And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in His temple the ark of His testament.” Revelation 11:19. (See also Revelation 8:3, 4; 15:5.)

11. Is a sacrificial offering necessary in the heavenly sanctuary as in the earthly?

“For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it is of necessity that this Man have somewhat also to offer.” Hebrews 8: 3.

12. What sacrifice does our High Priest offer to the Father on our behalf?

“Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by His own blood He entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.” Hebrews 9:12. (See also Ephesians 5:2.)

13. For whom does the present intercessory ministry of Christ avail?

a. For the repentant sinner. “Wherefore He is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by Him.” Hebrews 7:25. (See also 1 John 1:9.)

b. For the believer who falls into sin. “If any man sin, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous.” 1 John 2:1.

c. For all in every time of need. “Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.” Hebrews 4:16. (See also Hebrews 10:19, 22.)

14. How continuous is Christ’s intercession on our behalf?

“This Man, because He continues ever, has an unchangeable priesthood. He ever lives to make inter cession.” Hebrews 7:24, 25. (See also verse 16.)

“ ‘He ever lives,’ is the supreme inspiration of the individual Christian and of the whole church. In His life we live, hold fellowship with God, receive grace for daily living, and rejoice in victory over sin, sorrow, and death.”-Dr. Griffith Thomas in “Our Lord’s Work in Heaven.”

15. What should Christ's constant mediation inspire us to do?

"Seeing then that we have a great High Priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us bold fast our profession." Hebrews 4:14. (See also Hebrews 10:23.)

4. The Way of Salvation

Grace Meets the Sinner's Need

1. WHAT question relating to salvation did a certain young man ask of Jesus? "Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life? Matthew 19: 16.

2. How did Jesus reply?

"If thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments." Matthew 19: 17.

3. How perfect an observance of the commandments is necessary, however, to gain salvation by works? "Whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one Point, he is guilty of all." James 2:10.

4. Can any claim that he has earned life, and salvation according to this standard? "But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident." Galatians 3:11.

5. To what, therefore, are all condemned through sin?

"For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord." Romans 6:23.

6. What attributes of God come to the aid of the condemned sinner?

"But Thou, O Lord, art a God full of compassion, and gracious, long-suffering, and plenteous in mercy and truth." Psalm 86:15.

7. What loving provision has He made available to man in Christ?

"I thank my God always on your behalf, for the grace of God which is given you by Jesus Christ." 1 Corinthians 1:4.

8. What is the grace of God in Christ able to effect on our behalf?

"That as sin has reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal. life by Jesus Christ our Lord." Romans 5:21.

"The help man needs must come from without and from above. God alone can undo that which by his fall man has inflicted on creation and on himself. The great message of the gospel is that God is not only able so to do, but willing also; and that He has, in fact, done it in the person of His Son Incarnate." -Mason in "The Faith of the Gospel," Page 121.

9. To how many is this saving grace available?

"For the grace of God that brings salvation has appeared to all men." Titus 2:11.

10. How may the sinner appropriate it?

"By grace are you saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: not of works, lest any man should boast." Ephesians 2:8, 9.

11. What is the new basis of our acceptance with God?

"To the praise of the glory of His grace, wherein He has made us accepted in the Beloved." Ephesians 1:6.

12. How did Paul acknowledge the operation of the grace of God in his own life?

"By the grace of God I am what I am: and His grace which was bestowed upon me was not in vain." 1 Corinthians 15:10.

13. Being saved by grace, what is our relation to the law?

Paul clearly made known to the Greeks the necessity of seeking the one whose grace was manifested through His Son, rather than trust in the works of their hands.

"For sin shall not have dominion over you: for you are not under [the condemnation of] the law, but under grace." Romans 6:14.

14. Does this mean that we are thereby freed from responsibility to the law?

"What then? Shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid." Romans 6:15.

15. What does Jesus look for in those whom He has redeemed?

"Who gave Himself for us, that He might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto Himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works." Titus 2:14.

16. How is this made possible?

"Now the God of peace, make you Perfect in every good work to do His will, working in you that which is well pleasing in His sight, through, Jesus Christ; to whom be glory for ever and ever." Hebrews 13:20, 21.

17. What will the continued operation of the grace of God effect in us?

"And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of His grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified." Acts 20:32.

"Grace is not simply a kindly feeling on the part of God, but a positive boon conferred on man. Grace is a real and active force illuminating the intellect, warming the heart, strengthening the will of redeemed humanity." - Liddon's "University Sermons," First Series, Page 644.

18. What is the ultimate purpose of the bestowal of the grace of God?

“The God of all grace, has called us unto His eternal glory by Christ Jesus.” 1 Peter 5:10.

God gives “grace in this world as a preparation for glory, and glory in the other world as the perfection of grace; both are God’s gift, His free gift.”- Matthew Henry.

What Is Predestination?

1. How many are included within the scope of the saving love of God?

“The Lord is gracious, and full of compassion; slow to anger, and of great mercy. The Lord is good to all.” Psalm 145: 8, 9.

2. What is His desire toward all men?

“Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.” 1 Timothy 2:4. (See also verses 5, 6.)

3. For how many did Jesus, die?

“That He by the grace of God should taste death for every man.” Hebrews 2:9. “We know that this is indeed the Christ, the Savior of the world.” John 4:42. (See also 1 John 4:14.)

4. To how many, therefore, was the gospel to be announced? “Go you into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.” Mark 16:15.

5. How is this universal offer of salvation appropriated by the individual?

“He that believes shall be saved; but he that believes not shall be damned.” Mark 16:16.

“It is the privilege of all who comply with the conditions to know for themselves that pardon is freely extended for every sin. Put away the suspicion that God’s promises are not meant for you. They are for every repentant transgressor. Strength and grace have been ‘provided through Christ to be brought by ministering angels to every believing soul. None are so sinful that they cannot find strength, purity, and righteousness in Jesus, who died for them. He is waiting to strip them of their garments stained and polluted with sin, and to put upon them the white robes of righteousness; He bids them live, and not die.’-E. G. White in “Steps to Christ,” Page 57.

6. What justifiable condemnation is therefore pronounced upon those who refuse the gospel message?

“He that believes on Him is not condemned: but he that believes not is condemned already, because he bath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.” John 3:18.

“The gifts of His grace through Christ are free to all. There is no election but one’s own by which any may perish. God has set forth in His Word the conditions upon which every soul will be elected to eternal, life-obedience to His commandments, through faith in Christ. God has elected a character in harmony with His law, and anyone who shall reach the standard of His requirement, will have an entrance into the kingdom of glory.” E. G. White in “Patriarchs and Prophets,” page 207.

7. While the offer of salvation is freely accepted or rejected by man, what does God’s infinite wisdom enable Him beforehand to know and do?

“According as He bath chosen us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before Him-in love.” Ephesians 1:4.

8. What term, therefore, may appropriately be applied to the saints? “Knowing, brethren beloved, your election of God.” 1 Thessalonians 1:4.

9. In what sense, however, is this “election” to be understood?

“Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father.” 1 Peter 1:2.

10. How is this same truth expressed in the Book of Acts?

“And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life believed.” Acts 13:48.

11. How does God collectively, regard His elect?

“You are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people.” 1 Peter 2:9.

12. What plans has God laid for those who are responsive to His call and who, in consequence, are His “elect”?

a. They are predestined to son ship. “For whom He did foreknow, He also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the firstborn among many brethren.” Romans 8:29.

b. They are predestinated to righteousness. “For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God has before ordained that we should walk in them.” Ephesians 2:10.

c. They are predestinated to glory. “Moreover whom He did predestinate, them He also called: and whom He called, them He also justified: and whom He justified, them He also glorified.” Romans 8:30.

d. They are predestinated to inherit the kingdom. “In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of Him who works all things after the counsel of His own will.” Ephesians 1:11.

13. Just as God has laid plans for the eternal blessing of those who respond to His call, what fate has He determined upon the wicked?

“The Lord has made all things for Himself: yes, even the wicked for the day of evil.” Proverbs 16:4. “Behold, the righteous shall be recompensed in the earth: much more the wicked and the sinner.” Proverbs 11:31. (See also Psalm 37:9.)

14. What personal responsibility, however, will the wicked have for their fate?

“Then shall they call upon Me, but I will not answer; they shall seek Me early, but they shall not find Me: for that they hated knowledge, and did not choose the fear of the Lord: they would none of My counsel: they despised all My reproof. Therefore shall they eat of the fruit of their own way, and be filled with their own devices.” Proverbs 1: 28-31.

15. Can God’s elect be wrested from His hand?

“And this is the Father’s will which has sent Me, that of all which He has given Me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.” John 6: 39. “And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of My hand.” John 10: 28.

16. What admonition, however, clearly teaches that it is possible by our own failure to lose the divine blessings offered to us?

“Wherefore let him that thinks he stands take heed lest he fall.” 1 Corinthians 10:12. (See also Romans 11:18-21.)

17. What care did the Apostle Paul exercise that he might not fall from grace?

“But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway.” 1 Corinthians 9: 27.

18. How earnestly did he labor that the elect might not lose their reward?

“Therefore I endure all things for the elect’s sakes, that they may also obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus with eternal glory.” 2 Timothy 2:10.

19. How does Peter counsel those who have been “called” and chosen?

“Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure.” 2 Peter 1:10.

20. What three characteristics will be manifest in those who are with Christ in the day of His triumph? “They that are with Him are called, and chosen, and faithful.” Revelation 17: 14.

Conviction of Sin

1. How anxious is God to deliver man from the consequences of transgression?

“Lo, all these things works God oftentimes with man, to bring back his soul from the pit.” Job 33:29,30.

2. What appeal, therefore, does He make to the sinner?

“Thus said the Lord of hosts; Consider your ways.” Haggai 1:7.

“Have you ever been able to trace the conversion of anyone directly to a single sentence you uttered?” a ministerial friend once asked C. H. Spurgeon. “Never,” he answered, “so far as I can remember, to any special sentence of my own; but often to a verse from the Word of God. In my experience that has always been the arrow of conviction.” - Quoted in “The Life of Faith.”

3. What part has the Spirit of God in convincing men of sin?

“And when He [the Spirit] is come, He will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment.” John 16: 8.

4. For what response does He look?

“I will be sorry for my sin.” Psalm 38:18.

C. F. Andrews describing his conversion in boyhood days says: “Then without warning the strong conviction of sin and impurity came upon me with such overpowering strength that every shred of false conviction was torn aside and I knew myself as I really was.”

5. In what way does godly sorrow differ from that of the world?

“For godly sorrow works repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world works death.” 2 Corinthians 7:10.

6. How does God relate Himself to those who truly sorrow for sin?

“The Lord is nigh unto them that are of a broken heart; and saves such as be of a contrite spirit.” Psalm 34:18.

7. What will godly sorrow further evoke from the sinner?

“I acknowledged my sin unto Thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the Lord.” Psalm 32:5.

“Confession of sin should be free, particular, full, penitential, earnest, accompanied with heartfelt hatred to sin, supplication for mercy, forsaking sin, and an implicit faith in Christ for the forgiveness of the same.” - John Bute.

8. To whom else beside God should confession be made?

“Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that you may be healed.” James 5:16.

“A revival of religion may be expected when Christians begin to confess their sins to one another. When there comes an ingenuous breaking down, and a pouring out of the heart in-confession of sin, the flood-gates will soon burst open, and salvation will flow over the place.” - Dr. Finney.

9. How specific should be the sinner’s confession?

“And it shall be, when he shall be guilty in one of these things, that he shall confess that he has sinned in that thing.” Leviticus 5:5.

10. By what will true confession be accompanied?

a. Restoration where possible. “Then it shall be, because he has sinned, and is guilty, that he shall restore that which he took violently away, or the thing which he has deceitfully gotten.” Leviticus 6:4.

b. Forsaking of evil. "He that covered his sins shall not prosper: but who so confesses and forsakes them shall have mercy." Proverbs 28:13.

11. What is God willing to do for those who truly confess and forsake their sins and invoke the Savior?

"If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness." 1 John 1:9.

12. How foolish are those who, in spite of all the efforts of God, remain not convicted of sin?

"If a man think himself to be something, when he is nothing, he deceived himself." Galatians 6:3.

13. What do those who fail to heed the Lord's appeal despise? "He that refused instruction despised his own soul." Proverbs 15:32.

14. What fate do they invite upon themselves?

"He, that being often reprov'd hardened his neck, shall suddenly be destroyed, and that without remedy." Proverbs 29: 1.

15. What admonition, therefore, should we earnestly heed?

"See that you refuse not Him that speaks. For if they escaped not who refused Him that spake on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from Him that speaks from heaven." Hebrews 12:25.

16. Because we know not when our probation may close, how urgent is the gospel call?

"Today, if you will hear His voice, harden not your hearts." ("Today is the day of loving welcome." Weymouth's translation.) Hebrews 4: 7.

"Hand over to Him all your sins and all your sorrows. He takes away the sin of the world. Do not wait till your sins have accumulated into a cloud or a mountain. Do not tarry till the time has come for evening prayer. Do not delay till you are alone. But as swiftly as you are conscious of any burden, pass it on to Jesus.... So soon as you give, He takes; and what He takes He also undertakes; and will see it made right for you, to your rejoicing and to His glory."-F. B. Meyer in "Israel," Page 157.

What Is Conversion?

1. WHAT universal call does God make to sinners?

"God commanded all men everywhere to repent." Acts 17:30.

2. For what purpose did Jesus come among men?

"I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance." Luke 5: 32.

3. What was the constant theme of His preaching?

"From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand." Matthew 4: 17. "Except you be converted, and become as little children, you shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven." Matthew 18:3.

4. How may repentance be defined?

"Repent, and turn yourselves from all your transgressions." Ezekiel 18: 30.

"A mere emotional outburst in itself is not worthy of the title 'conversion,' neither is a simple change of opinion. Religious conversion manifests itself in a redirection of the will, and the forming of a new pattern of behavior."-Revelation L. E. Elliott Binns, D.D.

"In conversion what matters is not the rate of speed with which you turn, but the angle through which you turn, and the direction in which you are left facing." - Dr. T. R. Glover.

5. Why must the turning from sin to God be clear and uncompromising?

"No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. You cannot serve God and mammon." Matthew 6:24.

6. How wholehearted, therefore, must the repentance of the sinner be?

"Therefore also now, said the Lord, turn you even to Me with all your heart, and with fasting, and with weeping and with mourning; and rend your heart, and not your garments, and turn unto the Lord your God." Joel 2:12, 13.

"I saw it as a flash of electric light: and what you see you can never not see. There must be full surrender before there can be full blessedness. God admits you by the one into the other."-Frances Ridley Havergal.

7. What appropriate words does the Lord suggest the returning sinner should bring to Him? "O Israel, return unto the Lord thy God; take with you words, and turn to the Lord: say unto Him, Take away all iniquity, and receive us graciously: so will we render the calves of our lips." Hosea 14: 1, 2.

8. In whose name may the sinner confidently present his plea?

"Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins." Acts 2: 38.

9. Of what does God further assure the repentant sinner?

"Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the Lord, and He will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for He will abundantly pardon." Isaiah 55:7.

10. Beside revoking the punishment, what new spiritual power will He bestow on those who turn again to Him?

a. A new heart. "I will give them an heart to know Me, that I am the Lord: and they shall be My people, and I will be their God: for they shall return unto Me with their whole heart." Jeremiah 24:7. (See also Ezekiel 36:26, 27.)

b. The Holy Spirit. "Repent, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost." Acts 2:38.

11. How will true repentance manifest itself in the life?

“Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance.” Matthew 3:8.

“There can be no repentance without reformation. Repentance is a change of mind; reformation is a corresponding change of life.” Dr. Raleigh.

“All preachers and others concerned in ‘revivals,’ should not forget to demand, not merely an emotional repentance, but the solid fruits-which alone guarantee the worth of the emotion.” Dr. Ian Maclaren.

“It seems to me that a great deal of what is called, and in a sense is, evangelical teaching, fails to represent the full counsel of God, in the matter of man’s redemption, because it puts a one-sided emphasis on faith, and slurs over the accompanying idea of repentance.” - Alexander Maclaren.

12. How widely did Jesus intend the gospel of repentance to be preached after His departure?

“Repentance and remission of sins should be preached in His name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.” Luke 24:47.

13. How earnestly did the Apostle Paul fulfil the gospel commission?

“Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ.” Acts 20:21.

14. What reward had he for his labor?

“Now I rejoice, not that you were made sorry, but that you sorrowed to repentance.” 2 Corinthians 7:9.

15. What are God’s ministers today exhorted to do?

“In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth.” 2 Timothy 2:25.

Blessings of Forgiveness

1. WHO only has the right to remit punishment and forgive sin? “I, even I, am He that blotted out thy transgressions.” Isaiah 43:25.

2. How ready is God to exercise His mercy toward the sinner?

“And the Lord passed by before him, and proclaimed, The Lord, The Lord God, merciful and gracious,... keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving, iniquity and transgression and sin.” Exodus 34: 6, 7.

3. What necessity did God’s holiness impose upon His mercy? “Without shedding of blood is no remission.” Hebrews 9:22.

4. By whom have the conditions of forgiveness been met?

“Be it known unto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this Man [Jesus] is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins.” Acts 13:38.

5. How did Jesus make forgiveness possible?

“In whom we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of His grace.” Ephesians 1:7. “The blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin,” 1 John 1:7.

“It is not enough to rely upon God’s grace in general; we must build upon the grace of God in the blood of Jesus.” - Count Zinzendorf.

6. By virtue of the sacrifice of Christ what is God willing to do for those who are convicted of sin?

“He looked upon men, and if any say, I have sinned, He will deliver his soul from going into the pit, and his life shall see the light.” Job 33:27,28.

7. How completely is God prepared to remove the guilt of sin?

“Come now, and let us reason together, said the Lord: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.” Isaiah 1:18.

“The pardon of a believer’s sin is an entire pardon. It is the full pardon of all his sins. It were no pardon to him if it were not an entire pardon. If it were but a partial blotting out of the thick cloud-if it were but a forgiveness of some sins only-then the gospel were no glad tidings to his soul. Tell him that the atonement which Jesus offers is a full satisfaction for his sins.” O. Winslow in “The Atonement.”

8. How far Will He remove our transgressions from us?

“As far as the east is from the west so far has He removed our transgressions from us.” Psalm 103:12.

9. What does He further say concerning the remembrance of sin?

“I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.” Hebrews 8: 12.

“So fathomless are the depths of the sea of atoning blood, which Christ has poured out, that in it are cast, never to be found again, all the sins of the believer.” O. Winslow in “The Atonement.”

10. How supremely blessed, therefore, is the forgiven sinner?

“Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered. Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin.” Romans 4:7, 8. (See also Psalm 32: 1, 2.)

11. Believing the promises of God, for what did the psalmist pray?

“Remember not the sins of my youth, nor my transgressions: according to Thy mercy remember Thou me for Thy goodness’ sake, O Lord.” Psalm 25:7. (See also verse 18.)

12. How did he testify to the forgiveness of his sins?

“I acknowledged my sin unto Thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the Lord; and Thou forgave the iniquity of my sin.” Psalm 32:5.

13. For what does Jesus encourage believers confidently to pray? “And forgive us our sins.” Luke 11:4.

14. Is there any sin which God will not forgive?

“Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men.” Matthew 12:31. (See also verse 32.)

15. What makes this sin unpardonable?

“And when He [the Spirit of God] is come, He will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment.” John 16: 8.

If the sinner refuses to be convicted of sin by rejecting the Spirit’s pleading, obviously there can be no pardon; for there is no other messenger of mercy to follow.

16. If we claim forgiveness from God how should we relate ourselves to those who wrong us?

“Be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ’s sake has forgiven you.” Ephesians 4:32. (See also Colossians 3:12, 13.)

17. Should there be any limit to our forgiveness of others?

“Then came Peter to Him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? Till seven times? Jesus said unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven.” Matthew 18:21,22.

Justified by Faith

1. WHAT solemn charge is made against all men without exception?

“All have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.” Romans 3:23. (See also Romans 3:10-12.)

2. To what penalty, therefore, are all subject through transgression? “The wages of sin is death.” Romans 6:23.

3. In view of man’s inability to justify himself in the sight of God’s law, what wonderful provision has God made available?

“Therefore is by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life.” Romans 5: 18.

“All the heathen religions teach men to work their way up to God; but the religion of Jesus Christ is God coming down to men to save them, and to lift them up out of the pit of sin.” D. L. Moody.

4. Through whom does this imputed righteousness come?

“You are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.” 1 Corinthians 6:11. “In the Lord shall all the seed of Israel be justified, and shall glory.” Isaiah 45:25.

5. To what name is Jesus, therefore, entitled?

“In His days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely: and this is His name whereby He shall be called, THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS.” Jeremiah 23:6.

6. How did Jesus effect this wonderful transaction on behalf of the sinner?

“By His knowledge shall My righteous Servant justify many; for He shall bear their iniquities.” Isaiah 53:11.

7. By what act in particular is the sinner justified?

“Much more then, being now justified by His blood, we shall be saved from wrath through Him.” Romans 5:9.

8. Through the merits of Christ’s righteousness what is God prepared to impute to the sinner?

“Even as David also described the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputed righteousness without works.” Romans 4:6.

9. How may we avail ourselves of this proffered salvation?

“Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shall be saved.” Acts 16: 3 1. “But to him that worked not, but believes on Him that justified the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.” Romans 4:5. (See also Romans 1:17.)

10. Why do many who hear the offer of grace fail’ to appropriate its blessings?

“The Word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it.” Hebrews 4: 2.

11. How impossible is our justification apart from faith?

“But without faith it is impossible to Please Him: for he that comes to God must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of them that diligently seek Him.” Hebrews 11: 6.

12. Through what medium does this faith come?

“So then faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the Word of God.” Romans 10:17.

13. Have works, then, any place in the obtaining of salvation?

“Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith. . Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.” Romans 3: 27, 28.

“If the article of justification be once lost, then is all true Christian doctrine lost.” “He then that strayed from this ‘Christian righteousness,’ must needs fall into the ‘righteousness of the law’; that is to say, when he has lost Christ, he must fall into the confidence of his own works.” – “Luther on Galatians,” Pages 136, 148.

14. Is the law then set aside by faith?

“Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yes, we establish the law.” Romans 3:31.

15. What purpose does the law serve in the plan of salvation by faith?

“By the law is the knowledge of sin.” Romans 3:20. “The law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith.” Galatians 3:24.

16. What is the only work we can do?

“Then said they unto Him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God? Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that you believe on Him whom He has sent.” John 6: 28, 29.

“Faith is not our righteousness, it is accounted to us in order to righteousness, but not as righteousness; for in that case it would be a work like any other doing of man, and as such would be incompatible with the righteousness of the Son of God; the ‘righteousness which is by faith.’ Faith does not justify us as a work, or as a moral act, or a piece of goodness, nor as a gift of the Spirit, but simply because it is the bond between us and the substitute.” - Dr. Horatius Bonar.

17. Who is the chief example of justification by faith?

“For what said the Scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness.” Romans 4:3. (See also verses 11, 16.)

18. With whom do believers, therefore, associate themselves?

“Know you therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.” Galatians 3: 7.

19. From what is man delivered by justification?

“Christ has redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is everyone that hanged on a tree.” Galatians 3: 13.

20. How completely is the sinner freed from the condemnation of the law?

“There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk ‘not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.’” Romans 8:1.

21. Need the justified sinner fear condemnation from any source?

“Who shall lay anything to the charge of God’s elect? It is God that justified.” Romans 8:33.

22. Into what happy state are we brought through justification?

a. Peace with God. “Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ.” Romans 5:1.

b. Son ship. “For you are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.” Galatians 3:26.

c. Right of access to God. “In whom we have boldness and access [to God] with confidence by the faith of Him.” Ephesians

3: 12.

23. What further glorious possibilities does justification open up to us?

a. Eternal life. “Being justified by His grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.” Titus 3:7.

b. Eternal glory. “Whom He called, them He also justified: and whom He justified, them He also glorified.” Romans 8:30.

c. Eternal inheritance. “That they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in Me.” Acts 26:18. (See also Hebrews 9:15.)

24. For what, therefore, should we earnestly seek?

“And be found in Him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith.” Philippians 3:9.

Born from Above

“There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: the same came to Jesus by night.” And to his prejudiced but inquiring mind was opened the all-important fact of the new birth.

1. WHAT qualification is absolutely essential to an entrance into the kingdom of God?

“Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.” John 3: 3.

2. How incredible did regeneration appear to Nicodemus?

“Nicodemus said unto Him, How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter the second time into his mother’s womb, and be born?” John 3: 4.

3. By what illustration did Jesus explain the nature of the new birth?

“The wind blows where it lists, and thou hears the sound thereof, but can not tell whence it comes, and whither it goes: so is everyone that is born of the Spirit.” John 3:8.

4. How does Paul describe the process of death and regeneration?

a. Crucified with Christ. “Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.” Romans 6:6.

b. Raised with Him. “And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, has He quickened, together with Him, having forgiven you all trespasses.” Colossians 2:13.

5. What terms are used of the new birth to indicate the various co-operating factors by which it is brought

about?

“Born of God.” 1 John 3:9. “Born of the Spirit.” John 3:8. “Quickened [made alive] together with Christ.” Ephesians 2:5. “Born again by the Word of God.” 1 Peter 1:23.

6. By what is this regeneration of the believer symbolized?

“Therefore we are buried with Him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.” Romans 6:3,4.

7. How completely is the believer’s new life in Christ dissociated from the old life of sin?

“If any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.” 2 Corinthians 5:17.

8. Of what new nature do we become partakers through regeneration?

“Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these you might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.” 2 Peter 1:4.

9. In what vivid way does Paul describe the new life of the believer?

“I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ lives in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave Himself for me.” Galatians 2: 20.

Years after the conversion of Augustine, he was met by an associate of his earlier dissolute days. “It is I,” said the temptress to Augustine. “But it is not I,” Augustine replied. He had been born again. The old “I” was dead. He was a new man in Christ.

10. How is the Spirit associated with the regenerated life?

“But you are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you.” Romans 8: 9. (See also verses 10-14.)

11. What profound -changes are effected in the life of the regenerated believer?

a. A new heart and spirit. “I will give them one heart, and I will put a new spirit within you.” Ezekiel 11: 19.

b. A new mind. “Be not conformed to this world: but be you transformed by the renewing of your mind.” Romans 12: 2.

12. In what ways will the new nature Manifest itself?

a. New affections. “For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit.” Romans 8:5.

b. New love for the law of God. “I delight in the law of God after the inward man.” Romans 7:22.

c. New love for fellow men. “We know’ that we have passed from. death unto life, because we love the brethren.” 1 John 3:

14.

13. What purpose has God in mind in regenerating the sinner?

“And I will put My Spirit within you, and cause you to walk in My statutes, and you shall keep My judgments, and do them.” Ezekiel 36:27.

14. For what, therefore, does God look in the-life of the regenerated sinner?

“We are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God has before ordained that we should walk in them.” Ephesians 2: 10. (See also Romans 8:4.)

“If I am to follow such as He, I must be born again and born different. A new birth is a necessary beginning for this new life.” Stanley Jones in “The Christ of the Indian Road,” page 197.

15. By what visible test may we determine whether we are born of God?

“If you know that He is righteous, you know that everyone that does righteousness is born of Him.” 1 John 2:29. “And hereby we do know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments.” 1 John 2:3. (See also verses 4-6.)

Reconciled to God

1. WHAT is necessary to fellowship?

“Can two walk together, except they be agreed.” Amos 3:3.

2. Why is fallen man separated from God?

“Thou has hid Thy face from us, and has consumed us, because of our iniquities.” Isaiah 64:7.

3. How did God associate Himself with Jesus in seeking to bring about a reconciliation with man?

“To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto Himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them.” 2 Corinthians 5:19.

4. By what act was reconciliation made possible?

“And you, that were sometimes alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now has, He reconciled in the body of His flesh through death, to present you holy and unblamable and unprovable in His sight.” Colossians 1: 21, 22.

5. On what basis is the sinner received back again into fellowship with God?

“To the praise of the glory of His grace, wherein He has made us accepted in the Beloved.” Ephesians 1: 6.

6. What other term is applied to this work of reconciliation?

“And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.” Romans 5:11.

7. Having provided in Christ the Mediator, how has God made known His gracious offer?

“All things are of God, who has reconciled us, to Himself by Jesus Christ, and has given to us the ministry of reconciliation.” 2 Corinthians 5: 18. (See also verse 19.)

8. What appeal, therefore, does Paul make to his readers?

“Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ’s stead, be you reconciled to God.” 2 Corinthians 5:20.

9. Into what close relationship with God does reconciliation bring us?

“I will receive you, and will be a Father unto you, and you shall be My sons and daughters, said the Lord Almighty.” 2 Corinthians 6: 17, 18.

10. By adoption into the family of God what new relationship obtains between us and Christ?

“For both He that sanctified and they who are sanctified are all of one: for which cause He is not ashamed to call them brethren.” Hebrews 2: 11.

11. To what does Paul compare this fellowship of believers?

“Now therefore you are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints, and of the household of God.” Ephesians 2: 19.

12. What witness have we that we have been adopted into the family of God? “The Spirit itself bears witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God.” Romans 8: 16.

13. Because the family relationship does not fully suggest the union between Christ and the believer, what further illustration does Paul use?

“Know you not that your bodies are the members of Christ.” 1 Corinthians 6:15. (See also Ephesians 5: 30.) “Everything depends upon a man’s union with a living, present Savior. In the absence of that union, even the gospel of the cross loses its saving efficacy. Atonement remains impersonal and largely irrelevant until we make contact with the One who atones.” - J. S. Stewart in “A Man in Christ.”

14. Being united with God and Christ, what relationship obtains between individual believers?

“We, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another.” Romans 12:5. (See also 1 Corinthians 12: 20, 25-27.)

15. What will characterize the life of the reconciled sinner?

“And he that keeps His commandments dwells in Him, and He in him.” 1 John 3: 24.

“I am now one with Christ, that is to say, Christ’s righteousness, victory, and life are mine.”-Luther.

16. What would belie our fellowship with God?

“If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth.” 1 John 1:6.

“Continuance in sin is impossible for the justified man, because of our union with Christ in His death and life.” - Dr. Griffith Thomas.

17. If we continue faithful, how fully will our union with God and with Christ be made manifest? “At that day you shall know that I am in My Father, and you in Me, and I in you.” John 14: 20.

18. What glorious prospect will then open up to us through son ship? “And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint heirs with Christ.” Romans 8:17.

Righteousness by Faith

1. IN what striking words does Paul summarize the two essential features of the plan of salvation?

“Who gave Himself for us, that He, might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto Himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.” Titus 2:14.

2. To what high standard of righteousness are the redeemed to rise?

“Being filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ, unto the glory and praise of God.” Philippians 1:11. (See also Colossians 1: 28.)

3. In what other striking way has God declared His high aim for the redeemed?

“You shall be holy; for I am holy.” Leviticus 11:44. (See also 1 Peter 1:16.)

“Our main doctrines which include all the rest, are repentance, faith, and holiness. The first of these we account, as it were, the porch of religion; the next, the door; the third, religion itself.” John Wesley, quoted in “Makers of Freedom,” by S. Eddy, Page, pages 137, 138.

4. Who only may hope to inherit eternal blessedness?

“Not everyone that said unto Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of My Father which is in heaven.” Matthew 7:21.

5. Why is righteousness so necessary to association with God? “Righteousness and judgment are the habitation of His throne.” Psalm 97:2.

6. Can the justified believer hope to attain unto this righteousness of life in his own strength? “Are you so foolish? Having begun in the Spirit, are you now made perfect by the flesh?” Galatians 3: 3.

7. To whom, then, must he look for its attainment?

“Work out your own salvation with fear and trembling. For it is God which works in you both to will and to do of His good pleasure.” Philippians 2:12, 13.

It has been well said, “Man needs a power outside of and above himself to restore him to the likeness of God. There must be a power working from within, a new life from above, before man can be changed from sin to holiness.”

8. How is this divine righteousness appropriated?

“And be found in Him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith.” Philippians 3: 9.

9. By what process does God implant His own righteousness in the believer?

a. By writing the law in the heart. “But this shall be the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; after those days, said the Lord, I will put My law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts.” Jeremiah 31:33. (See also Hebrews 8:10.)

b. By implanting divine power for its observance. “Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these you might be partakers of the divine nature.” 2 Peter 1:4. (See also Galatians 2: 20; 1 Corinthians 6: 19.)

“The precious theme of ‘Christ in us’ should be preached as well, as ‘the glory of Christ for us.’” -Bishop Moule.

10. How will the law written in the heart of the believer express itself through the indwelling power of Christ?

“What the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: that the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.” Romans 8:3,4.

“It never can be that this efficacy and life of faith can be in anyone, without its causing him to continue in good works, and to bring forth fruit unto God.” “Faith works so effectively, is such a living spring and powerful energy in the heart, that it cannot remain inactive, but must break forth into works.”-Luther.

11. Of what is this righteousness in the Christian’s life an evidence?

“Hereby we do know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments.” 1 John 2:3.

“Tell us not merely what a man says in religion: tell us rather what he does.” - Bishop J. C. Ryle.

12. Of what will transgression be an evidence?

“Whosoever transgresses, and abides not in the doctrine of Christ, has not God.” 2 John 9.

“The demand for righteous living, as the only test of religious emotion is fully Christian.” - Dr. Ian Alaclaren.

13. What two apparently contradictory statements are thus shown to be entirely in harmony?

“Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.” Romans 3:28 “You see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only.” James 2:24.

We are justified by faith only, for there is nothing that we can do to commend ourselves to God. But becoming thereby partakers of the “divine nature” the “righteousness of the law” is “fulfilled in us who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit,” and the works of the Spirit bear witness to the regeneration which has taken place. If such “works” are not manifest, doubt is cast upon the reality of the claim to inward change. “We are not justified by keeping the law; we keep the law because we are justified.”-H. M. Hughes in “Christian Foundations,” Page 169,

14. How does James say Abraham’s faith was made manifest?

“See thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made Perfect.” James 2:22.

15. What reply does he make to those who claim to have faith and yet do not reveal it visibly in their lives? “What does it profit, my brethren, though a man say he has faith, and have not works? Can faith save him?” James 2:14. “For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.” Verse 26.

16. For what did Paul look as a result of his preaching?

“But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith.” Romans 16:26.

This expression is in other versions rendered, “For obedience to the faith,” and “unto obedience of faith.” “Obedience of faith is the obedience which characterizes and proceeds from faith.” Vincent.

17. Were such results forthcoming?

“And the Word of God increased; and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.” Acts 6:7.

18. What two marks are particularly mentioned as characteristic of the remnant people of God in the last days?

“Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.” Revelation 14:12.

19. To whom only will access be given to the tree of life in the heavenly Jerusalem?

“Blessed are they that de His commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city.” Revelation 22:14.

SO LOVED THE WORLD, THAT HE GAVE HIS ONLY BEGOTTEN SON. Gave Him both to feel our need and to be the channel through which the Father’s love could reach and rescue us.

Our PHYSICAL need touched His heart, and He “went about doing good, and healing all that wore oppressed of the devil.” Acts 10:38.

Our SOCIAL ills were ministered to when at the home of Mary and Martha He placed spiritual and material things in right perspective. “Seek you first the kingdom of God, and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added unto you, was again revealed as the foundation of happy relationships in the home and society. Luke 10:38-42; Matthew 6:33.

And our SPIRITUAL need, closely linked with physical and social, was abundantly supplied when, “while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.” Now, “much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by His life.” Romans 5:8,10.

5. The Law And The Gospel

God’s Ten Words

1. WHAT threefold authority does God exercise over mankind?

“For the Lord is our judge, the Lord is our Lawgiver, the Lord is our King; He will save us.” Isaiah 33:22. (See also James 4:12.)

2. How has He summarized the principles of His moral government?

“And the Lord spoke unto you out of the midst of the fire: you heard the voice of the words, but saw no similitude; only you heard a voice. And He declared unto you. His covenant, which He commanded you to perform, even Ten Commandments.” Deuteronomy 4:12, 13. (Read Exodus 20:2-17.)

“The first table containing the first, second, third, and fourth commandments, and comprehending the reverence we owe, and the religious service, we should render to Him. The second, containing the six last commandments, and comprehending a complete system of ethics, or moral duties which man owes to his fellows. By this division, the first table contains our duty to God; the second, our duty to our neighbor.” - Dr. Adam Clarke.

3. In what way did God distinguish the Ten Commandments from the other laws He later gave to Moses?

a. Written on tablets of stone. “He wrote them in two tables of stone, and delivered them unto me.” Deuteronomy 5:22.

b. Placed in the ark. “And thou shalt put into the ark the testimony which I shall give thee.” Exodus 25: 16. “And thou shalt put the mercy seat above upon the ark; and in the ark thou shalt put the testimony that I shall give thee.” Verse 21.

4. By what special names are the Ten Commandments designated?

a. His law. “And the Lord said unto Moses, will give thee tables of stone, and a law, and, commandments which I have written.” Exodus 24:12.

b. His testimony. “And He gave unto Moses two tables of testimony, tables of stone, written with the finger of God.” Exodus 31:18.

c. His covenant. “And He declared unto you His covenant, which He commanded you to perform, even Ten Commandments; and He wrote them upon two tables of stone.” Deuteronomy 4:13.

5. What further statement indicates that the Ten Commandments were a complete and indivisible code? “These words the Lord spoke unto all your assembly in the mount out of the midst of the fire, of the cloud, and of the thick darkness, with a great voice: and He added no more.” Deuteronomy 5: 22.

6. How perfect an expression are they of the will of God?

“The law of the Lord is perfect, converting the soul: the testimony of the Lord is sure, making wise the simple. The statutes of the Lord are right, rejoicing the heart: the commandment of the Lord is pure, enlightening the eyes. Psalm 19:7, 8. “Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good.” Romans 7:12.

“The law of God is a, divine law-holy, heavenly, perfect. There is not a command too many; there is not one too few; but it is so incomparable that its perfection is a proof of its divinity.” -Spurgeon’s “Sermons,” page 280.

7. How complete an epitome of man’s duty to God do they provide?

“Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God, and keep His commandments: for this is the whole duty of man.” Ecclesiastes 12:13.

“It is so brief that our children can easily learn it by rote, yet so complete that it includes all duty, the combination of religion with morality in thought, word, and deed.” - H. E. Govan, MA, in “Ten Imperishable Words,” page 13.

8. What reward does God promise to the obedient?

“In keeping of them there is great reward.” Psalm 19: 11. (See also Psalm 119:165.)

9. Conversely how does He regard the breach of His commandments?

As sin. “Whosoever commits sin transgressed also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law.” 1 John 3:4.

10. What purposes. then does the law serve?

a. Standard of righteousness. “And knows His will, being instructed out of the law.” Romans 2:18. (See also Psalm 119:142, 172.)

b. Reveals any lapse from obedience. “By the law is the knowledge of sin.” Romans 3:20.

“There is a power of life and death in them. They either quicken the sin and kill the sinner, or quicken the sinner and kill the sin. And the quickening, for the sinner is through Christ and His cross.” - H. E. Govan, MA, in “Ten Imperishable Words,” page 15.

11. Of what commandment is the first recorded sin in the Bible a breach?

Covetousness (tenth commandment). “And when the-woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant, to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the’ fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.” Genesis 3: 6.

12. For what was Cain condemned?

Murder (sixth commandment). "Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one, and slew his brother," 1 John 3: 12. (See Genesis 4: 7, 10, 11.)

13. What conspicuous sin of the antediluvian world is specially mentioned?

Adultery (seventh commandment). "The sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose." Genesis 6:2.

14. What sins are singled out for particular mention in patriarchal days?

Lying (ninth commandment) Genesis 12:13; stealing (eighth commandment) Genesis 30:33; dishonor to parents, (fifth commandment) Genesis 44:25-34; idolatry and image-worship (first and second commandments) Genesis 31:19.

Who, however, received the approbation of God for obedience?

"Because that Abraham obeyed My voice, and kept My charge. My commandments, My statutes, and My laws." Genesis 26:5.

16. What commandment did some of the Israelites flagrantly break before the giving of the law at Sinai?

Sabbath (fourth commandment). "And it came to pass, that there went out some of the people on the seventh day for to gather [manna], and they found none. And the Lord said unto Moses, How long refuse you to keep My commandments and My laws?" Exodus 16: 27, 28. From these instances it is clear that the Ten-Commandment code has been God's standard of judgment from the very beginning. At Sinai it was written down in permanent form and given into the keeping of Israel to be passed on by them to succeeding generations.

17. Did Jesus intend the gospel to supersede the Ten Commandment code?

"Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he' shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven." Matthew 5:17-19.

"Jesus never condemned the law and the prophets, but He did condemn those who did not obey them. Because He gave new commandments, it does not follow that He abolished the old. Christ's explanation of them made them all the more searching. In His sermon on the mount, He carried the principles of the commandments beyond the mere letter. He unfolded them and showed that they embraced more, that they are positive as well as prohibitive." - Revelation Dwight L. Moody in "Weighed and Wanting," page 15.

18. What did He declare to be the only way of life?

"If thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments." Matthew 19:17.

19. In what striking way did Jesus summarize and re-emphasize the Ten Commandments? "Jesus said unto him, Thou shall love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shall love thy neighbor as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets." Matthew 22:37-40.

"If you love God with all your heart, you must keep the first table; and if you love your neighbor as yourself, you must keep the second table."-C. H. Spurgeon.

"Every breach of the Ten Commandments is a violation of love. Every breach of law is due to a lack of love." - Dr. G. Campbell Morgan in "The Ten Commandments," pages 120, 126.

20. How did Paul emphasize the continued obligation of obedience to God's moral law by the Christian?

"Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid, yes, we establish the law." Romans 3:31. "Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the commandments of God." 1 Corinthians 7:19.

"The law of God, in its great and solemn injunctions, should be distinctly set forth. Our congregations should be gathered as around the base of Mount Sinai, while from its summit is heard the voice of God in those commandments which are unalterable and eternal in their character."-Bishop Matthew Simpson in "Lectures on Preaching," Lecture 4, page 128.

21. What did James regard as the supreme standard of the Christian life?

"So speak you, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty." James 2:12. "If you fulfil the royal law you do well: but if you have respect to persons, you commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors." James 2:8,9.

22. What special marks will characterize the remnant church of God in the last days?

"Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus." Revelation 14:12.

"There must be many who agree with me that. the kind of revival which we need supremely is a revival of the Ten Commandments."-Dr. John Hutton in the British Weekly.

"I think that a large part of our trouble today is due to the fact that we neglect the, commandments' of God."-Revelation H. R. L. Sheppard.

"What we need today is an inculcation of the immortal lessons of the Ten Commandments and the sermon on the mount. This is the surest antidote to stem the rising tide of lawlessness." - J. Edgar Hoover, America's G-men chief, in New York Herald Tribune.

“The plight of our times is due to the breaking of the commandments, and only when men order their social and individual lives in accordance with God’s law, as revealed in the Old Testament and fulfilled in the incarnate life of Jesus Christ, will peace, justice, and reason be established in the earth.”-John Drewett in “The Ten Commandments in the Twentieth Century,” page 13.

23. Against whom does Satan manifest special enmity?

“And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.” Revelation 12: 17.

24. Who only will be permitted to partake of the tree of life in the paradise of God?

“Blessed are they that do His commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city.” Revelation 22:14. (See also Matthew 7:21.)

25. Why will the wicked be excluded from the privilege of salvation? “Salvation is far from the wicked: for they seek not Thy statutes.” Psalm 119: 15 5.

26. How long will God’s moral code continue to be a standard of righteousness?

“All His commandments are sure. They stand fast for ever and ever.” Psalm 111:7,8. (See also Matthew 5:18; Luke 16:17.)

The Laws of Sacrifice

1. BESIDE the Ten-Commandment code, what other laws did God give to ancient Israel?

“Be you therefore very courageous to keep and to do all that is written in the book of the law of Moses, that you turn not aside therefrom to the right hand or to the left.” Joshua 23:6. (See also Deuteronomy 5:31,32.)

2. Of what did these other laws consist?

“Sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings and offerings for sin which are offered by the law.” Hebrews 10: 8.

3. In what way did the ceremonial laws differ from the moral law of the Ten Commandments?

“For the law [of sacrifices] a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things.” Hebrews 10:1.

4. To what did these sacrifices point forward?

“Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ.” Colossians 2:17. “The next day John sees Jesus coming unto him, and said, Behold the Lamb of God, which takes away- the sin of the world.” John 1:29.

“What the ceremonial law obscurely typified, the prophets more plainly predicted. Both pointed to the coming Messiah. The daily sacrifices of the one, and the successive utterances of the other, pointed to ‘the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world.’ ” - H. Grattan Guinness, DD, in “Creation Centered in Christ,” pages 31, 32.

5. In contrast with the moral law, how transient were the ceremonial ordinances to be?

“Which stood only in meats and drinks, and divers washings, and carnal ordinances, imposed on them until the time of reformation.” Hebrews 9: 10.

6. How was the difference in permanency between the ceremonial and moral laws emphasized?

“Moses made an end of writing the words of this law in a book.” Deuteronomy 31:24. “And He gave unto Moses two tables of testimony, tables of stone, written with the finger of God.” Exodus 31:18. (See also Exodus 32: 15, 16.)

7. As a further distinction between them and the Ten Commandments, where were the ceremonial laws deposited?

“Take this book of the law, and put it in the side of the ark of the covenant of the Lord your God, that it may be there for a witness against thee.” Deuteronomy 31:26. (Compare Deuteronomy 10:1-8.)

8. Who definitely foretold the end of the ceremonial laws?

Daniel. “And He shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week He shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease.” Daniel 9:27.

9. On what occasion’ did Jesus also expressly state that the temple service would one day end?

“Jesus said unto her, Woman, believe Me, the hour comes, when you shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father.” John 4:21.

10. How was the ceremonial system brought to an end?

“Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way nailing it to His cross.” Colossians 2:14. “Having abolished in His flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances; for to make in Himself of twain one new man, so making peace.” Ephesians 2:15.

In his Shorter Catechism, Luther writes:

“Question. Are we under obligation to keep the ceremonial or church law of the Jews?

“Answer. No; the ordinances which it enjoined were only types and shadows of Christ; and when they were fulfilled by His death, the ceremonial law was abolished, because it was no longer necessary.” - Edition 1834, page 16.

11. By what startling event was its termination indicated?

“Jesus, when He had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the ghost. And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent.” Matthew 27:50,51.

12. How did the Apostle Peter urge believers to recognize the abolition of the ceremonial law?

“Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of these things, though you know them, and be established in the present truth.” 2 Peter 1:12.

13. Because the apostles taught that the ceremonial law was abrogated by the sacrifice of Christ, the Lamb of God, what charge did the priests make against them?

“And set up false witnesses, which said, This man ceases not to speak blasphemous words against this holy place, and the law: for we have heard him say, that this Jesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the customs which Moses delivered us.” Acts 6:13,14. “This fellow persuaded men to worship God contrary to the law.” Acts 18:13.

14. What did Paul declare to be the only law to which the believer now owes a debt of obedience? “Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the commandments of God [“obedience to God’s commandments is everything.” Weymouth’s translation]. 1 Corinthians 7: 19.

Through the centuries before the death of our Lord, the sacrificial lambs testified to God’s promise in Christ the Lamb of God: “Though your sins be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.” Isaiah 1:18; John 1:29.

Which Law Was Nailed to the Cross?

1. How was Christ’s attitude to the law of God prophetically revealed? “He will magnify the law, and make it honorable.” Isaiah 42:21. (See also Psalm 40:7, 8.)

2. By what declaration did Jesus fulfil this and other prophecies concerning His relation to the law?

“Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil.” Matthew 5: 17. (Read verses 18-48.)

“It is worthy of observation that the Hebrew word *gamar* among the Rabbins, signifies not only to fulfil, but also to teach. And, consequently, we may infer that our Lord intimated that the law and the prophets were still to be taught or inculcated by Him and His disciples; and this He and they have done in the most pointed manner.” - Dr. Adam Clarke.

3. How are those who depreciate the law of God regarded by Jesus?

“Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven.” Matthew 5:19.

4. On the other hand who are approved in God’s sight?

“But whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.” Matthew 5:19.

5. What standard of righteousness did Jesus actually demand of His disciples?

“For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, you shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.” Matthew 5:20.

6. Did Jesus also urge obedience to the ceremonial law?

“And Jesus said unto him, See thou tell no man; but go thy way, show thyself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.” Matthew 8:4.

7. How did He regard those who set up the commandments of men in place of the laws of God?

“But He answered and said unto them, Why do you also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition?” Matthew 15:3. (See also verses 4-6.)

8. While Jesus taught the obligation of both moral and ceremonial laws during His ministry, what was it prophetically declared He would do on the cross?

“He shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease.” Daniel 9:27.

9. What comment does Paul make on the termination of the sacrificial system?

“Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to His cross.” Colossians 2: 14.

10. What evidence have we that some Christian teachers failed to recognize that Christ brought the ceremonial laws to an end?

“And certain men which came down from Judea taught the brethren, and said, Except you be circumcised after the manner of Moses, you cannot be saved.” Acts 15: 1.

11. How did the apostles correct this false teaching?

“Forasmuch as we have heard, that certain which went out from us have troubled you with words, subverting your souls, saying, You must be circumcised, and keep the law: to whom we gave no such commandment.” Acts 15:24.

12. When Jesus ended the ceremonial system by His death on the cross, did He also abrogate the moral law?

“Do we then make void the [moral] law through faith? God forbid: yes, we establish the law.” Romans 3:31.

“Neither of them supersedes the other, but they agree perfectly well together. There is, therefore, the closest connection that can be conceived between the law and the gospel. On the one hand the law continually makes way for, and points us to, the gospel; on the other, the gospel continually leads us to a more exact fulfilling of the law.” – “Sermons of John Wesley,” Volume I, page 223.

13. What does the moral law still demand of the believer?

“But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, you have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.” Romans 6:22.

“The ritual or ceremonial law, delivered by Moses to the children of Israel, containing all the injunctions and ordinances which related to the old sacrifices and service of the temple, our Lord indeed did come to destroy, to dissolve, and utterly abolish. But the moral law contained in the Ten Commandments, and enforced by the prophet, He did not take away. It was not the design of His

coming to revoke any part of this. This is a law which never can, be broken, which stands -fast as the faithful witness in heaven. The moral law stands on an entirely different foundation from the ceremonial or ritual law. Every part of this law must remain in force upon all mankind and in all ages. As not depending either on time, or place, or any other circumstance liable to change: but on the nature of God, and the nature of man, and their unchangeable relation to each other.” - John Wesley in “Sermons on Several Occasions,” Sermon 25, pages 221, 222.

14. How perfect a conformity to the moral law is required of the Christian?

“For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.” James 2:10.

“Men are apt to think that if there be Ten Commandments, of which they obey nine, such obedience will be put to their credit, even though they break the tenth. That, however, is to misunderstand God’s purpose of perfection for man, and the consequent perfection of His law. The Ten Words of Sinai were not ten separate commandments, having no reference to each other. They were ten sides of the one law of God. The teaching of Jesus reveals the fact that these commandments are so interrelated that if he offends in one point he breaks the unity of the law.” - G. Campbell Morgan in “The Ten Commandments,” page 11.

15. How is this righteousness made possible in the life of the forgiven sinner?

“God sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: that the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.” Romans 8:3,4.

16. How will the believers love to God be made manifest?

“For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments: and His commandments are not grievous.” 1 John 5:3.

“The moral law is still regulative for the life of the man to whom divine grace has brought forgiveness. He has now a new spirit inborn which makes obedience sweet, and a new moral strength to which the commandments of God are no longer grievous; and to that extent there is a vast difference between the standpoint of grace and the standpoint of mere law. But nothing that happens in heaven or in earth can ever bring about a state of things in which the law of God, the moral law, shall have ceased to be the rule of a man’s life. So we, being none the less men now that we have become Christians have still to do with the Ten Commandments, the Ten Words of Sinai. They are the conduct of morals. They are the alphabet of duty. They are the Abiding Law.” - J. Aitken, MA, in “The Abiding Law,” page 12.

God’s new covenant is not based on the fallible promises of men.

God’s Two Covenants

1. WHAT term is used of God’s relations with His children? “This is My covenant unto them.” Romans 11:27.

2. Upon what fundamental basis is God’s covenant relationship with man established?

“Know therefore that the Lord thy God, He is God, the faithful God, which keeps covenant and mercy with them that love Him and keep His commandments.” Deuteronomy 7: 9.

3. What special test, therefore, did God give our parents in Eden?

1 “Of every tree of the garden thou may freely eat: but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shall not eat of it: for in the day- that thou eats thereof thou shall surely die.” Genesis 2:16,17.

4. When sin separated man from God what new covenant basis did He promise?

“I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her Seed; It shall bruise thy head, and thou shall bruise His heel.” Genesis 3:15.

In this sentence pronounced on the serpent, God promised through Christ to restore that which man had lost through disobedience.

5. Because mankind, as a whole, refused God’s covenant of grace, what was He compelled to do?

“And the Lord said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth; both man, and beast, and the creeping thing, and the fowls of the air; for it repented Me that I have made them.” Genesis 6:7.

6. Who found grace in His sight and what promise was made to him?

“But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord.” Genesis 6:8. “And, behold, I establish My covenant with you, and with your seed after you.” Genesis 9: 9.

7. To whom, in a later day, did God confirm His covenant of grace?

“The Lord appeared to Abraham, and said unto him, I will establish My covenant between Me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations for an everlasting covenant.” Genesis 17:1-7.

8. What was the basis of this covenant between God and Abraham and to whom would it ultimately be extended?

“That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we Might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.” Galatians 5:14. (See also Genesis 22:16-18.)

9. By what name, therefore, was the covenant of grace described?

“And the Scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, In thee shall all nations be blessed.” Galatians 3:8.

10. At the beginning of Israel’s national existence how did God announce the basis of His covenant with them?

“And He declared unto you His covenant, which He commanded you to perform, even Ten Commandments; and He wrote them upon two tables of stone.” Deuteronomy 4:13.

11. Upon what was the continuance of this covenant relationship dependent?

“Now therefore, if you will obey My voice indeed, and keep My covenant, then you shall be’ a peculiar treasure unto Me above all people: for all the earth is Mine.” Exodus 19:5.

12. Did God intend, however, that Israel’s obedience should be in their own strength?

“And this I say, that the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ [that is, the covenant with Abraham], the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect.” Galatians 3:17.

In other words, Israel from the beginning might have been under the covenant of grace, keeping the commandments of God through the power of faith.

13. What serious mistake, however, did the great majority of Israel make?

“For they being ignorant of God’s righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God.” Romans 10:3.

“The people did not realize the sinfulness of their own hearts, and that without Christ it was impossible for them to keep God’s law; and they readily entered into covenant with God. Feeling that they were able to establish their own righteousness, they declared, ‘All that the Lord has said ‘we will do, and be obedient.’ Exodus 24: 7.” - R G. White in “Patriarchs and Prophets,” page 358.

14. How was this covenant with Israel ratified?

“When Moses had spoken every precept to all the people according to the law, he took the blood of calves and of goats, with water, and scarlet wool, and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book, and all the people, saying, This is the blood of the testament which God has enjoined unto you.” Hebrews 9: 19, 20.

15. How quickly was the frailty of Israel’s promises revealed?

Within forty days. “UP, make us gods, which shall go before us; for as for this Moses, the man that brought us up out of the land of Egypt, we know not what is become of him.” Exodus 32:1. (See also Deuteronomy 9:11,12.)

16. What statement of Jeremiah’s centuries later in the history of Israel, reveals that the nation as a whole never did learn the lesson of faith?

“They have forsaken the covenant of the Lord their God, and worshipped other gods, and served them.” Jeremiah 22: 9.

17. How reluctant, however, was God to abandon Israel?

“And yet for all that, when they be in the land of their enemies, I will not cast them away, neither will I abhor them, to destroy them utterly, and to break My covenant with them: for I am the Lord their God.” Leviticus 26: 44.

18. Because it was useless to give Israel further opportunity on the old self-imposed basis, what became necessary?

“For if that first covenant had been faultless then should no place have been sought for the second. For finding fault with them, He said, Behold, the days come, said the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah.” Hebrews 8: 7, 8. (Read also verse 6.)

The fault was in the frailty of Israel’s promises. God therefore established the new covenant upon “better” promises, namely, God’s promises in Christ.

19. What, therefore, did God offer to do for the responsive ones?

“Behold, the days come, said the Lord, that I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah: I will put My law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God.” Jeremiah 31: 31-33.

20. Was this “second” covenant “new” in the sense of being different from any previous covenant?

No, it was the covenant of grace in Christ made with our first parents in Eden and renewed to Noah and to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, but set aside by Israel through self-confidence at Sinai.

21. In view of this new covenant how is the Sinai covenant henceforth designated?

“In that He said, A new covenant, He has made the first old. Now that which decayed and waxed old is ready to vanish away.” Hebrews 8:13.

22. To whom was the new covenant extended in harmony with the promise to Abraham?

“That at that time you [the Gentiles] were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of Promise, now in Christ Jesus you who sometimes were far are made nigh by the blood of Christ.” Ephesians 2:12.

23. To whom, therefore, is the new covenant relationship now common?

“For He is our peace, who has made both [Jew and Gentile] one, and has broken down the middle wall of partition between us; now therefore you are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints, and of the household of God.” Ephesians 2:14-19.

24. Why is the new covenant so much better than the old?

“He [Jesus] is the Mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises.” Hebrews 8:6.

It is based not on the fallible promises of man but upon the sure promises of God which are “yes and amen in Christ Jesus.”

25. By what better sacrifice was the new covenant ratified?

“And [He took] the cup in like manner after supper, saying, This cup is the new covenant in MY blood, even that which is poured out for you.” Luke 22:20, RV.

26. What better provision did God offer whereby the new covenant relationship might be maintained? “Forasmuch as you are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart.” 2 Corinthians 3:3.

27. What does the new covenant in Christ make possible to all who receive it?

a. Perfect conformity with the will of God. “Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant, make you perfect in every good work to do His will, working in you that which is well pleasing in His sight, through Jesus Christ.” Hebrews 13:20, 21.

b. The reception of an eternal inheritance. “For this cause He [Christ] is the Mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament [covenant], they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.” Hebrews 9:15.

6. Man’s Duty to God

Why God Can Have No Rival

1. WITH what affirmation does God preface the Ten Commandments? “And God spoke all these words, saying, I am the Lord thy God.” Exodus 20:1, 2.

2. Over how many does He claim sovereignty? “Behold, I am the Lord, the God of all flesh.” Jeremiah 32:27.

3. What can He not, therefore, tolerate?

“Thou shalt have no other gods before Me.” Exodus 20:3.

“The first commandment, ‘Thou shalt have no other gods before Me,’ is the keynote of the Christian religion. God must have no rivals in the life of the people. This is no academic question today.”-Dr. John A. Mackay, president of Princeton Theological Seminary, in the New York Times.

4. On what grounds did God claim Israel’s exclusive allegiance?

“I am the Lord thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.” Exodus 20: 2.

5. On what wider basis does God claim man’s worship in a later (the fourth) commandment?

“For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is.” Exodus 20:11. (Read verses 8-11.)

6. Beside His creative and sustaining activity in the earth, are there any other grounds on which God has a right to demand worship?

“Exalt you the Lord our God, and worship at His footstool; for He is holy.” Psalm 99:5. “I will worship toward Thy holy temple, and praise Thy name for Thy loving-kindness and for Thy truth.” Psalm 138:2.

7. How wholehearted, then, should our worship be?

“And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all your heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might.” Deuteronomy 6:5. (See also Matthew 22:37.)

8. In spite of the fullness of God’s revelation of Himself what perversions of worship have arisen?

“Because that, when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful; but changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and four footed beasts, and creeping things.” Romans 1:21-23. “Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever.” Verse 25.

9. To what else beside created things upon the earth have men rendered worship?

“And lest thou lift up your eyes unto heaven, and when thou sees the sun, and the moon, and the stars, even all the host of heaven, should be driven to worship them, and serve them, which the Lord thy God has divided unto all nations under the whole heaven.” Deuteronomy 4:19. (See verses 16-19.)

10. In what other way has worship also become perverted?

“Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he has not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind.” Colossians 2:18.

With angel worship we may associate the worship of the Virgin Mary so ‘prominent in the Roman Catholic Church.

“The church, assisted-and instructed by the Holy Spirit, gives to Mary titles which resemble those given to her divine Son. Jesus is our King; Mary is our Queen. Jesus is our Advocate and Mediator; Mary is also our Advocate and Mediatrix. Jesus is our hope, our refuge, our consolation; we say the same of Mary. Jesus is the Way which leads to heaven; Mary is the gate of heaven.” “Devotion of the Sacred Heart,” page 43.

11. Though men may scorn the worship of the heavenly bodies, angels, saints, and the lower orders of creation, what may they make into gods?

a. Riches. “You cannot serve God and mammon.” Matthew 6: 24.

“For mammon, we can write the name of any other god, or idol, or ideal, that we are in danger of worshipping, the god of power, or of wealth, or of security, or of pleasure, or of the praise of men.”-Canon L. W. Grensted.

b. Desire for temporal things. “Covetousness, which is idolatry.” Colossians 3:5.

“Every scheme of thought, every object of affection, which is not of Him, is a rival of His empire, a false god, a delusive appearance only, without solidity or truth.”-Archdeacon Sinclair in Bishop Elliott’s “Commentary.”

c. Appetite. “Whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.” Philippians 3:19.

d. Worldly pleasures. “Lovers of Pleasures more than lovers of God.” 2 Timothy 3:4.

e. Lust of power. “Neither shall he regard the God of his fathers, but in his estate-shall he honor the god of forces.” Daniel 11:37,38.

“In the utter misery and disintegration which has fallen upon post-war Central Europe, the superimposed Christian foundations seem to have settled into the abyss, and the ancient cults have come back from the depths, the cults of Blood and Race and Virility, the worship of Folk-hero, even the horrible glorification of cruelty.” - Canon F. R. Barry in “What Has Christianity to Say?” page 69.

f. False philosophies. “Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.” Colossians 2: 8.

The modern revolutionary political theories are essentially religions which have displaced the worship of the true God, As Dr. Keller, says: “As well as having their myths, these revolutions have their symbols, their prophets, their creeds, their rites, their martyrs, their mystical fascinations, their soteriology, their eschatology, the coming of judgment and a better world. - “Church and State on the European Continent,” page 40.

12. Of what is all false worship a denial?

“This also were an iniquity to be punished for I should have denied the God that is above.” Job 31:28.

13. Having clearly revealed Himself to men, is there any admissible excuse for false worship? “They are without excuse.” Romans 1:20.

14. What estimate does Paul place upon the intelligence of the worshippers of created things?

“Because that, when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools.” Romans 1:21, 22.

15. What special manifestations of idolatry would be seen in the last days?

“Now the Spirit speaks expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils.” 1 Timothy 4: 1.

16. In what will the idolatrous worship of the last days be finally concentrated?

“And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast?” Revelation 13: 4.

17. To counter this terrible apostasy what final appeal is to go forth to mankind?

“And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to Him; for the hour of His judgment is come: and worship Him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.” Revelation 14: 6, 7.

Today other idols are worshipped besides those in lands called heathen.

Man’s Modern Idols

1. WHAT does the Bible declare concerning the nature of God? “God is a Spirit.” John 4: 24.

2. How only may He be worshipped?

“They that Worship Him must worship Him in spirit and in truth.” John 4: 24.

3. What is expressly forbidden in the second commandment?

“Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth: thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them.” Exodus 20: 4, 5.

4. How do we know that the second commandment was not intended as a prohibition of sacred art?

“And thou shalt make two cherubims of gold, of beaten work shall thou make them, in the two ends of the mercy seat.” Exodus 25: 18.

5. Wherein lay the breach of the commandment?

“Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them.” Exodus 20:5.

6. Have the true children of God found His invisibility a hindrance to worship? “By faith Moses, endured, as seeing Him who is invisible.” Hebrews 11: 23-27.

7. How utterly inadequate is any visible representation of God?

“As we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man’s device.” Acts 17: 29.

8. In making an image on what are the idol maker’s thoughts really centered?

“He fits it with planes, and he makes it out with the compass, and makes it after the figure of a man, according to the beauty of a man.” Isaiah 44:13.

9. How much more impotent are idols than their makers?

“Their idols are silver and gold, the work of men’s hands. They have mouths, but they speak not: eyes have they, but they see not: they have ears, but they bear not: noses have they, but they smell not: they have hands, but they handle not: feet have they, but they walk not: neither speak they through their throat.” Psalm 115: 4-7.

10. How valueless, then, are images?

“We know that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is none other God but one.” 1 Corinthians 8:4.

11. How foolish are they that make and worship them?

“They have no knowledge that set up the wood of their graven image, and pray unto a god that cannot save.” Isaiah 45: 20.

12. In spite of the prohibition of idolatry in both the Old. and New Testaments, what idolatrous practices arose and still continue in some professedly Christian churches?

a. Kissing of images, clothing, etc. “And now they sin more and more, and have made them molten images of their silver, and idols according to their own understanding, all of it the work of the craftsmen: they say of them, all the men that sacrifice kiss the calves.” Hosea 13: 2.

b. Offering incense to images. “And there stood before them [idols] seventy men of the ancients of the house of Israel, and in the midst of them stood Jaazaniah the son of Shaphan, with every man his censer in his hand; and a thick cloud of incense went up.” Ezekiel 8: 11.

c. Genuflections and prostrating before images. “He makes a god, and worships it; he makes it a graven image, and falls down thereto.” Isaiah 44: 15.

d. Carrying images in procession. “They bear him upon the shoulder, they carry him, and set him in his place, and he stands; from, his place shall he not remove: yes, one shall cry unto him, yet can he not answer, nor save him out of his trouble.” Isaiah 46: 7.

“By the church of the first four centuries image worship was condemned as an evil thing-derived from an evil origin. But with the conversion of the Roman Empire under Constantine a change set in. The church was forthwith deluged by crowds of half converted heathen, and not unnaturally these new converts brought with them many of their heathen practices into their newly adopted faith. Among these was image worship. From the sixth century onward the degradation of religion grew apace, till at last image worship was wholly in the ascendant, and Christians began to justify this worship by the very same arguments that the heathen themselves had used centuries earlier in its defense.” - R. H. Charles, DD, in “The Ten Commandments,” page 59.

13. How has the Roman Catholic Church admitted its guilt under the second commandment?

By omitting the second commandment from their catechisms and dividing the tenth into two parts to cover up the omission.

“There are twenty-nine catechisms in use in Rome and Italy, France, Belgium, Austria, Bavaria, Silesia, Poland, Ireland, England, Spain, and Portugal, in twenty-seven of which the second commandment is totally omitted: in two mutilated. “-Dr. McCaul quoted in “The Ten Commandments,” by R. H. Charles, DD.

14. Though men may not bow down to images or sacred pictures how may they break the second commandment?

“Son of man, these men have set up their idols in their heart.” Ezekiel 14: 3.

The original word is “eidolon,” which means “idea” or “ideal,” and represents a conception of the human mind. It may, therefore, be a false philosophy to which a man gives his acquiescence, and in which he trusts rather than in God. Science, evolution, education, reason, progress, civilization, humanism, all forms of state-worship and secular’ idealisms are some of the “ideas” to which modern man is giving his allegiance today rather than to God.

“Today, we do not bow before gold, silver, wooden, or graven images, but some of us have substituted other images for them, and bend before our new idols. We must banish from the place of Jesus in our hearts anything that occupies that space reserved by God, no matter if it is family, husband, wife, child, lodge, or fraternity.” Dr. Walter T. Taylor.

15. What influence has idolatry in any form upon those who participate in it?

“And they served their idols: which were a snare unto them.” Psalm 106: 36.

“Enlisting the senses as allies of the Spirit is risky work. The history of all symbolic and ceremonial worship shows that the experiment is more likely to end in sensualizing religion than in spiritualizing sense. “-Alexander Maclaren.

16. What emotion, therefore, does idolatry arouse in the heart of God?

“Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God.” Exodus 20:5.

Divine jealousy bears no comparison with the sinful, human emotion. It is a righteous anger at the diversion from Himself of the worship due to Him alone.

17. How will the incorrigible idol-worshippers be judged?

“They shall be turned back, they shall be greatly ashamed, that trust in graven images, that say to the, molten images, You are our gods.” Isaiah 42: 17.

18. How will God separate those who truly worship Him from those who worship Him not?

“Blessed are they that do His commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city. For without are idolaters.” Revelation 22: 14, 15.

The Holiest Name

1. WHAT is said in the Scriptures concerning the name of God?

“That thou may fear this glorious and fearful name, THE LORD THY GOD.” Deuteronomy 28:58. “Holy and reverend is His name.” Psalm 111: 9.

2. How should we relate ourselves to it?

a. Hallow it. “Hallowed be Thy name.” Matthew 6: 9.

b. Love it. “Let them also that love Thy name be joyful in Thee.” Psalm 5:11.

c. Give glory to it. “All nations whom Thou has made shall come and worship before Thee, O Lord; and shall glorify Thy name.” Psalm 86: 9.

d. Trust in it. “Who is among you that feared the Lord, that obeyed the voice of His servant, that walked in darkness, and has no light? Let him trust in the name of the Lord, and stay upon his God.” Isaiah 50:10.

3. Of what should we never be guilty?

“Thou shall not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain: for the Lord will not hold him guiltless that takes His name in vain.” Deuteronomy 5:11.

4. How is the name of God profaned by the wicked?

a. By denying His existence and power. “Shall the clay say to Him that fashioned it, What makes Thou? or Thy work, He hath no hands?” Isaiah 45: 9.

b. By denying His omniscience. “And they say, How does God know? And is there knowledge in the Most High?” Psalm 73:11.

c. By denying His revelation. “Behold, they say unto me, Where is the word of the Lord? Let it come now.” Jeremiah 17:15.

d. By denying His activity. “And it shall come to pass at that time, that I will search Jerusalem with candles, and punish the men that are settled on their lees: that say in their heart, The Lord will not do good, neither will He do evil.” Zephaniah 1: 12.

5. In what ways may God’s professed people profane His name?

a. By limiting His providence. “Yea, they spoke against God; they said, Can God furnish a table in the wilderness, Can He give bread also? Can He provide flesh for His people?” Psalm 78: 19, 20.

b. By criticizing His ways. “Yet you say, The way of the Lord is not equal. Hear now, O house of Israel; is not My way equal? are not your ways unequal?” Ezekiel 18:25.

c. By doubting His goodness. “You have said, It is vain to serve God: and what profit is it that we have kept His ordinance, and that we have walked mournfully before the Lord of hosts?” Malachi 3: 14.

“Every light and irreverent mention of His name tends to diminish awe, veneration, confidence, and respect, and to weaken His influence; and the power of His government.” - Dr. C. G. Finney in “Theological Lectures,” page 204.

6. What is the most serious way in which we may profane God’s name?

“You hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, This- people draws nigh unto Me with their mouth, and honors Me with their lips; but their heart is far from Me.” Matthew 15:7,8. (See also Ezekiel 22: 26, 28.)

7. Who among His professed adherents does Jesus especially condemn?

“Why call you Me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?” Luke 6: 46.

8. What should characterize our conversation?

“Above all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath: but let your yes be yes; and your nay, nay; lest you fall into condemnation.” James 5: 12.

“Our Lord consented to be put upon His oath. Oaths before a civil tribunal cannot be forbidden to His disciples.” - Bishop Browne in “On the Articles,” page 837.

9. How do many profane God’s name in conversation?

“Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks.” Ephesians 5: 4.

10. What serious charge has James to make against some believers?

“Out of the same mouth proceeds blessing and cursing. My brethren, these things ought not so to be.” James 3: 10.

11. Of what is the improper use, of the tongue an evidence?

“If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridles not his tongue, but deceives his own heart, this man’s religion is vain.” James 1:26.

12. What does Paul therefore urge all believers to do?

“Put off all these; blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.” Colossians 3: 8.

13. What irreverent handling of the Word of God does Paul condemn?

“But have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the Word of God deceitfully; but by manifestation of the truth commending ourselves to every man’s conscience in the sight of God.” 2 Corinthians 4: 21.

14. What would be conspicuous among the sins of antichrist?

“And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy. And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies.” Revelation 13:1-5.

15. What breaches of the third commandment does prophecy indicate will be prominent in the last days?

a. Scoffing. “Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts.” 2 Peter 3: 3.

b. Blasphemy and hypocrisy. “This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be blasphemers, having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof.” 2 Timothy 3:1-5.

16. How fully does God know all the blasphemies uttered against Him?

“And thou shall know that I am the Lord, and that I have heard all thy blasphemies. Thus with your mouth you have boasted against Me, and have multiplied your words against Me: I have heard them.” Ezekiel 35:12,13.

17. What condemnation does He pronounce upon those who utter them? “Whosoever curses his God shall bear his sin.” Leviticus 24: 15.

18. At the same time, what other special record is God keeping?

“Then they that feared the Lord spoke often one to another: and the Lord hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before Him for them that feared the Lord, and that thought upon His name.” Malachi 3:16.

19. How will He reward those who fear His name?

“But unto you that fear My name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in His wings.” Malachi 4:2.

20. For what, therefore, did the psalmist pray? “Unite my heart to fear Thy name.” Psalm 86:11.

God's Memorial

1. WHAT did God desire men ever to keep in mind?

“The works of the Lord are great. He has made His wonderful works to be remembered.” Psalm 111: 2-4.

2. What special memorial did He provide to keep in remembrance His creative work?

“And on the seventh day God ended His work which He had made; and He rested on the seventh day from all His work which He had made. And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it.” Genesis 2:2, 3.

“God’s sanctifying the day is equivalent to His commanding men to sanctify it. As at the close of creation the seventh day was then set apart by the Most High for such a purpose, without limitation to age or country, the observance of it is obligatory upon the whole human race. The sanctification of the seventh day in the present case can only be understood of its being set apart to the special worship and service of God.”-Prof. G. Bush in “Notes on Genesis,” Volume 1, pages 47, 49.

3. How does God designate this day?

“My holy day; the holy of the Lord.” Isaiah 58: 13.

4. Who was associated with the Father in the work of creation and in the rest of the first Sabbath?

“All things were made by Him [Christ]: and without Him was not anything made that was made.” John 1: 3. (See also Ephesians 3: 9; Colossians 1:16; Hebrews 1:2.)

5. What could Jesus, therefore, in common with the Father, assert concerning the Sabbath rest? “Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the Sabbath.” Mark 2: 28.

6. Where is the law of the Sabbath most comprehensively stated?

In the fourth commandment. “Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days shall thou labor, and do all thy work: but the seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God. In it thou shall not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates. For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day, and hallowed it.” Exodus 20:8-11.

7. Is the Sabbath merely one-seventh part of the week or must it be a definite day and no other? “The seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God.” Exodus 20:10.

8. How precisely did God define the bounds of the Sabbath? “From even unto even, shall you celebrate your Sabbaths.” Leviticus 23:32.

9. When does evening begin?

“And at even, when the sun did set.” Mark 1:32.

10. What example of God are His creatures to follow on the Sabbath?

“Six days thou shall do thy work, and on the seventh day thou shall rest.” Exodus 23:12.

“To the soil the Sabbath is quite as important as to human beings. It needs a periodic rest. ‘Remember the Sabbath to keep it holy’ was spoken of the soil as much as of humanity.” G. C. Watson in “The Soil and Social Reclamation.”

11. Was the Sabbath to be merely a period of physical rest?

“Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy.” Exodus 20: 8.

“The Sabbath is a pearl among all the days, and it is set for the saving of life. It is a day when the spent spirit may catch its breath, and when man may look into the face of God and be refreshed.”-William H. Mason in “God’s Answer.”

12. Of what would the faithful observance of the Sabbath be a sign?

“And hallow My Sabbaths; and they shall be a sign between Me and you, that you may know that I am the Lord your God.” Ezekiel 20: 20. “Moreover also I gave them My Sabbaths, to be a sign between Me and them, that they might know that I am the Lord that sanctify them.” Verse 1,2.

“He that observes the Sabbath aright holds the history of that which it celebrates to be authentic. He therefore believes in the creation of the first man; in the creation of a fair abode for man in the space of six days. In the primeval and absolute creation of the heavens and the earth, and as a necessary antecedent to all this, in the Creator, who at the close of His latest creative effort rested on the seventh day. The Sabbath thus becomes a sign by which the believers in a historical revelation are distinguished from those who have allowed these great facts to fade from their remembrance.”-James G. Murphy in The Moody Bible Institute Monthly.

13. To what future state would the Sabbath also point? “There remains therefore a rest to the people of God.” Hebrews 4:9.

14. For how many was the Sabbath intended?

“And He said unto them, The Sabbath was made for man [mankind], and not man for the Sabbath.” Mark 2:27.

15. How does the fourth commandment emphasize its universality?

“In it thou shalt not do any work, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates.” Exodus 20:10. “Six days thou shalt do thy work, and on the seventh day thou shalt rest: that your ox and your ass may rest, and the son of thy handmaid, and the stranger, may be refreshed.” Exodus 23:12.

16. To how many does the prophet Isaiah declare the blessings and rewards of Sabbath-keeping are extended?

“Also the sons of the stranger [or Gentile], that join themselves to the Lord, to serve Him, and to love the name of the Lord, to be His servants, everyone that keeps the Sabbath from polluting it, and takes hold of My covenant. Even them will I bring to My holy mountain, and make them Joyful in My house of prayer.” Isaiah 56:6,7.

“That the Sabbath was not merely a Jewish institution is clear from the very form of the commandment, and from our Lord’s declaration that ‘the Sabbath was made for man.’ Mark 2:27. The express inclusion of ‘the stranger’ in its obligations and privileges, in Exodus 20:10; 23:12; Deuteronomy 5:14; Isaiah 56:2-7, and the remarkable prediction in Isaiah 66:23, are additional proofs of its universal scope.” - James G. Murphy in the Moody Bible Institute Monthly.

17. For how long did God intend that the Sabbath should be observed?

“Wherefore the children of Israel shall keep the Sabbath, to observe the Sabbath throughout their generations, for a perpetual covenant.” Exodus 31:16. “Thy name, O Lord, endures for ever; and Thy memorial, O Lord, throughout all generations.” Psalm 135:13.

“Because this commandment has not been particularly mentioned in the New Testament, as a moral precept, binding on all; therefore some have presumptuously inferred that there is no Sabbath under the Christian dispensation. The truth is, the Sabbath is considered as a type-all types are of full force, till the thing signified by them, takes place. But the thing signified by the Sabbath, is that rest in glory which remains for the people of God; therefore, the moral obligation of the Sabbath must continue till time be swallowed up in eternity.” - Dr. Adam Clarke.

18. What attribute of God is given special prominence in His last message of mercy to the world?

“And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people, saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to Him. For the hour of His judgment is come: and worship Him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.” Revelation 14: 6, 7.

19. Will Sabbath-keeping continue beyond the end of this present world?

“And it shall come to pass [in the new earth], that from one new moon to another, and from one Sabbath to another, shall all flesh come to worship before Me, said the Lord.” Isaiah 66: 23.

The Sabbath in this world has been a perpetual reminder of creation and recreation or redemption; and in the world to come it will continue to be observed in eternal remembrance of what man owes to God.

20. What acclamation will still be upon the lips of the redeemed in the kingdom?

“Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honor and power: for Thou has created all things, and for Thy pleasure they are and were created.” Revelation 4: 11.

21. In what future glories will the faithful Sabbath keepers participate?

“If thou call the Sabbath a delight, the holy of the Lord, honorable; and shall honor Him, not doing your own ways, nor finding your own pleasure, nor speaking your own words. Then shall thou delight thyself in the Lord; and I will cause thee to ride upon the high places of the earth, and feed thee with the heritage of Jacob thy father: for the mouth of the Lord has spoken it.” Isaiah 58:13,14.

22. How then should we relate ourselves to God’s Sabbath memorial?

“Yea, in the way of Thy judgments, O Lord, have we waited for Thee; to Thy name and to Thy memorial is the desire of our soul.” Isaiah 26: 8, RV.

How Old Is The Week

1. WHAT is the earliest Biblical intimation of a regular division of time among mankind?

“And at the end of days it came to pass that Cain brought of the fruit of the ground an offering unto the Lord.” Genesis 4: 3 (margin).

2. How do we know that Noah was acquainted with the seven-day week?

“And he stayed yet other seven days; and again he sent forth the dove out of the ark. And he stayed yet other seven days; and sent forth the dove.” Genesis 8: 10-12.

3. What evidences are there of the “week” in patriarchal days?

a. The “week” is referred to by inference. “Fulfil her week, and we will give thee this also for the service which thou shall serve with me yet seven other years.” Genesis 29: 27, 28.

While a “week of years” is here referred to it is reasonable to infer that the term was derived from the “week” of seven days.

b. The seven-day period is expressly recognized. "And he [Joseph] made a mourning for his father seven days." Genesis 50:10. (See also Job 2:13.)

Lack of frequent mention is no argument against Sabbath observance in patriarchal times as has been suggested by some. The Sabbath is not mentioned from Joshua to David, but we know that during this time it was certainly observed. Circumcision likewise is not referred to between Joshua and Jeremiah though it was invariably practiced.

4. Are there any evidences of Sabbath observance among ancient peoples outside the Bible?

Some years ago the late Dr. William Mead Jones, of London, published a "Chart of the Week," giving the designation of the different days of the week in one hundred and sixty different languages. This chart shows very vividly that the seven day period, or week, was known from the most ancient times, and that in no fewer than one hundred and eight of these languages the seventh day is designated as the Sabbath, or holy day. The following names are from this chart:-

English The seventh day The Sabbath
Hebrew Shabliath Sabbath
Greek Sabbaton Sabbath
Latin Sabbatum Sabbath
Arabic Assabt The Sabbath
Persian Shambin Sabbath
Armenian Shapat Sabbath
Turkish Yomessabt Day the Sabbath
Abyssinian Sanbat Sabbath
Russian Subbota Sabbath
Polish Sobota Sabbath
Hindustani Shamba Sabbath
Malay Ari-Sabtu Day Sabbath
Afghan Shamba Sabbath
German Samstag Sabbath
Prussian Sabatico Sabbath
French Samedi Sabbath day
Italian Sabato Sabbath
Spanish Sabado Sabbath
Portuguese Sabbado Sabbath

"The week is a period of seven days having no reference whatever to the celestial motions-a circumstance to which it owes its unalterable uniformity. Although it did not enter into the calendar of the Greeks, and was not introduced at Rome till after the reign of Theodosius, it has been employed from time immemorial in all eastern countries. And as it forms neither an aliquot part of the year nor of the lunar month, those who reject the Mosaic recital will be at a loss, as Delambre remarks, to assign to it an origin having much semblance of probability." - Encyclopedia Britannica (Eleventh ed.), article "Calendar," Volume IV, page 988.

5. How was the weekly cycle associated with one of the plagues?

"And seven days were fulfilled, after that the Lord had smitten the river." Exodus 7: 25.

6. When Israel reached the wilderness what did Moses bring to their remembrance? "The Lord has given you the Sabbath." Exodus 16: 29.

7. By what words did Moses indicate that the Sabbath was well-known to Israel?

"And he said unto them, This is that which the Lord has said, Tomorrow is the rest of the holy Sabbath unto the Lord. Bake that which you will bake today, and seethe that you will seethe; and that which remains over lay up for you to be kept until the morning." Exodus 16: 23.

8. How did God rebuke the Sabbath breakers who went out to gather manna on the seventh day?

"And the Lord said unto Moses, How long refuse you to keep My commandments and My laws?" Exodus 16:28.

9. What instructions did Moses repeat to the Israelites respecting Sabbath observance?

"See, for that the Lord hath given you the Sabbath, therefore He gives you on the sixth day the bread of two days; abide you every man in his place, let no man go out of his place on the seventh day." Exodus 16: 29.

10. How did the people respond to Moses' admonition? "So the people rested on the seventh day." Exodus 16: 30.

11. To what did Sabbath-keeping on the part of Israel testify through all the years in the wilderness? "Then said the Lord unto Moses, Behold, I will rain bread from heaven for you; and the people shall go out and gather a certain rate every day, that I may Prove them, whether they will walk in My law, or no." Exodus 16: 4.

The Savior did not call in question the young ruler's practice of Sabbath keeping. His love of this world's goods tested his loyalty to God.

A Test of Loyalty

1. FOR what purpose did God gather the Israelites at Sinai?

“Thou came down also upon Mount Sinai, and spoke with them from heaven, and gave them right judgments, and true laws, good statutes and commandments.” Nehemiah 9:13.

2. Which commandment is singled out for special mention among the laws which God gave to Israel at Sinai?

“And made known unto them Thy holy Sabbath, and commanded them precepts, statutes, and laws, by the hand of Moses Thy servant.” Nehemiah 9:14.

3. What indication is there in this commandment that it was not new to the Israelites?

“Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy.” Exodus 20: 8.

“As this was the most ancient institution, God calls them to remember it; as if He had said, Do not forget that when I had finished My creation I instituted the Sabbath, and remember why I did so, and for what purpose.” - Dr. Adam Clarke.

4. To what does the fourth commandment trace the origin of the Sabbath rest?

“For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day, and hallowed it.” Exodus 20: 11.

5. Of what, therefore, was it to be a continual reminder?

“It is a sign between Me and the children of Israel forever: for in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, and on the seventh day He rested, and was refreshed.” Exodus 31: 17.

“As a memorial of that fact [the creation of the world] He set apart the Sabbath, kept it, sanctified and blessed it, for the benefit of all.” “Thus the keeping of the Sabbath makes God known, gives efficacy to His moral government.” - Reverend Justin Edwards, DD in “The Sabbath Manual,” pages 16, 19.

6. What additional reason for Sabbath-keeping did God give when the law was reiterated to Israel at the close of Moses’ life?

“And remember that thou was a servant in the land of Egypt, and that the Lord thy God brought thee out thence through a mighty hand and by a stretched out arm: therefore the Lord thy God commanded thee to keep the Sabbath day.” Deuteronomy 5:15.

7. What spiritual blessings would the Sabbath also keep in remembrance?

“Moreover also I gave them My Sabbaths, to be a sign between Me and them, that they might know that I am the Lord that sanctify them.” Ezekiel 20:12.

“It commemorates the work of God as Creator, Preserver, Benefactor, and Redeemer.” - Reverend Justin Edwards, DD in “The Sabbath Manual,” page 22.

8. In addition to enjoining the observance of the day of His appointing, what warning was given to the Israelites?

“You shall not eat any thing with the blood: neither shall you use enchantment, nor observe [heathen] times.” Leviticus 19:26.

9. Despite abundant divine instruction, how quickly did the Israelites fall into idolatrous worship?

Within forty days. “And when the people saw that Moses delayed to come down out of the mount, the people gathered themselves together unto Aaron, and said unto him, UP, make us gods, which shall go before us. For as for this Moses, the man that brought us up out of the land of Egypt, we know not what is become of him.” Exodus 32:1. (See also Deuteronomy 9: 11, 12.)

10. What result had idolatry upon their Sabbath keeping?

“The house of Israel rebelled against Me in the wilderness: they walked not-in My statutes, and they despised My judgments, which if a man do, he shall even live in them; and My Sabbaths they greatly Polluted.” Ezekiel 20: 13.

11. To what did the prophets point as one of the most evident signs of Israel’s lapse into apostasy? “Hear this, O you that swallow up the needy, even to make the poor of the land to fall, saying, When will the new moon be gone, that we may sell corn? And the Sabbath, that we may set forth wheat?” Amos 8: 4, 5.

12. What punishment did God declare He would bring also on Judah if they persisted in profaning the Sabbath?

“But if you will not hearken unto Me to hallow the Sabbath day, and not to bear a burden, even entering in at the gates of Jerusalem on the Sabbath day. Then will I kindle a fire in the gates thereof, and it shall devour the palaces of Jerusalem, and it shall not be quenched.” Jeremiah 17: 27. (Read also verses 20-27.)

“From these verses we find the ruin of the Jews attributed to the breach of the Sabbath; as this led to a neglect of sacrifice, the ordinances of religion, and all public worship, so it necessarily brought with it immorality. This breach of the Sabbath was that which let upon them all the waters of God’s wrath.”-Dr. Adam Clarke.

13. For what immediate reforms did Nehemiah call on the return from captivity?

“Then I contended with the nobles of Judah, and said unto them, What evil thing is this that you do, and profane the Sabbath day?” Nehemiah 13: 17.

14. What dire calamity did he declare the people would bring on Jerusalem again by profaning the Sabbath?

“Did not your fathers thus, and did not our God bring all this evil upon us, and upon this city? Yet you bring worse wrath upon, Israel by profaning the Sabbath.” Nehemiah 13: 18.

The Seventh Day And Ceremonial Sabbaths

1. Besides the seventh day Sabbath what other ceremonial Sabbaths were ordained in Israel?

a. The first day of the Passover feast Leviticus 23:5-7 (fourteenth day of the first month).

b. The seventh day of the Passover feast. Leviticus 23:8 (twenty-first day of the first month)

c. The day of Pentecost. Leviticus 23:15,16,21 (fiftieth day after the first Passover Sabbath).

d. The first day of the seventh month. Leviticus 23:23-25.

e. The day of atonement. Leviticus 23:26-28 (tenth day of the seventh month).

f. The first day of the feast of tabernacles. Leviticus 23:39 (fifteenth day of the seventh month).

g. The last day of the feast of tabernacles. Leviticus 23:39 (twenty-second day of the seventh month).

2. How do the Scriptures distinguish the ceremonial Sabbaths from the weekly Sabbath? "These are the feasts of the Lord, which you shall proclaim to be holy convocations, beside the Sabbaths of the Lord, and beside your gifts, and beside all your vows, and beside all your freewill offerings, which you give unto the Lord." Leviticus 23: 37, 38.

3. When were the ceremonial Sabbaths instituted?

"And the Lord spoke unto Moses [at Sinai], saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, Concerning the feasts of the Lord, which you shall proclaim to be holy convocations, even these are My feasts. These are the feasts of the Lord, even holy convocations, which you shall proclaim in, their seasons." Leviticus 23: 1-4.

4. How much older is the seventh-day Sabbath?

"Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. And on the seventh day God ended His work which He had made; and He rested on the seventh day from all His work which He had made, And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it. Because that in it He had rested from all His work which God created and made." Genesis 2: 1-3.

"The weekly Sabbath rests on a more permanent foundation [than the ceremonial Sabbaths], having been instituted in paradise, to commemorate the completion of creation in six days. Leviticus 23:38 expressly distinguishes the Sabbath of the Lord from the other Sabbaths."- Jamieson, Fausset, and Brown's "Commentary on the Whole Bible."

5. For what purpose were the ceremonial Sabbaths instituted?

"Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holy day, or of the new moon, or of the Sabbath days: which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ." Colossians 2: 16, 17.

6. Was the seventh-day Sabbath a "shadow of things to come"?

No, it was a memorial of a past event. "For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day, and hallowed it." Exodus 20: 11.

The weekly Sabbath is a very early institution. It was appointed and observed the very first week of time. It is no part of the law of ceremonies, which law was occasioned by the entrance of sin. For the Sabbath was established before sin had entered and would have been obligatory on Adam and his offspring if sin had not been known among them." - Seth Williston An "Discourses on the Sabbath," pages 11, 12.

7. For how long were the ceremonial laws with their Sabbaths intended to be observed?

"Which stood only in meats and drinks, and divers washings, and carnal ordinances, imposed on them until the time of reformation." Hebrews 9: 10.

8. When were they abrogated?

"Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to His cross." Colossians 2: 14.

9. How were Christians, therefore, to meet any criticism respecting the non-observance of these temporary ordinances after the death of Christ?

"Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holy-day, or of the new moon, or of the Sabbath days." Colossians 2: 16.

The ceremonial Sabbaths are here rightly classed with the "meats" and "drinks," of the ceremonial system. They were part of "the handwriting of ordinances" (Colossians 2: 14), "the law of commandments in ordinances" (Ephesians 2: 15) which pointed forward to the cross, and expired at the cross. The seventh-day Sabbath of the moral law was instituted at creation before sin cast its dark shadow over the world; this was not abrogated at the cross.

10. Will there ever be a time, however, when the seventh-day Sabbath is not to be observed?

"For as the new heavens and the new earth, which I will make, shall remain before Me, said the Lord, so shall your seed and your name remain. And it shall come to pass, that from one new moon to another, and from one Sabbath to another, shall all flesh come to worship before Me, said the Lord." Isaiah 66: 22, 23.

7. The True Sabbath

Did Jesus Keep the Sabbath?

1. IN what prophetic declaration was Jesus' relation to the law of God defined?

"Then said I, Lo, I come: in the volume of the book it is written of Me, I delight to do Thy will, O My God: yes, Thy law is within My heart." Psalm 40: 7, 8.

2. What would He do for all the commandments?

"The Lord is well pleased for His righteousness' sake; He will magnify the law, and make it honorable." Isaiah 42: 21.

3. When He entered upon His ministry, what example did Jesus set as to the proper use of the Sabbath? "And He came to Nazareth, where He had been brought up: and, as His custom was, He went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood up for to read." Luke 4: 16.

4. How had the Sabbath been marred by the Pharisees?

"All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not you after their works: for they say, and do not. For they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay them on men's shoulders; but they themselves will not move them with one of their fingers." Matthew 23: 3, 4.

5. What, therefore, was one of the first conflicts Jesus had with the Pharisees?

"And when He was departed thence, He went into their synagogue: and, behold, there was a man which had his hand withered. And they asked Him, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath days? that they might accuse Him." Matthew 12: 9, 10.

6. How did Jesus on this occasion define the lawful use of the Sabbath? "It is lawful to do well on the Sabbath days." Verse 12.

7. By what act did He immediately illustrate His assertion?

"Then said He to the man, Stretch forth your hand. And he stretched it forth; and it was restored whole, like as the other." Verse 13.

8. On another occasion what fault had a ruler of the synagogue, to find with Jesus and the people?

"And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the Sabbath day, and said unto the people, There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the Sabbath day." Luke 13: 14.

9. How did Jesus justify His action?

"The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, does not each one of you on the Sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the stall, and lead him away to watering? And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan has bound, lo, these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath day?" Verses 15, 16.

10. When some of the Pharisees sought to condemn Jesus because He would not observe the restrictions they had put upon the Sabbath, what did others reply?

"Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because He keeps not the Sabbath day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such miracles? And there was a division among them." John 9: 16.

11. Because they were invariably shamed when they sought to accuse Jesus, to whom did the Pharisees turn their attention?

"The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured, It is the Sabbath day: it is not lawful for thee to carry thy bed." John 5: 10.

12. What effective reply did the man offer?

"He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take up thy bed, and walk." Verse 11.

13. In what other way did the Pharisees seek to convict the disciples of Sabbath-breaking?

"At that time Jesus went on the Sabbath day through the corn; and His disciples were an hungered, and began to pluck the ears of corn, and to eat. But when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto Him, Behold, Thy disciples do that which is not lawful to do upon the Sabbath day." Matthew 12: 1, 2.

14. What was the only accusation, however, which the Pharisees could make against Jesus and His disciples?

"Then came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying, Why do Thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders?" Matthew 15: 1, 2.

15. How did Jesus effectively reply to this criticism?

"But He answered and said unto them, Why do you also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition?" Verse 3.

"Much has been made of the attitude of Christ in speech and deed toward the Sabbath. Some have imagined that by words He uttered and by deeds He did He relaxed the binding nature of the old command. This view, however, is to absolutely misunderstand and misinterpret the doing and the teaching of Jesus.... It is impossible too clearly to state the fact, because many who teach that in the Christian dispensation the original ideal of the Sabbath is not binding, quote our Lord's words in support of their contention. This is indeed to fail to distinguish between things that differ." - G. Campbell Morgan in "The Ten Commandments," page 76.

16. What did He declare would become of the doctrines of men set up in opposition to the truth of God? "But He answered and said, Every plant, which My heavenly Father has not planted, shall be rooted up." Matthew 15: 13.

Before the days of His public ministry, Jesus worked as a carpenter, and the scripture records that His custom was to worship in the synagogue on the Sabbath day.

17. How did Jesus conclusively rebut the suggestion that He had in any way countermanded God's commandments?

"I have kept My Father's commandments." John 15:10.

"Jesus taught men how to keep the Sabbath. He made no attempt to destroy but He did glorify it."-J. Clyde Mahaffery in "God's Answer."

18. Did He in any way modify the law of God?

"Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil [fully preach, Romans 15: 19]." Matthew 5: 17.

"There are some who tell us that in this dispensation of the gospel we are not under law but under grace. But the seventh day was sanctified even before the law of Moses was a standing obligation. Besides, our Lord came, as He said, not to destroy the law, but to fulfil it, and every Christian man, every God-fearing nation, should 'remember the Sabbath day.' " -Revelation W. Hicks. D.Litt. in the Christian Herald.

19. What pronouncement did He make concerning commandment-keeping and the kingdom of heaven?

"Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven." Matthew 5: 19.

20. What should, therefore, characterize the lives of those who claim to be followers of Christ? "He that said he abides in Him ought himself also so to walk, even as He walked." 1 John 2: 6. "For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments: and His commandments are not grievous." 1 John 5:3

The Sabbath and the Resurrection

1. ON which day was Jesus crucified?

"There laid they Jesus therefore because of the Jews' preparation day; for the sepulchre was nigh at hand." John 19: 42. "That day was the preparation, and the Sabbath drew on." Luke 23:54.

2. When, at sunset, the Sabbath began, did the followers of Jesus give any indication of a lessened regard for the day as a result of the crucifixion?

"They rested the Sabbath day according to the commandment." Luke 23: 56.

3. By what day was the Sabbath succeeded?

"In the end of the Sabbath, as it began to dawn toward the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to see the sepulchre." Matthew 28: 1.

4. What task did the women feel free to continue on this day?

"Now upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain others with them." Luke 24: 1.

How did two of the other disciples occupy themselves on the resurrection day?

"And, behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem about threescore furlongs." Luke 24: 13.

6. When they returned how did the disciples receive the news they bore that Jesus was alive?

"And they [who had seen Jesus] went and told it unto the residue: neither believed they them." Mark 16:13.

7. In the evening where were the disciples gathered, and for what reason?

"Then the same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews." John 20: 19.

8. What effect had the appearance of Jesus upon them?

"He appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat." Mark 16: 14. "But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit." Luke 24: 37.

Though we have traced the activities of the disciples on the day of the resurrection from dawn to dusk we have not found a single reference to any assembly for worship to commemorate the day, nor any indication of special sanctity attaching to it. In fact, not until the late evening were the disciples convinced that Jesus had risen.

9. Is there any truth in the suggestion that Jesus made a habit of meeting the disciples on the first day of succeeding weeks?

No. "And after eight days again His disciples were within, and Thomas with them: then came Jesus." John 20:26. (Probably the second day of the week.) "Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them. And when they saw Him, they worshipped Him." Matthew 28:16,17. (No indication.) "Simon Peter said unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also go with thee. But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore: but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus." John 21:3,4. (No indication, but certainly a working day.)

10. While there is no evidence of Sunday observance before or after the ascension, how did the apostles invariably occupy themselves on the Sabbath?

"And on the Sabbath we went out of the city by a river side, where prayer was wont to be made; and we sat down, and spoke unto the women which resorted thither." Acts 16:13. "And Paul, as his manner was, went in unto them, and three 'Sabbath days reasoned with them out of the Scriptures." Acts 17:2.

11. Which day did the converted Gentiles also observe?

“And when the Jews were gone out of the synagogue, the Gentiles besought that these words might be preached to them the next Sabbath.” Acts 13:42.

12. Apart from the references to the actual day of the resurrection, how many times is the first day referred to in the New Testament?

Only twice. 1 Corinthians 16: 2; Acts 20: 7.

13. What weekly accounting did Paul suggest as quite proper on the first day of the week?

“Upon the first day of the week let every one of you lay by him in store, as God has prospered him.” 1 Corinthians 16: 2.

14. What is the only religious meeting mentioned in the New Testament as having taken place on the first day of the week?

“And upon the first day of the week, when the disciples came together to break bread, Paul preached unto them, ready to depart on the morrow; and continued his speech until midnight.” Acts 20: 7.

This, however, is no proof of Sunday observance, for midnight on the first day of the week would be Saturday night. This was evidently a special meeting after the Sabbath- in view of the fact that Paul had to leave. The next day (Sunday) the apostle undertook a long journey on foot of about nineteen miles to Assos (verses 11,13); this he certainly would not have done had Sunday been the Christian day of worship.

15. What is the only other text in the New Testament alleged to lend support to the idea of the transfer of the Sabbath from the seventh to the first day of the week?

“I was in the Spirit on the Lord’s day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet.” Revelation 1: 10.

Which, however, is the only day answering to the description “Lord’s day” in the Bible?

“But the seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God.” Exodus 20:10. “If thou turn away thy foot from the Sabbath, from doing thy pleasure on My holy day.” Isaiah 58:13. “Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the Sabbath.” Mark 2:28.

17. Can there be any justification, therefore, for supposing that the Sabbath was transferred from the seventh to the first day of the week at the resurrection?

No, the first day was always a working day in the early centuries of the Christian era.

“The primitive Christians did all manner of work upon the Lord’s day, even in time of persecution, when they were the strictest observers of all the divine commandments; but in this they knew there was none.”-Bishop Taylor in “Duct. Dubitantium, book II, chapter 2, section 59.

“Take which you will, either the fathers or the moderns, and we shall find no Lord’s day instituted by any apostolical mandate, no Sabbath set on foot by them upon the first day of the week.” -Dr. Peter Heylyn in “History of the Sabbath,” part II, chapter 1.

18. What adequate memorials had Jesus provided of His death and resurrection?

a. Baptism. “Know you not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into His death?” Romans 6:3.

b. The Lord’s Supper. “For as often as you eat this bread, and drink this cup, you do show the Lord’s death till He come.” 1 Corinthians 11: 2 6.

19. What final and conclusive statement indicates that Jesus’ expected the disciples still to be keeping the Sabbath many years after His ascension?

“But pray you that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the Sabbath day.” Matthew 24:20.

Jesus had been mentioning certain signs which would give warning of the final judgment of God upon Jerusalem. Urging the Christians to watch for these signs and escape while there was time, He mercifully added the words quoted above. The destruction of the city by the Romans, which He predicted took place in AD 70. Obviously, then, Jesus expected the Christian church still to be observing the seventh-day Sabbath forty years after the resurrection.

How Was the Sabbath Changed?

1. AGAINST what peril did Paul warn the early church to be on its guard?

“For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock. Also of your own selves shall men arise, speaking Perverse things.” Acts 20: 29, 30.

2. What particularly dangerous philosophy did Paul actually name?

“O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane and vain babbling, and oppositions of science [“Gnosis” or “Gnosticism”] falsely so called.” 1 Timothy 6: 20.

3. What was the most noteworthy feature of Gnostic teaching?
Disparagement of the Old Testament.

“The whole of & Old Testament was abandoned to the inspiration of an inferior and evil demon; the Jews were left in exclusive possession of their national Deity, whom the Gnostic Christians disdained to acknowledge. To them the mission of Christ revealed a Deity altogether unknown in the dark ages of a world which was the creation and the domain of an inferior being.” -Milman in “History of Christianity,” Volume I, page 208.

4. In consequence how did they regard the law of God as set forth in the Old Testament?

They rejected it in favor of the supposed “new law” of Christ.

“The God of the Jews, who created the world, gave the law; and rested upon the Sabbath, they called Demiurgus, or the Evil God, and placed him over against Christ, the Good God of the Christians, who redeemed the world, gave a new law, and introduced a spiritual, continual rest.” - J. N. Andrews and L. R. Conradi in “History of the Sabbath,” page 452.

5. How did Marcion, one of the Gnostic philosophers, show his contempt for the law and particularly the Sabbath?

By openly despising it. “Marcion for this reason fasted on the Sabbath. For, said he, since that day is the rest of the God of the Jews, who made the world and rested on the Sabbath day, we therefore instituted fasting on that day, that we may not seem to do anything in compliance with the rites of the God of the Jews.” - Epiphanius, “Heresies,” III, section 42.

6. As it was necessary to have some special time for divine worship, what day, as a result of Gnostic influence, was substituted for the Sabbath?

Sunday, the first day of the week.

“Upon Sunday we all assemble, that being the first day in which God set Himself to work upon the dark void in order to make the world, and in which Jesus Christ our Savior rose again from the dead. For the day before Saturday He was crucified, and the day after, which is Sunday, He appeared unto His apostles and disciples, and taught them what I have now proposed to your consideration.” - Justin Martyr, “First Apology,” chapter 67, translation by William Reeves, page 127, sections 87-89.

7. What really led the apostate church to fix upon Sunday as the Christian’s rest day?

The fact that it was already an established holiday throughout the Roman world.

“Sunday being the day on which the Gentiles solemnly adored that planet, and called it Sunday, partly from its influence on that day especially, and partly in respect to its divine body (as they conceived it), the Christian thought fit to keep the same day and the same name of it.” - T. H. Morer in “Six Dialogues on the Lord’s Day,” pages 22, 23.

8. How did some Christians relate themselves to the problem of Sabbath and Sunday?

They kept both days.

“The last day of the week was strictly kept in connection with that of the first day for a long time after the overthrow of the temple and its worship. Down even to the fifth century the observance of the Jewish Sabbath was continued in the Christian church, but with a rigor and solemnity gradually diminishing until it was wholly discontinued.” - Lyman Coleman in, “Ancient Christianity Exemplified,” chapter 26, Section 2.

9. What important event began to turn the scales in favor of the exclusive observance of the first day of the week?

The professed conversion of Constantine and the promulgation by him of the first official Sunday edict. It reads as follows: “Let all the judges and town people, and the occupation of all trades, rest on the venerable day of the sun. But let those who are situated in the country, freely and at full liberty attend to the business of agriculture, because it often happens that no other day is so fit for sowing corn and planting vines; lest, the critical moment being let slip, men should lose the commodities granted by heaven. Given the seventh day of March [March 7, AD 321], Crispus and Constantine [Constantine the Great] being consuls, each of them for the second time.” “Corpus Juris Civilis Cod.,” lib. III, tit. 12, 3.

10. What profound effect had Constantine’s Sunday decree upon the Christian observance of the day? “Sunday was observed with greater solemnity than it had formerly been.” - Eusebius, “Ecclesiastical History,” cent. 4, part II, chap. 4, sec. 5

11. What other testimony does Eusebius, patriarch of Constantinople in the time of Constantine, bear to the church’s acceptance of the emperor’s decree?

“All things whatsoever that it was duty to do on the Sabbath, these we have transferred to the Lord’s day. Commentary on the Psalms. Rome falsely claims authority for the transfer of the Sabbath to the first day of the week.

12. What false ecclesiastical system did the Apostle Paul declare would arise in the church?

“Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition. Who opposes and exalts himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sits in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God.” 2 Thessalonians 2:3-4.

13. Speaking of this same Anti Christian power, what did the prophet Daniel declare it would do when it had attained a position of dominance?

“And he shall speak words against the Most-High, and shall wear out the saints of the Most High: and he shall think to change the times and the law.” (“Shall presume to change the appointed times and the law.” Wintle and Spurrell.) Daniel 7:25, RV.

14. To what power do this and other parallel prophecies in Daniel and the Revelation undoubtedly refer? The Roman Catholic Church. (See Study, “Antichrist Unmasked.”)

Melanchthon, the learned friend of Luther, was clear that these prophecies referred to Rome, for he wrote: -“He changed the times and laws that any of the six work days commanded of God, will make them unholy and idle days when he list, or of their own holy days abolished make work days again, or when they changed the Saturday into Sunday. They have changed God’s laws and turned them into their own traditions to be kept above God’s precepts. “Quoted in “Exposition of Daniel the Prophet,” by George Joyce, page 119 (1545).

15. At what church council did Rome begin to fulfil Daniel’s prophecy?

The Council of Laodicea, AD 364.

Canon 29 reads: “Christians shall not Judaize and be idle on Saturday, but shall work on that day; but the Lord’s day they shall especially honor, and, as being Christians, shall if possible, do no work on that day. If, however, they are found Judaizing, they shall be shut out from Christ.” - Hefele’s “Councils,” Volume II, book 6, par. 93.

“The seventh-day Sabbath was solemnized by Christ, the apostles, and primitive Christians, till the Laodicean Council did in a manner quite abolish the observance of it. The Council of Laodicea (about AD 364) first settled the observation of the Lord’s day,

and prohibited the keeping of the Jewish Sabbath under an anathema.”-William Prynne in “Dissertation on the Lord’s Day” (1633), pages 33, 34, 44.

16. What other Rome-inspired church councils in subsequent centuries passed decrees in favor of Sunday observance, condemning Sabbath-keeping?

Carthage (401); Orleans (511, 538); Auxerre (578); Macon (585); Chalons (644); Synods of Boniface (680-755); Synod of Frankfurt (794); Rome (826); Paris (829); etc.

“Gasper del Fosso, archbishop of Rheggio ... said, that the [Roman] church had as much authority as the Word of God; that the [Roman] church bath changed the Sabbath, ordained by God, into Sunday.” -Pietro Soave Polano in “History of the Council of Trent,” Book 6, page 439, London, 1676.

The following is a typical question and answer on Sunday observance in Roman Catholic manuals:

“Question. Has the [Roman Catholic] church power to make any alterations in the commandments of God?

“Answer. Instead of the seventh day, and other festivals appointed by the old law, the church has prescribed the Sundays and holy days to be set apart for God’s worship, and these we are now obliged to keep in consequence of God’s commandment, instead of the ancient Sabbath.” – “The Catholic Christian Instructed,” page 211.

17. To what conclusion do church historians therefore come respecting the origin of Sunday observance? That Sunday is a purely human ordinance.

“The festival of Sunday, like all other festivals, was always only a human ordinance, and it was far from the intentions of the apostles to establish a divine command in this respect, far from them, and from the early apostolic church, to transfer the laws of the Sabbath to Sunday.” - Neander’s “Church History,” translated by H. J. Rose, page 186. “Thus do we see upon what grounds the Lord’s day stands, on custom first, and voluntary consecration of it to religious meetings; that custom countenanced by the authority of the church of God which tacitly approved the same. And finally confirmed and ratified by Christian princes throughout their empires.” - Heylyn’s “History of the Sabbath,” part 11, chap. 3, sec. 12.

18. When the Reformers were freeing the church from Roman errors, who raised the question of Sunday observance?

The Reformer Carlstadt. “Carlstadt held to the divine authority of the Sabbath from the Old Testament.” - Dr. Barnes Sears in “Life of Luther,” page 402.

19. Though Luther never condemned Sunday observance, how near did he come to being convinced?

He was almost persuaded. “Indeed, if Carlstadt were to write further about the Sabbath, Sunday would have to give way, and the Sabbath-that is to say, Saturday-must be kept holy.” - Luther in “Against the Celestial Prophets,” quoted in “Life of Luther,” page 147.

20. How does one historian draw attention to the incompleteness of the Reformation?

He admits retention of traces of the great apostasy. “The reforming churches, flying from Rome, carried some of them more, some of them less, all of them something, of Rome with them; especially that spirit of imposition and persecution which has too much cleaved unto them all.”-Isaac Backus in “History of New England,” Volume 1, page 49.

21. What taunt, therefore, do Roman Catholics continue to cast at Protestants in respect of the observance of Sunday?

That Protestants are inconsistent in observing the Sunday rest which was ordained by the Church of Rome.

“It was the Catholic Church which, by the authority of Jesus Christ, has transferred this rest to the Sunday in remembrance of the resurrection of our Lord. Thus the observance of Sunday by the Protestants is an homage they pay, in spite of themselves, to the authority of the [Catholic] church.”-Mgr. Segur in “Plain Talk About the Protestantism of Today.”

22. What must all true Protestants do with doctrines founded on the authority of tradition as against the Bible?

They must reject them and take their stand on the Bible only.

“The Bible, I say, the Bible only, is the religion of Protestants! Hence, if a doctrine be propounded for his acceptance, he asks, Is it to be found in the inspired Word? Was it taught by the Lord Jesus Christ? If it is not found in the sacred Scriptures, it presents no valid claim to be received as an article of his religious creed.” Dowling in “History of Romanism,” book II, chap. 1, sec. 3.

23. How urgent is the call to walk in the light of God’s truth? “Walk while you have the light, lest darkness come upon you.” John 12:35.

Britain’s Earliest Faith

WHAT commission did Jesus give to His disciples just before His ascension?

“And He said unto them, Go you- into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.” Mark 16: 15.

2. By what seeming calamity was the dissemination of the gospel hastened?

“And at that time there was a great Persecution against the church which was at Jerusalem. Therefore they that were scattered abroad went everywhere preaching the Word.” Acts 8:1-4.

3. How early did Christian teachers arrive in Britain?

Probably before the close of the first Century. “It seems nearest the truth that the British church was originally planted by Grecian teachers such as came from the East within fifty years of Christ’s ascension.” - Robert Parsons in “Three Conversions of England.”

4. What church fathers testify to the early evangelization of Britain?

Tertullian and Origen among others.

“The regions of Britain which have never been penetrated by the Roman arms have received the religion of Christ. “-Tertullian in “Dei Fidei,” page 179. “The divine goodness of our Lord and Savior is equally diffused among the Britons, the Africans, and other nations of the world.”- Origen on “Psalm 149.”

5. When do British bishops first appear at the church councils?

The Council of Arles, AD 314.

Three bishops, a presbyter, and a deacon were present at the Council of Arles, convened to discuss the date of Easter, the ceremony of baptism, and the mode of ordination of bishops or elders of the church.

6. What became the chief center of the British church?

The Isle of Iona off the south-west coast of Scotland.

“Iona was for two centuries the nursery of bishops, the center of education, the asylum of religious knowledge, the point of union among the British Isles, the capital and metropolis of the Celtic race.”-Montalembert.

7. How highly did the early British church esteem the Bible?

They were diligent Bible students. “Though thou should go to the ocean, to the British Isles, there thou should hear all men everywhere discoursing matters out of the Scriptures.” - Chrysostom (AD 402).

8. What did Columba, the founder of Iona, regard as his supreme rule of faith?

The Holy Scriptures.

Discussing the Trinity, for example, he writes: “Except what has been declared by the law, the prophets, the evangelists, and apostles, a profound silence ought to be observed by all others on the subject of the Trinity.”

9. How did Columbanus of Ireland describe the faith of the Irish Christians?

He testified to the purity of their faith. “We are Irish dwelling at the very ends of the earth. We be men who receive naught but the doctrine of the evangelists and apostles. The catholic faith, as it was first delivered by the successors of the holy apostles, is maintained among us with unchanged fidelity.”

10. Which day was observed as Sabbath- in the Celtic church of Scotland?

The seventh-day Sabbath. “They worked on Sunday, but kept Saturday in a sabbatical manner.”-Andrew Lang in “History of Scotland.” Page 96.

11. What testimony did Columba of Iona bear to the Sabbath on the day he died?

“This day is called the Sabbath, that is the day of rest, and such will it truly be to me; for it will put an end to my labors.” - Butler’s “Lives of the Saints,” article, “St. Columba.”

Commenting on this statement one historian says: “From this passage it is plain that according to the old Columban Rule, what we now call Saturday was considered to be the Day of Rest before the Lord’s Day.” - T. Ratcliffe Barnett, Ph.D., in “Margaret of Scotland.”

12. Which day did the early Irish church also observe as the Sabbath?

The seventh-day Sabbath. “It seems to have been customary in the Celtic churches of early times in Ireland, as well as in Scotland, to keep Saturday, the Jewish Sabbath, as a day of rest from labor. They obeyed the commandment literally upon the seventh day of the week.”-Prof. Moffatt in “The Church of Scotland,” Page 140.

13. When the pope learned of the flourishing British church, what steps did he take to bring it under his authority?

He sent Augustine to subjugate it. In his commission to Augustine he said: “As to the bishops of the British Isles, we commit them all to you, brother, that the ignorant may be taught, the weak in the faith strengthened by your word, and the disobedient corrected by your authority.”

14. In spite of papal pressure through the kings of England, how long did the British church hold out against the domination of Rome?

Until the eleventh century. “The Britons told Augustine they would not be subject to him, nor let him pervert the ancient laws of their church. This was their resolution, and they were as good as their word, for they maintained the liberty of their church five hundred years after his time! And were the last of all the churches of Europe that gave up their power to the Roman Beast.” - Bacon in “Government of England.”

15. After the subjugation of the English church to Rome, where was the primitive faith preserved? In Scotland and Ireland.

16. When Catholic Margaret of England married Malcolm of Scotland in 1069, to what “peculiarities” in the Scottish church did, she take exception?

The observance of the seventh-day Sabbath.

“Among these ‘peculiarities’ she specifically mentions that ‘they worked on Sunday, but kept Saturday in a sabbatical manner.’ ” - Andrew Lang in “History of Scotland.”

17. Calling together a- council of the leaders of the Scottish church, what issue, among others, did she set before them?

The question of Sunday observance.

“Her next point was that they did not duly reverence the Lord’s day.” – “Celtic Scotland,” page 349.

18. What argument did she put to the council on the question of Sunday observance?

The resurrection of Jesus on the first day of the week.

“ ‘Let us venerate the Lord’s day, inasmuch as upon it our Savior rose from the dead, whereon we were redeemed.’ ” Alphous Belleshiem, DD, in “History of the Catholic Church of Scotland.”

19. What crisis brought about the capitulation of the Scottish church? Threat of excommunication.

“The clergy had to decide between conformity or Canossa; they prudently chose the former.”-Ninian Hill in “The Story of the Scottish Church.”

20. When were the last vestiges of the Sabbath keeping church extinguished?

In some parts of Ireland, Celtic practices continued well on into the twelfth century, until at last the Roman church succeeded in blotting out the true, Sabbath from the British church, but only after it had been faithfully observed for over a thousand years.

The Bible Sabbath Recovered

1. WHAT grievous system of error did the prophet Daniel declare would arise in the Christian church?

“And he shall speak great words against the Most High, and shall wear out the saints of the Most High, and he shall think, to change the times and the law; and they shall be given into his-hand until time and times and half a time.” Daniel 7: 25, RV.

As is conclusively shown in the study entitled “Antichrist Unmasked,” page 456, this prophecy was fulfilled in the rise of the Roman Catholic Church.

2. How has the Roman Catholic Church marred the law of God?

By enforcing the observance of Sunday, the first day of the week, and by the prohibition of Sabbath-keeping.

3. Although Rome succeeded in enforcing Sunday observance throughout the lands under her jurisdiction, where was a knowledge of the true Sabbath kept alive?

In remote corners of Europe, Asia, and Africa.

In Britain the Sabbath was observed by the Celtic church until well on into the twelfth century. (See previous study.) In Abyssinia it was observed from apostolic times down, to the seventeenth century. The Nestorians, Maronites, Jacobites, and Armenians, as well as other Asiatic Christians, continued to observe the seventh-day Sabbath for varying periods until as late as the seventeenth century.

4. What reasons have we for believing that in spite of persecution the observance of the true Sabbath continued even in continental Europe throughout the Dark Ages?

a. The frequent utterances of the church councils against the observance of the Sabbath.

b. Letters drawing attention to and condemning Sabbath-keeping.

c. Inquisition records naming Sabbath-keeping sects like the Pasaginians, the Waldenses, the Insabbatati, etc.

To mention only one of many groups of Sabbath-keeping Christians, the Waldenses “kept the Sabbath day (now known as Saturday), observed the ordinance of baptism according to the primitive church, and instructed their children in the articles of the Christian faith and the commandments of God.”-Jories in “Church History,” Volume II, chap. 5, sec. 4.

5. In their zeal for the elimination of all traces of papal corruption what did the Reformers discover concerning Sunday observance?

That it was based solely upon human tradition.

Says the Augsburg Confession: “They [the Catholics] allege the Sabbath changed into Sunday, the Lord’s day, contrary to the Ten Commandments, as it appears; neither is there any example more boasted of than the changing of the Sabbath day. Great, say they, is the power and authority of the church, since it dispensed with one of the Ten Commandments.” - Article 28.

6. In spite of this declaration, however, what fallacious position does the Augsburg Confession take up with reference to the true Sabbath?

Denies the necessity of observing any Sabbath.

“The Scripture allows that we are not bound to keep the Sabbath; for it teaches that the ceremonies of the law of Moses are not necessary after the revelation of the gospel.” - Article 28.

7. While the great Reformation churches never returned to the observance of the seventh-day Sabbath, what evidence is there that some of the smaller groups did so?

Many references to Christian Sabbath-keepers.

Here is a typical one: “The Sabbatarians (they will pardon if I term them so on account of their opinion) teach that the outward Sabbath, i.e., Saturday, still must be observed, for such be God’s Word, will, and command. Exodus 20 and 31. Here they say, we read in God’s Word plainly that He wants to have the Sabbath kept as long as the world stands. He who acts contrary to the divine commandments will not remain unpunished.” - Letter written to Lord Leonhard of Lichtenstein of Nikolsburg in 1599, and cited in “The Christian Sabbath,” page 10.

8. When do Sabbath-keepers reappear in Britain after their extinction in the eleventh and twelfth centuries? In the sixteenth century.

“In the reign of Elizabeth, it occurred to many conscientious and independent thinkers (as it had previously done to some Protestants in Bohemia) that the fourth commandment required of them the observance, not of the first, but of the specified seventh

day of the week, and a strict bodily rest, as a service then due to God.” - Chambers’ Cyclopaedia, Article “Sabbath,” Volume VIII, page 402.

9. Who was the first English Sabbath-keeper to suffer for his belief after the Reformation?

John Traske.

“Following the Sabbatarian principles of the Puritans to their legitimate consequences, endeavored to bring back again the Jewish Sabbath, as that which is expressly mentioned in the fourth commandment, and abrogate the Lord’s day altogether, as having no foundation in it, nor warrant by it. For which his Jewish doctrines having received his censure in the Star Chamber, about 1618, he was set on the pillory at Westminster, and thence whipped to the Fleet, and there put in prison, and about three years after wrote a recantation of all his former heresies and schismatic opinions.” - Bishop Cox in “Sabbath Literature,” 1, 152, 15.

10. Only a few years later, however, what notable personage became a Sabbath-keeper as indicated by his epitaph in the churchyard at Woodham Mortimer in Essex?

Peter Chamberlen, Royal Physician.

“The said Peter Chamberlen took you degree of Doctor in Physick in fever at Universities both at home and abroad and lived such above three score years being Physician in Ordinary to three Kings and Queens of England, viz., King James and Queen Anne, King Charles you first and Queen Mary. King Charles you second and Queen Katherine; and also to some foreign princes. Having traveled most parts of Europe, and speaking most of you languages. As for his Religion was a Christian keeping you Commandments of God and faith of Jesus, being baptized about you year 1648, and keeping you seventh day for you Sabbath above 32 years.”

11. When was a knowledge of the true Sabbath implanted among the Christian colonies of America? About the middle of the seventeenth century.

“Stephen Mumford came over from London in 1664, and brought the opinion with him that the whole of the Ten Commandments, as they were delivered from Mount Sinai, were moral and immutable. And that it was the anti Christian power which thought to change times and laws, that changed the Sabbath from the seventh to the first day of the week.” - Isaac Backus in “Church History of New England from 1783 to 1796,” Volume 11, sec. 10.

12. How concerned are some discerning Protestants today about the Sabbath question?

They desire a return to the true Sabbath.

“We keep the first day of the week as the Sabbath, in place of keeping the last day of the week, because we are wrong and have followed the papist church from early ages. No quibbling or explaining can make the Sabbath day of rest any other than the seventh. And the first can never be the seventh. The time will come, and soon too, when the world will come back to God’s Sabbath day.” - Professor E. Odum, MA, B.Sc., of the University of British Columbia.

13. Has the preservation of a knowledge of the true Sabbath and the revival of its observance in post-Reformation times any significance in the purposes of God?

Yes, for God’s last message to the world calls for a return to the worship of the Creator. “And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people, saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to Him. For the hour of His judgment is come: and worship Him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.” Revelation 14: 6, 7.

14. Which commandment draws special attention to the worship of the Creator?

The fourth. “Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy for in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day, and hallowed it.” Exodus 20: 8-11.

15. How is the last-day Sabbath-keeping remnant who respond to this call described?

“Here is the Patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.” Revelation 14:12.

16. Has the observance of the true Sabbath spread throughout the earth in confirmation of the prophecy?

Indeed it has, for the scattered groups of Sabbath keeping Christians of the eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries had grown by the beginning of the twentieth century to more than 100,000, and since then at a vastly accelerated rate, until today there are more than half a million Sabbath-keepers throughout the world remembering the Creator on the day of His appointing, and receiving the spiritual blessings which God promised in its hallowed hours.

17. To what end will the false religious systems which have marred God’s law come?

“And there followed another angel, saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication. And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand, the same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of His indignation.” Revelation 14: 8-10.

18. On the other hand, what will be the portion of those who respond to God’s last call to faith and obedience?

“If thou turn away thy foot from the Sabbath, from doing thy pleasure on My holy day; and call the Sabbath a delight, the holy of the Lord, honorable; and shall honor Him, not doing your own ways, nor finding your own pleasure, nor speaking your own words. Then shall thou delight thyself in the Lord; and I will cause thee to ride upon the high places of the earth, and feed thee with the heritage of Jacob thy father: for the mouth of the Lord has spoken it.” Isaiah 58: 13, 14.

How To Observe The Sabbath

1. How are the first six days of the week to be occupied? "Six days shall thou labor, and do all thy work." Exodus 20: 9.

2. How is the seventh day to be distinguished from the six working days?

"Six days shall work be done: but the seventh day is the Sabbath of rest, an holy convocation; you shall do no work therein." Leviticus 23:3.

3. Should the Sabbath be strictly observed even under pressure of work?

"Six days thou shall work, but on the seventh day thou shall rest: in sowing time and in harvest thou shall rest." Exodus 34:21.

4. Beside-work on the land what other activities are to cease on the Sabbath?

"Tomorrow is the rest, of the holy Sabbath unto the Lord: bake that which you will bake today, and seethe that you will seethe; and that which remains over lay up for you to be kept until the morning." Exodus 16:23. "And if the people of the land bring ware or any victuals on the Sabbath day to sell we would not buy it of them on the Sabbath." Nehemiah 10:31.

5. On whom is the obligation to observe the Sabbath rest enjoined?

"But the seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God: in it thou shall not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger-that is within thy gates." Exodus 20:10.

6. When do the Sabbath hours begin and end?

"From even unto even, shall you celebrate your Sabbath." Leviticus 23: 32.

7. Where does this division of the days originate?

"And God called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day." Genesis 1:5. (See also verses 8, 13, 19, 23, 31.)

8. In what reverence are the Sabbath hours to be held?

"Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy." Exodus 20:8. "And they shall hallow My Sabbaths." Ezekiel 44:24. "Keep the Sabbath day to sanctify it, as the Lord thy God has commanded thee." Deuteronomy 5:12.

9. How was the Sabbath employed in Israel?

"The seventh day is the Sabbath of rest, an holy convocation." Leviticus 23:3.

10. What example did Jesus set of proper Sabbath observance?

"And He came to Nazareth, where He had been brought up: and, as His custom was, He went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day." Luke 4:16.

"Jesus taught men how to observe the Sabbath. He made no attempt to destroy but He did glorify it." – "God's Answer," edited by J. Clyde Mahaffery.

11. How is the church of the last days exhorted?

"Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as you see the day approaching." Hebrews 10:25.

12. What record is kept in the books of heaven?

"Then they that feared the Lord spoke often one to another: and the Lord hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before Him for them that feared the Lord, and that thought upon His name." Malachi 3:16.

13. Beside worship, what other occupations are perfectly proper on the Sabbath day? "It is lawful to do well on the Sabbath days." Matthew 12: 12.

14. What typical good works did Jesus do on the Sabbath?

"And it was the Sabbath day when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes." John 9: 14. "Then said He to the man, Stretch forth your hand. And he stretched it forth; and it was restored whole, like as the other." Matthew 12:13.

15. In order that the Sabbath may be a day of physical rest and spiritual blessing for all, what preparation is necessary on the previous day?

"And it shall come to pass, that on the sixth day they shall prepare that which they bring in; tomorrow is the rest of the holy Sabbath unto the Lord." Exodus 16:5-23.

"At the very beginning of the fourth commandment the Lord said, 'Remember.' All through the week we are to have the Sabbath in mind, and be making preparation to keep it according to the commandment." - E. G. White.

16. What special name is, therefore, given to the sixth day of the week?

"Now when the even was come, because it was the preparation, that is, the day before the Sabbath, Joseph of Arimathea went in boldly unto Pilate, and craved the body of Jesus." Mark 15:42,43. "And that day was the preparation, and the Sabbath drew on." Luke 23:54.

17. While God indicated specifically how the Sabbath should be kept, for whose benefit was the day intended?

"And He said unto them, The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath." Mark 2:27.

18. If we observe it as God intended, what joy shall we find in its sacred hours? "This is the day which the Lord has made; we will rejoice and be glad in it." Psalm 118: 24.

8. Our Duty to Man

God's Appeal To Youth

1. WHAT blessings do children receive from their parents?

a. Provision for material needs. "What man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will give him a stone? You know how to give good gifts unto your children." Matthew 7:9-11.

b. Instruction and spiritual guidance. "Hear, you children, the instruction of a father, and attend to know understanding." Proverbs 4:1. "The father to the children shall make, known Thy truth." Isaiah 38:19.

2. For these benefits and blessings what do children owe their parents?

"Honor thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the Lord thy God gives thee." Exodus 20:12. "You shall fear every man his mother, and his father." Leviticus 19: 3.

"This commandment is set first in our duties to our neighbor, in order to show that the well-being of the family is the foundation on which the well-being of every other human association depends, whether that association is the church, the school, the college, the guild, the trades union, the corporation, the nation, or the League of Nations: one and all depend on the family life for their well-being. Destroy the family and sooner or later you destroy all these."-R. H. Charles in "The Ten Commandments," page 173.

3. From where should their respect and obedience spring?

"My son, give Me your heart, and let your eyes observe My ways." Proverbs 23:26. "My son, forget not My law; but let your-heart keep My commandments." Proverbs 3:1.

4. When should parents receive special respect?

"Hearken unto thy father that began thee, and despise not thy mother when she is old." Proverbs 23: 22.

5. On what occasion did Jesus call attention to this commandment?

"Thou knows the commandments. Honor thy father and mother." Mark 10:19.

6. Who else emphasized the continued obligation of the fifth commandment?

"Children, obey your Parents in all things: for this is well pleasing unto the Lord." Colossians 3:20. "Children, obey your Parents, in the Lord: for this is right." Ephesians 6:1.

7. What special feature did Paul note concerning this commandment? "Which is the first commandment with Promise." Ephesians 6:2, 3.

8. In what way did God promise to reward obedient children?

a. Life and health. "My son, attend to My words; incline your ear unto My sayings. Let them not depart from your eyes; keep them in the midst of your heart. For they are life unto those that find them, and health to all their flesh." Proverbs 4: 20-22. "For length of days, and long life, and peace, shall they add to thee." Proverbs 3: 2.

b. Favor with God and man. "So shall thou find favor and good understanding in the sight of God and man." Proverbs 3: 4.

9. How is the life of a loving parent enriched by a devoted child?

"The father of the righteous shall greatly rejoice: and he that begets a wise child shall have joy of him. Thy father and thy mother shall be glad, and she that bare thee shall rejoice." Proverbs 23: 24, 25.

10. On the other hand, what does the foolish son bring to his parents?

"A foolish son is a grief to his father, and bitterness to her that bare him." Proverbs 17: 25. "Who so keeps the law is a wise son: but he that is a companion of riotous men shames his father." Proverbs 28:7.

11. What example of parental guidance did Abraham set?

"For I know him, that he will command his children and his household after him, and they shall keep the way of the Lord, to do justice and judgment." Genesis 18:19.

12. How did Isaac in turn manifest his filial devotion?

"And Abraham said, My son, God will provide Himself a lamb for a burnt offering: so they went both of them together." Genesis 22:8. "And they came to the place which God had told him of; and Abraham built an altar there, and laid the wood in order, and bound Isaac his son, and laid him on the altar upon the wood." Genesis 28:9.

13. What respect did Jacob show for his parents' counsel?

"Thou shall not take a wife of the daughters of Canaan and Jacob obeyed his father and his mother." Genesis 28:6, 7.

14. What beautiful example of devotion is recorded of Ruth?

"And Ruth said, entreat me not to leave thee, or to return from following after thee: for whither thou goes, I will go; and where thou lodges, I will lodge: thy people shall be my people, and thy God my God." Ruth 1:16,17.

15. How did Jesus show His respect for His parents?

"And He went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject unto them." Luke 2:51.

"Jesus is our example. There are many who dwell with interest upon the period of His public ministry, while they pass unnoticed the teaching of His early years. But it is in His home life that He is a pattern for all children and youth. And every youth who follows Christ's example of faithfulness and obedience in His lowly home, may claim these words spoken of Him by the Father through the Holy Spirit, 'Behold My servant, whom I uphold. Mine elect, in whom My soul delights.'" - E. G. White in "Desire of Ages," page 74.

16. What example of love for His mother did Jesus give on the cross?

“When Jesus therefore saw His mother, and the disciple standing by, whom He loved, He said unto His mother, Woman, behold thy son! Then said He to the disciple, Behold thy mother! And from that hour that disciple took her unto his own home.” John 19:26,27.

17. Because of the neglect of this commandment, what tragic situation will arise in the last days?

“Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son; and children shall rise up against their parents, and shall cause them to be put to death.” Mark 13:12. “In the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be disobedient to parents.” 2 Timothy 3:1,2.

“Perhaps no sign of the present time is more sad than the prevalence, of disobedience on the part of children to parents during the days of childhood, and lack of reverence and respect when once the restraints of home have been left behind.”-G. Campbell Morgan in “The Ten Commandments,” page 61.

18. What blessed reconciliation, however, will also be brought about in preparation for the eternal kingdom?

“And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers.” Malachi 4:6. “To make ready a people prepared for the Lord.” Luke 1:17. Christ’s tender regard for the children, and for The sick and needy, revealed His deep appreciation of the sanctity of life.

The Sanctity of Life

1. WHAT solemn injunction is contained in the sixth commandment? “Thou shall not kill.” Exodus 20: 13.

2. Does this commandment prohibit the killing of any living thing?

“Every moving thing that lives shall be meat for you; even as the green herb have I given you all things.” Genesis 9:3. (See also Deuteronomy 12:21)

3. What then is its primary meaning?

“Thou shall do no murder.” Matthew 19: 18.

4. Why is murder so heinous an offence in the sight of God? “For in the image of God made He man.” Genesis 9: 6.

5. Who was the first murderer?

“You are of your father the devil, He was a murderer from the beginning.” John 8: 44.

6. What are some of the motives for murder?

Jealousy, Genesis. 4:3-8. Ambition, Judges 9:1-6. Revenge, 2 Samuel 3: 27. Lust, 2 Samuel 12: 9,

7. How are those who shed innocent blood regarded by God?

“These six things does the Lord hate: yes, seven are an abomination unto Him. Hands that shed innocent blood.” Proverbs 6: 16, 17.

8. How did Jesus extend the scope of the sixth commandment?

“You have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shall not kill; but I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment.” Matthew 5:21,22.

9. What tyrannical abuses of power and social authority likewise constitute breaches of the sixth commandment?

a. Exploitation of the poor. “Behold, the princes of Israel are like wolves ravening the prey, to shed blood, and to destroy souls, to get dishonest gain.” Ezekiel 22:6,27.

b. Perversion of justice. “They gather themselves together against the soul of the righteous, and condemn the innocent blood.” Psalm 94: 21.

“There are other forms of murder in these latter days, which are peculiarly the product of the age, and which are hardly ever named murder, because it is difficult sometimes to detect the hand that strikes the deadly blow. The oppression of masses of people in the hunt for wealth is murder, though our laws are so feeble that they are unable to detect the wrong-doers and, punish them.” “The death of the little child in the overcrowded hells of the slums is murder by the man who gathers his wealth from the rack rented houses, without a care for those who perish that he may gain.”-G. Campbell Morgan in “The Ten Commandments,” page 72.

c. Despotism. “If you will not make known unto me the dream, with the interpretation thereof, you shall be cut in pieces, and your houses shall be made a dunghill.” Daniel 2: 5. “Then Herod sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under.” Matthew 2:16.

d. Religious pogroms. “And the letters were sent by posts into all the king’s provinces, to destroy, to kill, and to cause to Perish, all Jews, both young and old, little children and women, in one day, even upon the thirteenth day of the twelfth month, which is the month Adar, and to take the spoil of them for a prey.” Esther 3:13. “Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and you shall be hated of all nations for My name’s sake.” Matthew 24: 9.

e. Wars and revolutions.

“From whence come wars and fighting among you? come they not hence, even of your lusts that war in your members? You lust, and have not: you kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain: you fight and war.” James 4: 1, 2.

10. How does the abuse of power invariably recoil on the head of the tyrants?

“Therefore, as I live, said the Lord God, I will Prepare thee unto blood, and blood shall pursue thee: since thou has not hated blood, even blood shall pursue thee.” Ezekiel 35: 6.

11. By whom will the righteous ultimately be avenged?

“For we know Him that has said, Vengeance belongs unto Me, I will recompense, said the Lord.” Hebrews 10: 30.

12. When does Jesus promise that all iniquity shall be punished and all wrongs righted?

“Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waits for the precious fruit of the earth, and has long patience for it. Be you also patient; establish your hearts: for the coming of the Lord draws nigh.” James 5: 7, 8.

13. What will be the ultimate fate of all murderers?

“You know that no murderer has eternal life abiding in him.” 1 John 3: 15. “Murderers shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.” Revelation 21:8. (See also Galatians 5: 21.) Women appointed as King’s Counsel to help administer the civil law.

Modern Morals and the Moral Law

1. WHAT sacred emotion has God placed in the human heart?

“Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.” Genesis 2: 24.

2. By what is the divinely instituted family life safeguarded?

“Thou shall not commit adultery.” Exodus 20: 14.

“The command is a simple, unqualified, irrevocable negative, ‘Thou shall not’! No argument is used, no reason given, because none is required. The sin is of so destructive and damning a nature that it is in itself sufficient cause for the stern forbidding. A sevenfold vice is this sin of unchaste conduct, being sin against the individual, the family, society, the nation, the race, the universe, and God.” - G. Campbell Morgan in “The Ten Commandments.” page 78.

3. What are some of the contributory causes of immorality?

“Behold, this was the iniquity of thy sister Sodomy pride, fullness of bread, and abundance of idleness was in her and in her daughters.” Ezekiel 16: 49.

“If then you yearn for the inestimable blessedness [of purity of life] you must flee from idleness; for idleness lays you open to every assault of the devil. You must flee youthful lusts, and avoiding all over-indulgence in softness, must sternly keep your body in temperance, soberness, and chastity.”-Archdeacon Farrar in “The Voice from Sinai,” pages 248, 249.

4. What law inexorably operates in the life of man?

“Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man sows, that shall he also reap. For he that sows to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption.” Galatians 6: 7, 8.

5. What are some of the consequences of adultery?

a.Moral corruption. “But who commits adultery with a woman lacks understanding: he that does it destroys his own soul.” Proverbs 6: 32.

b.Shame and reproach. “A wound and dishonor shall he get; and his reproach shall not be wiped away.” Proverbs 6:33.

c.Penury. “For by means of a whorish woman a man is brought to a piece of bread: and the adulteress will hunt for the precious life.” Proverbs 6: 26.

6. How perverted does the adulterer finally become?

“Wherein they think it strange that you run not with them to the same excess of riot, speaking evil of you.” 1 Peter 4: 4.

7. What attitude did Jesus take to the seventh commandment?

“But I say unto you, That whosoever looks on a woman to lust after her has committed adultery with her already in his heart.” Matthew 5: 28.

8. Why are sins against the body particularly heinous in the child of God?

“Know you not that your bodies are the members of Christ? Shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.” 1 Corinthians 6:15. “How then can I do this great wickedness, and sin against God?” Genesis 39: 9.

9. What obligations do we owe the Lord who bought us?

“For you are bought with a price therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God’s.” 1 Corinthians 6:20.

10. What life only is becoming of saints?

“For God has not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness.” 1 Thessalonians 4: 7.

11. What occasion do sexual sins on the part of believers give to the unbelieving world?

“By this deed thou has given great occasion to the enemies of the Lord to blaspheme.” 2 Samuel 12: 14.

12. From what, therefore, did Peter urge believers to abstain?

“Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul.” 1 Peter 2:11.

13. What steps are they to take to curb sensual desires in their lives?

“Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry.” Colossians 3: 5.

14. How complete a control over the thoughts is possible through Christ?

“Bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ.” 2 Corinthians 10: 5.

15. What sins does Paul list among the most conspicuous in the last days?

“This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be without natural affection, incontinent.” 2 Timothy 3: 1-3.

6. When will adulterers be finally judged?

“But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whore mongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.” Revelation 21: 8.

17. From what will they be excluded?

“For this you know, that no whore monger, nor unclean Person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, has any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God.” Ephesians 5: 5.

18. Who only will be permitted to see God?

“Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.” Matthew 5: 8.

The Rights of Man

1. How many were intended to have a share in the natural wealth of the world?

“Moreover the profit of the earth is for all.” Ecclesiastes 5: 9.

2. By what commandment did God safeguard the rights of the individual?

“Thou shall not steal.” Exodus 20: 15. “You shall not steal, neither deal falsely.” Leviticus 19: 11. “This commandment like the others, gives abundant room for searching self examination. In its demand for a scrupulous and an inflexible honesty toward man it includes the necessity of a scrupulous and inflexible honesty toward God. It forbids every form of theft and dishonesty; it forbids extravagance and debt; it forbids betting and gambling; it forbids overreaching and chicanery; it forbids niggardliness and oppression; it forbids idleness and prodigality; it forbids the mean idolatry of mammon-worship; it forbids all grasping acquisition and greedy ownership.”-Archdeacon Farrar in “The Voice from Sinai,” page 277.

3. Through sin, what common violations of the commandment have arisen?

a. Exploitation. “Some remove the landmarks; they violently take away flocks, and feed thereof. They drive away the ass of the fatherless, they take the widow’s ox for a pledge. They turn the needy out of the way.” Job 24: 2-4.

b. Extortion. “Thou has taken usury and increase, and thou has greedily gained of thy neighbors by extortion, and has forgotten Me, said the Lord God.” Ezekiel 22: 12.

c. Withholding due reward. “Woe unto him that build his house by unrighteousness, and his chambers by wrong; that uses his neighbor’s service without wages, and gives him not for his work.” Jeremiah 22: 13.

d. Dishonest measure. “Hear this, O you that swallow up the needy, making the ephah small, and the shekel great, and falsifying the balances by deceit.” Amos 8:4,5. “Divers weights, and divers measures, both of them are alike abomination to the Lord.” Proverbs 20:10.

4. What common offence does God regard as comparable with, stealing? “The wicked borrowed, and pays not again.” Psalm 37:21.

5. What is God’s attitude to all forms of dishonesty?

“For all that do such things, and all that do unrighteousness, are an abomination unto the Lord thy God.” Deuteronomy 25: 16.

6. In what conversation did Jesus recognize the perpetual obligation of the eighth commandment?

“If thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments. He [the rich young ruler] said unto Him, Which? Jesus said, Thou shall do no murder, Thou shall not commit adultery, Thou shall not steal.” Matthew 19: 17, 18.

7. What example should the Christian set unbelievers?

“Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles: that, whereas they speak against you as evildoers, they may by your good works, which they shall behold, glorify God in the day of visitation.” 1 Peter 2:12. “Providing for honest things, not only in the sight of the Lord, but also in the sight of men.” 2 Corinthians 8:21. “Not Purloining, but showing all good fidelity; that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Savior in all things.” Titus 2:10.

8. What did Paul suggest as the best antidote for dishonesty?

“Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labor, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needs.” Ephesians 4:28.

9. In what other way, apart from the abuse of the rights of man, may we break the eighth commandment? “Will a man rob God?” Malachi 3:8.

10. What examples do the Scriptures cite of robbing God?

a. Holy time. “When will the new moon be gone, that we may sell corn? and the Sabbath, that we may set forth wheat?” Amos 8: 5.

b. God's tithes and offerings. "You have robbed Me. But you say, Wherein have we robbed Thee? In tithes and offerings. You are cursed with a curse: for you have robbed Me, even this whole nation." Malachi 3: 8, 9.

"This commandment forbids the sacrilege of robbing God by withholding from Him, and from His house, and from the furtherance of His kingdom that which He gave, and which is our acknowledgment that it is but of His own that we give Him. It shows us that the possession of money is a sacred stewardship, and that to make its accumulation our chief end is a fatal misuse of the gift of life." - Archdeacon Farrar in "The Voice from Sinai," page 277.

11. What promise does God make to those who repent of robbing Him?

"Bring you all the tithes into the storehouse, that there may be meat in Mine house, and prove Me now herewith, said the Lord of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it." Malachi 3:10.

12. How full is God's knowledge of fraud and exploitation?

"Behold, the hire of the laborers who have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, cries: and the cries of them which have reaped are entered into the ears of the Lord of sabaoth." James 5: 4.

13. What does He proclaim Himself to be?

"That no man go beyond and defraud his brother in any matter: because that the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you and testified." 1 Thessalonians 4: 6.

14. How does God counsel and encourage the exploited ones?

"Be Patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waits for the precious fruit of the earth, and has long patience for it, until he receive the early and latter rain." James 5: 7.

15. What will the wicked one day do with their ill gotten gains?

"They shall cast their silver in the streets, and their gold shall be removed: their silver and their gold shall not be able to deliver them in the day of the wrath of the Lord." Ezekiel 7:19. (See also Isaiah 2:19, 20.)

16. What judgment will fall upon the robbers of the poor?

"Then said he unto me, This is the curse that goes forth over the face of the whole earth: for every one that steals shall be cut off as on this side according to it." Zechariah 5: 3. (See also verse 4.)

17. From what will they be for ever debarred?

"Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God." 1 Corinthians 6: 10.

18. On the other hand who is assured of a place in the heavenly kingdom?

"He that walks righteously, and speaks uprightly; he that despises the gain of oppressions, that shakes his hands from holding of bribes, that stops his ears from hearing of blood, and shuts his eyes from seeing evil; he shall dwell on high." Isaiah 33:15,16.

The Power of the Tongue

1. WHAT power resides in the tongue?

"Death and life are in the power of the tongue: and they that love it shall eat the fruit thereof." Proverbs 18:21.

"Our words are set upon never-stopping wheels, rolling on and on unto the pathway of eternity." -Brewster.

2. What special admonition as to the use of the tongue is contained in the ninth commandment?

"Thou shall not bear false witness against thy neighbor." Exodus 20: 16.

"This sin is at once deadly, and most common, and extremely varied in the forms which it assumes. That is the reason why throughout Scripture-in the Mosaic law, the Psalms, the Proverbs, the prophetic books, and in almost every epistle of the New Testament-it is pursued with such energy of multiplied and scathing denunciation."-Archdeacon Farrar in "The Voice from Sinai," pages 281, 282.

3. How is one aspect of false witness defined?

"Thou shall not raise a false report." Exodus 23:1. "Thou shall not go up and down as a talebearer." Leviticus 19:16.

4. Who is the father of slanderers?

"And I heard a loud voice saying In heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of His Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night." Revelation 12:10.

5. What are some of the consequences of slander?

"The words of a talebearer are as wounds." Proverbs 18:8. "They have sharpened their tongues like a serpent; adders' poison is under their lips." Psalm 140:3.

6. Of what should believers, therefore, never be guilty?

"Speak not evil one of another, brethren." James 4:11

7. How should the believer relate himself to the slanderers?

“Not rendering evil for evil, or railing for railing: but contrariwise blessing; knowing that you are thereunto Called, that you should inherit a blessing.” 1 Peter 3: 9.

8. Beside being the first slanderer and murderer, what other charge is made against Satan?

“He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.” John 8: 44. “Sin has many tools, but a lie is the, handle which fits them all.”- Oliver Wendell Holmes.

9. How does the Lord regard all falsehood of the lips?

“Lying lips are abomination to the Lord: but they that deal truly are His delight.” Proverbs 12: 22.

10. Why is God so uncompromisingly opposed to falsehood?

“He is the Rock, His work is perfect: for all His ways are judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and-right is He.” Deuteronomy 32: 4.

11. What, therefore, must characterize God’s children?

“For He said, Surely they are My people, children that will not lie: so He was their Savior.” Isaiah 63: 8. (See also Zephaniah 3: 13.)

12. Why is lying utterly incompatible with the life of the believer?

“Lie not one to another, seeing that you have put off the old man with his deeds.” Colossians 3: 9.

13. What is another common form of falsehood condemned in the Scriptures?

“They speak vanity every one with his neighbor: with flattering lips and with a double heart do they speak.” Psalm 12: 2.

14. How completely is the believer to be separated from deceit in every form? “Keep thy tongue from evil, and thy lips from speaking guile.” Psalm 34: 13.

15. What beautiful example of purity of speech was set for us by Jesus? “Who did no sin, neither was guile found in His mouth.” 1 Peter 2: 22.

16. What forms of falsehood will particularly manifest themselves in the last days?

“This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, without natural affection, truce-breakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despising of those that are good, ... but evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.” 2 Timothy 3: 1, 3, 13.

17. What will be the ultimate portion of all liars?

“But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and, murderers, and whore mongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.” Revelation 21: 8.

18. By contrast what reward will be accorded those who keep their lips from evil? “To him that ordered his conversation aright will I show the salvation of God.” Psalm 50: 23.

Deceitful Riches

1. IN whose hand is the disposition of all wealth?

“The Lord makes poor, and makes rich: He brings low, and lifted up.” 1 Samuel 2: 7.

2. How then ought temporal possessions to be regarded?

Every man also to whom God has given riches and wealth, and has given him power to eat thereof, and to take his portion, and to rejoice in his labor; this is the gift of God.” Ecclesiastes 5: 19.

3. To what use should they be put?

“Charge them that are rich in this world, that they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate.” 1 Timothy 6: 17, 18.

“The sharing of true wealth does not diminish our own possession, but increases it, and increases our joy in it. There is no selfishness in true wealth; and there is probably no joy comparable to the privilege of being allowed to contribute to the well-being and welfare and advance of humanity.”-Sir Oliver Lodge in “Science and Human Progress,” page 25.

4. To what wrong ends have material possessions been diverted through sin?

a.To acquire social advantage. “Wealth makes many friends; but the poor is separated from his neighbor.” Proverbs 19: 4.

b.To gain power. “The rich man’s wealth is his strong city.” Proverbs 18: 11.

5. How has the sinful heart come to look upon riches?

“Money answered all things.” Ecclesiastes 10: 19.

6. What does this false view of possessions encourage?

“He that loves silver shall not be satisfied with silver; nor he that loves abundance with increase: this is also vanity.” Ecclesiastes 5: 10.

7. To what other sins does ‘covetousness invariably lead?

a.False dealing. “For from the least of them even unto the greatest of them every one is given to covetousness; and from the prophet even unto the priest every one deals falsely.” Jeremiah 6:13. (See also Jeremiah 8:10.)

b.Oppression. “And they covet fields, and take them by violence; and houses, and take them away: so they oppress a man and his house, even a man and his heritage.” Micah 2: 2.

c. Perversion of justice. "Thy princes are rebellious, and companions of thieves: every one loves gifts, and followed after rewards: they judge not the fatherless, neither does the cause of the widow come unto them." Isaiah 1:23.

d. Strife and war. "From whence come wars and fighting among you? Come they not hence, even of your lusts that war in your members? You lust, and have not: you kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain: you fight and war, yet you have not, because you ask not." James 4: 1, 2.

"Criminal, records will prove that in a great majority of cases, unholy desire was the inspiration of murder.

No word need be written to demonstrate the fact that the look of concupiscence ever precedes the act of adultery. Theft of every description is the offspring of desire to possess that which is unreachable by lawful means. The evil spirit that makes a false witness possible is motivated far more often than perhaps appears by covetous aspiration. Thus the whole realm of human inter-relation is disorganized and broken up by the dishonoring of the tenth commandment." -G. Campbell Morgan in "The Ten Commandments," page 111.

8. How many, in fact, of the world's sorrows does Paul attribute to covetousness? "For the love of money is the root of all evil." 1 Timothy 6: 10.

9. How disastrous, also, is the effect of love of riches upon the spiritual life?

"Beware ... lest when thou has eaten and art full, and has built goodly houses, and dwelt therein; and when thy herds and thy flocks multiply, and thy silver and thy gold is multiplied, and all that thou has is multiplied. Then your heart be lifted up, and thou forget the Lord thy God." Deuteronomy 8: 11-14.

10. What solemn admonition against covetousness is therefore contained in the tenth commandment? "Thou shall not covet thy neighbor's house, thou shall not covet thy neighbor's wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor any thing that is thy neighbor's." Exodus 20:17

11. How seriously does Paul regard the sin of covetousness.

"Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry." Colossians 3: 5.

12. What promise should completely exclude covetousness from the believer's thoughts?

"Let your conversation be without covetousness; and be content with such things as you have: for He has said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee." Hebrews 13: 5.

"Seek to be assured that God is yours. Then whatsoever others possess, you will be sure not to covet it, nor envy them. Those who have most, you will pity if they want Him; and those who have Him, you will have no envy of them for sharing with them, but love them the more. For that infinite love is enough for all that choose Him and whom He has first chosen in eternal love." - Leighton.

13. How will the Lord reward those who put their trust in Him?

"The blessing of the Lord, it makes rich, and He adds no sorrow with it." Proverbs 10: 22.

9. The Christian Experience

In His Steps

1. ON what is the sinner's life patterned?

"In time past you walked according to the, course of this world according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now works in the children of disobedience." Ephesians 2: 2.

2. What appeal does Jesus make to men? "Follow Me." Matthew 4: 19.

3. What relation does the believer henceforth sustain to the world?

"They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world." John 17: 16.

4. To whom does he now look for an example and pattern.

"Be you therefore imitators of God, as beloved children." Ephesians 5:1 (RV.). "But put you on the Lord Jesus Christ." Romans 13: 14.

"The end and motive of Christianity, and therefore of Christian missions is to produce Christ-like character." - Dr. Stanley Jones in "The Christ of the Indian Road," page 49.

5. Of whom is Jesus Himself a pattern?

"Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature." Colossians 1:15.

6. What example did Jesus provide for children and youth?

"And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favor with God and man." Luke 2:52.

7. When He grew up to manhood what example of obedience to the will of God did Jesus set? "For I came down from heaven, not to do Mine own will, but the will of Him that sent Me." John 6: 38.

8. What spirit characterized His relations with others?

"A new commandment I give unto you, That you love one another; as I have loved you, that you also love one another." John 13: 34.

257. “Love is not only the finest fruit but it is the final test of a Christian life.” - S. D. Gordon in “Quiet Talks on Power,” page
9. How was Jesus’ life spent?
He “went about doing good.” Acts 10: 38.
 10. Even in childhood, how earnestly did He desire to do His Father’s service?
“And He said unto them, How is it that you sought Me? Know you not that I must be about My Father’s business?” Luke 2:49.
 11. When He entered upon His ministry, how burdened was Jesus to fulfil His appointed task?
“I must work the works of Him that sent Me, while it is day: the night comes, when no man can- work.” John 9: 4.
 12. How did Jesus exhort His disciples to unselfish service?
“Whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister: and whosoever of you will be the chief, shall be servant of all. For even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and, to give His life a ransom for many.” Mark 10:43-45.
 13. What supreme sacrifice was Jesus prepared to make on behalf of others?
“Who made Himself of no reputation, and took upon Him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: and being found in fashion as a man, He humbled Himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.” Philippians 2: 6-8.
 14. Ought we to be ready to make a similar sacrifice?
“Because He laid down His life for us: we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.” 1 John 3:16.
To “lay down our lives” does not necessarily mean martyrdom in the cause of Christ. It means rather the complete surrender of our lives for service where and how He wills.
 15. How did Paul beautifully express the goal of his life? “For to me to live is Christ.” Philippians 1: 2 1.
 16. What inward transformation does the apostle declare must be effected in order that the life of Christ may be visibly reproduced in us?
“Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus.” Philippians 2:5.
 17. As the life of Christ is reproduced in us what may we in turn become?
“Forasmuch as you are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart.” 2 Corinthians 3: 3.
 18. What is the ultimate goal of Christian living?
“Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ.” Ephesians 4:13.
 19. When may we expect fully to attain unto it?
“Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it does not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when He shall appear, we shall be like Him; for we shall see Him as He is.” 1 John 3:2.

Living by Faith

1. How only may we live a life which is pleasing to God?

“But without faith it is impossible to please Him: for he that comes to God must believe that He is, and that He rewards them that diligently seek Him.” Hebrews 11:6.

A mere intellectual belief in God is not faith. (James 2:19) As Dr. Ma’claren once said, “You may believe the thirty-nine or thirty-nine thousand articles and yet be as far from faith as if you did not believe, one of them. There may be a perfect belief and an absolute want of faith.” Faith is not merely belief in, but absolute confidence in and complete reliance upon God and His promises.

2. How is faith elsewhere defined? -

“Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen’.” Hebrews 11:1. “That quality in men which makes the future present and the unseen real.”-Dr. C. M. Chavasse.

3. From whom does faith come, and in whom is it consummated? “Looking unto Jesus the Author and Finisher of our faith.” Hebrews 12: 2.

4. Through what means is faith generated in the heart?

“So then faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the Word of God.” Romans 10:17.

5. Of what is faith also a fruit?

“But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith.” Galatians 5: 22.

6. What blessed deliverance does faith bring to the sinner?

“For by grace are you saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God.” Ephesians 2: 8.

7. What will by faith be reproduced in the life of the believer?

“And be found in Him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith.” Philippians 3:9.

“Obedience is the test of discipleship. It is the keeping ‘ of the commandments that proves the sincerity of our professions of love. When the doctrine we accept kills sin in the heart, purifies the soul from defilement, bears fruit unto holiness, we may know that it is the truth of God.” – E. G. White in “Mount of Blessing,” page 2 10.

8. How inseparable are true faith and godly living?

“But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? By works was faith made perfect.” James 2:20-22.

9. By what does the believer henceforth walk and labor?

“For we walk by faith, not by sight.” 2 Corinthians 5:7. “Remembering without ceasing your work of faith, and labor of love.” 1 Thessalonians 1: 3.

10. How may we be protected from the onslaughts of the enemy?

“Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith you shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.” Ephesians 6: 16. (See also 1 Thessalonians 5: 8.)

11. Is faith only a defensive weapon in the conflict with evil?

“For whatsoever, is born of God overcomes the world: and this is the victory that overcomes the world, even our faith.” 1 John 5: 4.

“The weakest man knows God is strong to do exploits. All the might of God awaits the disposal of our faith.” - F. B. Meyer.

12. What did the psalmist determine to do when fear crept into his heart? “What time I am afraid, I will trust in Thee.” Psalm 56: 3.

13. How sure was Paul of the keeping power of God?

“For the which cause I also suffer these things: nevertheless I am not ashamed: for I know whom I have believed, and am persuaded that He is, able to keep that which I have committed unto Him against that day.” 2 Timothy 1: 12.

14. How comprehensive are God’s promises to those who seek Him in faith? “Jesus said unto him, If thou can believe, all things are possible to him that believes.” Mark 9:23.

15. What will the testing and trying of our faith bring forth?

“That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perishes, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honor and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ.” 1 Peter 1:7.

16. How are those who will stand with Christ at His coming described? “They that are with Him are called, and chosen, and faithful.” Revelation 17: 14.

17. What sign of victory will be given to them in that day?

“I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith. Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love His appearing.” 2 Timothy 4: 7, 8.

Christian Growth

1. WHAT new life begins when ‘We yield to Christ?

“Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.” 2 Corinthians 5:17. “Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the Word of God.” 1 Peter 1:23.

“The Christian’s life is not a modification of the old, but a transformation of nature. There is a death to self and sin, and a new life altogether.” - E. G. White in “The Desire of Ages,” page 172.

2. How does Paul distinguish between the old and the new life of the child of God?

“But you are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you.” Romans 8: 9. “Seeing that you have put off the old man with his deeds; and have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of Him that created him.” Colossians 3: 9, 10.

3. By what is the new life of the babe in Christ nourished?

“As newborn, babes, desire the sincere milk- of the Word, that you may grow thereby.” 1 Peter 2:2.

4. What change of spiritual dietary becomes possible as growth proceeds?

“For everyone that uses milk is unskillful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe. But strong meat belongs to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.” Hebrews 5: 13, 14.

“Where Christ has given spiritual life, He will provide food for the support and nourishment of it unto life eternal, for He will never forsake, or be wanting to, the work of His own hands.” - Matthew Henry.

5. In what other way does Jesus describe our spiritual food?

“Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses -gave you not that bread from heaven; but My Father gives you the true bread from heaven.” “This is the bread which comes down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die.” John 6: 32, 50.

6. How pleasant should the child of God find this bread from heaven?

“Thy words were found, and I did eat them; and Thy word was unto me the joy and rejoicing of mine heart.” Jeremiah 15: 16.

7. Nourished by the Word what progress should he make from, day to day?

“They go from strength to strength, every one of them in Zion appears before God.” Psalm 84:7. “As you have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk you in Him: rooted and built up in Him, and established in the faith.” Colossians 2: 6, 7.

8. How does Paul describe the maturing of his own Christian experience?

“When I was a child, I spoke as a child, I understood as a child, ... but when I became a man, I put away childish things.” 1 Corinthians 13: 11.

9. What complaint, however, has he to make concerning certain of his converts?

“For when for the time you ought to be teachers, you have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat.” Hebrews 5:12 “I have fed you with milk, and not with meat. For hitherto you were not able to bear it, neither yet now are you able.” 1 Corinthians 3: 2.

10. What urgent advice does he give to such?

“Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection.” Hebrews 6: 1. “There is nothing so hostile to growth as this tendency to look backward to what one has been rather than forward to what one may be.” - E. T. Raymond.

11. In what two aspects should growth be particularly manifest?

Daily study of the Word of Life means daily growth.

“But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.” 2 Peter 3: 18.

12. How does Peter describe this Christian growth?

“And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge; and to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; and to patience godliness; and to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity.” 2 Peter 1: 5-7.

13. To what standard of maturity may we aspire?

“Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a Perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ.” Ephesians 4: 13. “But let patience have her perfect work, that you may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.” James 1: 4.

“A character formed according to the divine likeness is the only treasure that we can take from this world to the next.... How important, then, is the development of character in this life.” E. G. White in “Christ’s Object Lessons,” page 332.

Walking in the Light

1. WHAT is the condition of the sinner separated from God? “For you were sometimes darkness.” Ephesians 5: 8.

2. For what purpose was the gospel given? -

“To give light to them that, sit in darkness and in the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace.” Luke 1: 79.

3. How did Jesus, therefore, appropriately describe Himself?

“Then spoke Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the Light of the world.” John 8: 12.

“The first gleam of light that pierced the gloom in which sin had wrapped the world, came from Christ. And from Him has come every ray of heaven’s brightness that has fallen upon the inhabitants of the earth.”-E. G. White in “Patriarchs and Prophets,” page 367.

4. What prophecy was, fulfilled by His ministry?

“The people which sat in darkness saw great light; and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death light is sprung up.” Matthew 4: 16.

5. Has God provided any other light for the guidance of men? “Thy Word is a lamp unto my feet, and alight unto my path.” Psalm 119:105.

6. How does the Word illumine the life of those who receive it?

“The entrance of Thy words gives light; it gives understanding unto the simple.” Psalm 119:130.

7. What then is our responsibility to the light of truth?

“While you have light, believe in the light, that you may be the children of light.” John 12:36.

8. How will our desire for light be demonstrated?

“But he that does truth comes to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.” John 3: 21.

9. Why are the wicked condemned?

“And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.” John 3: 19.

10. What blessings does the light bring to those who receive it?

“But if we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin.” 1 John 1: 7.

11. What assurance is given to those who obediently walk in the light?

“He that follows Me [Jesus] shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.” John 8: 12. “Light is sown for the righteous, and gladness for the upright in heart.” Psalm 97: 11.

12. How will they in turn minister to a world still in darkness?

“You are the light of the world. Shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.” Matthew 5: 14-16.

13. On what conditions only, will God continue to grant increasing light?

“If you continue in My Word, then are you My disciples indeed; and you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.” - John 8:31,32.

14. What will be the result of falling to walk in new light as God reveals it?

“Then Jesus said unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you. Walk while you have the light, lest darkness come upon you: for he that walks in darkness knows not whither he goes.” John 12:35.

15. How vividly does the experience of Israel illustrate the withdrawal of light from those who refuse to walk in it?

“Therefore is judgment far from us, neither does justice overtake us: we wail, for light, but behold obscurity; for brightness, but we walk in darkness.” Isaiah 59: 9.

16. What special light will be given to the faithful in the last days?

“But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased.” Daniel 12: 4.

17. Where will the light of truth lead those who faithfully walk in it?

“But the path of the just is as the shining light, that shines more and more unto the Perfect day.” Proverbs 4:18.

18. In that day, what will be their final reward?

“And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever.” Daniel 12: 3.

“Freed from association with evil, they are touched with a new splendor caught from Him, and blaze out like the sun; their myriad glories melt as into a single great light. Now, amid gloom and cloud, they gleam like tiny tapers far apart; then, gathered into one, they flame in the forehead of the morning sky, a glorious church, not having spot, nor wrinkle, nor any such thing.” - Alexander Maclaren.

Bible Perfection

1. To what high standard of character is the believer called?

“Be you therefore Perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.” Matthew 5:48.

2. How does Paul define Christian perfection?

“That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.” 2 Timothy 3:17. “Now the God of peace make you perfect in every good work to do His will.” Hebrews 13:20,21.

3. What other term is used to describe the standard of character God demands in His children?

“But as He which has called you is holy, so be you holy in all manner of conversation; because it is written, Be you holy; for I am holy.” 1 Peter 1:15,16.

4. Why must this standard be reached?

“Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord.” Hebrews 12:14.

5. What is yet another designation of the goal of spiritual development? “For this is the will of God, even your sanctification.” 1 Thessalonians 4: 3.

6. Through whom is the work of perfecting or sanctification made possible?

“But of Him are you in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption.” 1 Corinthians 1: 30.

“He [Christ] came into the world to destroy the power, pardon the guilt, and cleanse from the pollution of sin. This was the very design of His manifestation in the flesh. He was born, suffered, and died for this very purpose; and can it be supposed that He either cannot or will not accomplish the object of His own coming?” - Dr. Adam Clarke.

7. By what particular act did Jesus provide for the sanctification of His followers?

“Wherefore Jesus also, that He might sanctify the people with His own blood, suffered, without -the gate.” Hebrews 13: 12.

8. How is the progressive sanctification of the believer effected?

a.By the Spirit. “Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit.” 1 Peter 1:2.

b.By the Word. “Sanctify them through Thy truth: Thy word is truth. And for their sakes I sanctify Myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.” John 17:17-19.

c.By the Ministry of the church. “And He gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; for the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ.” Ephesians 4: 11, 12.

9. What is the believer’s part in the work of sanctification?

“Work out your own salvation with fear and trembling. For it is God which works in you both to will and to do of His good pleasure.” Philippians 2:12,13.

10. By what statement does Paul indicate that there are stages of perfection on the way to the ultimate goal?

“Howbeit we speak wisdom among them that are Perfect: yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the princes of this world, that come to naught.” 1 Corinthians 2:6. “Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded.” Philippians 3:15.

11. Who else are described as being perfect in this relative sense?

“Noah was a just man and perfect in his generations.” Genesis 6: 9. “There was a man in the land of Uz, whose name was Job; and that man was perfect and upright.” Job 1.

12. What spiritual condition does relative perfection imply?

“And herein do I exercise myself, to have always a conscience void of offence toward God, and toward men.” Acts 24: 16.

13. While claiming perfection in this limited sense what possibilities does Paul still admit in his own experience?

“Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect.” Philippians 3:12.

14. To what, therefore, does he resolutely set himself?

“Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.” Philippians 3: 13, 14.

15. How is constant progress toward higher levels of perfection maintained?

“But who keeps His word, in him verily is the love of God perfected.” 1 John. 2:5. “Let patience have her perfect work, that you may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.” James A: 4. “Above all things put on charity, which is the bond of perfection.” Colossians 3: 14.

16. Can any claim in this life to have attained unto absolute sinlessness? “If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.” 1 John 1: 8.

17. What will always be possible ‘while we are in the flesh’?

“But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.” 2 Peter 3: 18.

18. What retrogression is certain if we fail to maintain our standing in Christ?

“Wherefore let him that thinks he stands take heed lest he fall.” 1 Corinthians 10:12. “Every one of you should know how to possess his vessel in sanctification and honor.” 1 Thessalonians 4:4.

19. By whose aid is the maintenance and development of our experience assured?

“Now unto Him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of His glory with exceeding joy.” Jude 1:24. “Being confident of this very thing, that He which has begun a good work in you will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ.” Philippians 1: 6.

20. To what standard of perfection must we attain by faith before the Lord comes?

“And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.” 1 Thessalonians 5: 23. “Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a Perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ.” Ephesians 4:13.

“The high-water mark of Christ’s wonders is touched in this fact, that out of men He makes saints, and out of saints He makes men to be wondered at, likeness of Himself.” - Alexander Maclaren.

21. How enduring will be the perfection attained in Christ?

“For by one offering He has perfected for ever them that are sanctified.” Hebrews 10:14.

22. In what prayer of the Apostle Peter should we therefore desire to be included?

“But the God of grace, who has called us unto His eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that you have suffered awhile, make you Perfect.” 1 Peter 5:10.

Joy comes back into the life of the returned prodigal.

Joy in the Lord

1. WHEREIN do the wicked vainly seek happiness?

a. Possessions. “They spend their days in wealth, and in a moment go down to the grave.” Job 21:13.

b. Sensual pleasures. “Come you, say they, I will fetch wine, and we will fill ourselves with strong drink; and tomorrow shall be as this day, and much more abundant.” Isaiah 56:12.

2. How transient, however, is the happiness of the wicked?

“The triumphing of the wicked is short, and the joy of the hypocrite but for a moment.” Job 20:5.

3. Where do the pleasures of sin invariably end?

“There is a way which seems right unto a man but the end thereof are the ways of death. Even in laughter the heart is sorrowful; and the end of that mirth is heaviness.” Proverbs 14:12,13.

4. By contrast, what does God offer to those who come to Him?

“They shall be abundantly satisfied with the fatness of Thy house; and Thou shall make them drink of the river of Thy pleasures.” Psalm 36: 8.

5. How does the joy of the Lord compare with the pleasures of temporal prosperity?

“Thou has put gladness in my heart, more than in the time that their corn and their wine increased.” Psalm 4:7.

6. What emotion did the knowledge of salvation evoke in the psalmist?

“And my soul shall be joyful in the Lord: it shall rejoice in His salvation.” Psalm 35:9.

7. How does Isaiah similarly testify to the joy of salvation?

“I will greatly rejoice in the Lord, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for He has clothed me with the garments of salvation.” Isaiah 61:10.

8. Mention two striking New Testament examples of joy brought by the gospel message.

The Ethiopian eunuch. “And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the eunuch saw him no more: and he went on his way rejoicing.” Acts 8:39.

The Philippian gaoler. “And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoiced, believing in God with all his house.” Acts 16:34.

Describing Christian’s experience on losing his burden at the cross, John Bunyan says in “Pilgrim’s Progress”: “Then was Christian glad and lightsome, and said with a merry heart, He hath given me rest by His sorrow and life by His death. Then Christian gave three leaps of joy, and went on his way singing.”

9. What did Jesus declare His words would do for His disciples?

“These things have I spoken unto you, that My joy might remain in you, and that your-joy might be full.” John 15:11.

10. How inexpressible does Peter declare the believer’s joy in Christ to be?

“Whom having not seen, you love; in whom, though now you see Him not, yet believing, you rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory.” 1 Peter 1:8.

“For sixty long, happy years,” testified George Muller of Bristol, “I have had Him with me, and I am a happy man. Oh, the blessedness and happiness of it is unspeakable!”

11. What state of heart does righteousness bring with it?

“Light is sown for the righteous, and gladness for the upright in heart. Rejoice in the Lord, you righteous; and give thanks at the remembrance of His holiness.” Psalm 97:11,12.

“Happiness is not in willfulness and unbridled license, but in subjection to a law, holy, approved, and willingly accepted. Christ’s is the perfect law of liberty, and where this prevails and reigns there is peace and joy; for there freedom and obedience are one, yoked together by spiritual and most welcome bonds.” J. R. Thomson.

12. Beside joy in the Lord, what other source of happiness do believers experience? “Behold, how good and how pleasant it is for brethren to dwell together in unity!” Psalm 133:1.

13. How was this manifested in the life of the early church?

“And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart.” Acts 2:46.

14. What joy also came to the disciples through service for Jesus?

“And the Word of the Lord was published throughout all the region.... And the disciples were filled with joy, and with the Holy Ghost.” Acts 13:49-52.

15. In what did Paul find his chief happiness?

“For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoicing? Are not even you in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at His coming? For you are our glory and joy.” 1 Thessalonians 2:19,20.

16. How should we feel when we are called upon to share the sufferings of Christ?

“If you be reproached for the name of Christ, happy are you; for the spirit of glory and of God rests upon you: on their part He is evil spoken of, but on your part He is glorified.” 1 Peter 4:14.

17. By what are the redeemed sustained in all the experiences of life?

“By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God.” Romans 5:2.

18. What emotion will the Lord’s return arouse in believers?

“And it shall be said in that day, Lo, this is our God; we have waited for Him, and He will save us: this is the Lord; we have waited for Him, we will be glad and rejoice in His salvation.” Isaiah 25:9.

19. With what joy will Jesus in turn present us to the Father?

“Now unto Him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of His glory with exceeding joy.” Jude 1:24.

20. And in what will God Himself rejoice?

“And I will rejoice in Jerusalem, and joy in My people.” Isaiah 65: 19.

21. Into what will the faithful at last be invited to enter?

“His lord said unto him Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou has been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.” Matthew 25:21.

22. How will the saints feel as they receive their promised inheritance?

“And the ransomed of the Lord shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away.” Isaiah 35:10.

23. With what demonstrations will the heavens and the earth associate themselves with the joy of the redeemed?

“The wilderness and the solitary place shall be glad for them; and the desert shall rejoice, and blossom as the rose. It shall blossom abundantly, and rejoice even with joy and singing: the glory of Lebanon shall be given unto it, the excellency of Carmel and Sharon, they shall see the glory of the Lord, and the excellency of our God.” Isaiah 35:1,2.

24. How enduring will be the joys of the kingdom?
“At Thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore.” Psalm 16: 11.

Enduring to the End

1. IN what way does Peter emphasize that the calling and election of believers is not irrevocable?
“Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure.” 2 Peter 1:10.

2. How only can we be assured of the reward of faith?

“For we are made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence steadfast unto the end.” Hebrews 3:14.

“Not he that takes the field, but he that keeps it, not he that sets out, but he that holds out, deserves the name of saint.” D. L.

Moody.

3. What therefore constitutes the greatest tragedy in Christian experience?

“Let us therefore fear, lest, a promise being left us of entering into His rest, any of you should seem to come short of it.”

Hebrews 4:1.

“Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life,” was the precious assurance to the Christian martyrs from their resurrected Lord.

“He only who endures to the end shall be saved. Of no avail will it be to have entered on the way of righteousness, if we turn from it. The rewards of heaven are not secured to any individual by an immutable decree. Through the mercy of God and the merits of a Savior, they are conferred only on those who do His commandments; and when we cease to do His commandments, we forfeit our title to these rewards.” - Bishop Hobart.

4. How near to and yet how far from the kingdom was one young man?

“Then Jesus beholding him loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lacks: and he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved for he had great possessions.” Mark 10:21,22.

5. In order to receive the reward of faithfulness in what must we continue?

a. Grace. “Now when the congregation was broken up, many of the Jews and religious proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas: who, speaking to them, persuaded them to continue in the grace of God.” Acts 13:43.

b. Faith. “If you continue in the faith grounded and settled, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which you have heard, and which was preached to every creature which is under heaven.” Colossians 1:23.

c. Love. “As the Father has loved Me, so- have I loved you: continue you in My love.” John 15:9.

d. Well-doing. “And let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.” Galatians 6:9.

6. What example of spiritual perseverance did the Apostle Paul set?

“Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus.” Philippians 3:12.

7. In what other ways are we urged patiently to endure?

a. Temptation. “Blessed is the man that endures temptation.” James 1:12. “Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ.” 2 Timothy 2:3.

b. Affliction. “Take, my brethren, the prophets, who have spoken in the name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience.” James 5:10.

“There will, of course, be difficulties in all our lives to impede our heavenward progress; difficulties from the opposition of our foes; difficulties from within our own hearts. We shall need patience and long forbearance as we tread our appointed track.” F. B. Meyer in “The Way into the Holiest,” page 212.

8. Who is our crowning example of steadfast endurance of affliction?

“Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. For consider Him that endured such contradiction of sinners against Himself, lest you be wearied and faint in your minds. You have not yet resisted unto blood, striving against sin.” Hebrews 12:2-4.

9. What provision has been made whereby we may endure and prevail?

a. Power of God and of Christ through faith. “Who are kept by the Power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.” 1 Peter 1: 5. “Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through Him that loved us.” Romans 8:37.

b. Spiritual armor. “Wherefore take unto you the whole armor of God, that you may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand.” Ephesians 6:13.

10. What knowledge should further stir us to steadfastness?

The Bible stories of faith and courage “are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come.” Daniel 3, 1 Corinthians 10:11.

“Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering; (for He is faithful that promised).” Hebrews 10: 23.

“Let us remember that the course is set before us by our heavenly Father, who therefore knows all its roughness and straitness, and will make all grace abound toward us, sufficient for our need. To do His will is rest and heaven.”-F. B. Meyer in “The Way into the Holiest,” page 212.

11. What blessed promises should encourage us patiently to endure?

a.Christ has overcome before us. "In the world you shall have tribulation: but he of good cheer; I have overcome the world." John 16: 33.

b.His aid will ever be at hand. "Be strong and of a good courage: The Lord, He it is that does go before thee; He will be with thee, He will not fall thee, neither forsake thee: fear not, neither be dismayed." Deuteronomy 31:7,8.

"Above all, remember that where you tread there your Lord once trod, combating your difficulties and sorrows, though without sin; . . . keep your eye fixed, then, on Him as He stands to welcome and reward you. And struggle through all, animated by His smile, and attracted to His side, and you will find weights and unbelief dropping off almost insensibly and of themselves." F. B. Meyer in "The Way into the Holiest," page 213.

12. What confidence had Paul of the keeping power of the Lord?

"For the which cause I also suffer these things: nevertheless I am not ashamed: for I know whom I have believed, and am persuaded that He is able to keep that which I have committed unto Him against that day." 2 Timothy 1:12.

13. What present joy is there in patient continuance?

"Behold, we count them happy which endure." James 5:11.

14. What will the prize of perseverance include?

a.Eternal salvation. "But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved." Matthew 24:13.

b.Eternal life. "To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honor and immortality, eternal life." Romans 2: 7. (See also James 1: 12.)

c.Association with Christ in His throne. "To him that overcomes will I grant to sit with Me in My throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with My Father in His throne." Revelation 3:21. "We are made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence steadfast unto the end." Hebrews 3:14.

d.Stewardship in the kingdom. "His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou has been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord." Matthew 25: 23.

e.Every blessing of the kingdom. "He that overcomes shall inherit all things." Revelation 21:7

10. Why Death And Suffering?

Is God Responsible?

1.WHAT law of cause and effect operates throughout all creation? "Whatsoever a man sows, that shall he also reap."

Galatians 6:7.

2.How does this principle work out in connection with man's moral nature?

"For he that sows to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that sows to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting." Galatians 6:8.

3. What, therefore, is the explanation of many of the judgments of God?

"Why cry thou for your affliction? Thy sorrow is incurable for the multitude of your iniquity: because thy sins were increased, I have done these things unto thee." Jeremiah 30:15.

4. Have sinners any grounds for complaint when God allows judgments to come upon them?

"Wherefore does a living man complain, a man for the punishment of his sins? Let us search and try our ways, and turn again to the Lord." Lamentations 3:39,40.

5. What confession does the psalmist make as to the righteousness of God's judgments? "I know, O Lord, that Thy judgments are right, and that Thou in faithfulness has afflicted me. Psalm 119:75.

6. Is God's, judgment of sin, however, vindictive or arbitrary?

"For He does not afflict willingly, nor grieve the children of men." Lamentations 3:33.

7. What evidence is there of this in the relation between God's judgments and man's deserts?

a.They are far less than we deserve. "And after all that is come upon us for our evil deeds, and for our great trespass, seeing that Thou our God has punished us less than our iniquities deserve." Ezra 9:13.

b.They are often mercifully withheld. "But He, being full of compassion, forgave their iniquity, and destroyed them not: yes, many a time turned He His anger away, and did not stir up all His wrath." Psalm 78:38.

c.His anger endures but a moment. "For His anger endured but a moment; in His favor is life: weeping may endure for a night, but joy comes in the morning." Psalm 3 0: 5.

8. To what does God compare His Judgments?

"Thou shall also consider in your heart, that, as a man chastened his son, so the Lord thy God chastened thee." Deuteronomy 8:5.

9. From what does the Lord desire through affliction to save us?

"But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world." 1 Corinthians 11:32.

10. What does He intend His judgments to accomplish?

“And testified against them, that Thou might bring them again unto Thy law.” Nehemiah 9:29. “For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but He for our profit, that we might be partakers of His holiness.” Hebrews 12:10.

11. How carefully are God’s judgments tempered to achieve His purpose?

“I will not make a full end of thee, but correct thee in measure; yet will I not leave thee wholly unpunished.” Jeremiah 46:28.

“Thus always—the rod, the stripes, the chastisements; but amid all, the love of God, carrying out His redemptive purpose, never hastening, never resting, never forgetting, but making all things work together till the evil is eliminated, and the soul purged.” F. B. Meyer, in “David,” page 182.

12. What salutary effect had affliction upon the psalmist?

“Before I was afflicted I went astray: but now have I kept Thy Word.” Psalm 119: 67.

13. What other examples do the Scriptures provide of affliction bringing sinners to repentance?

a. Jonah. “Then Jonah prayed unto the Lord his God out of the fish’s belly, and said, I cried by reason of mine affliction unto the Lord, and He heard me; out of the belly of hell cried I, and Thou heard my voice.” Jonah 2:1,2.

b. Manasseh. “And when he was in affliction, he besought the Lord his God, and humbled himself greatly before the God of his fathers, and prayed unto Him: and He was entreated of him, and heard his supplication, and brought him again to Jerusalem into his kingdom. Then Manasseh knew that the Lord He was God.” 2 Chronicles 33:12,13.

c. Nebuchadnezzar. “And at the end of the days I Nebuchadnezzar lifted up mine eyes unto heaven, and mine understanding returned unto me, and I blessed the Most High, and I praised and honored Him that lives for ever, whose dominion is an everlasting dominion, and His kingdom is from generation to generation.” Daniel 4:34.

14. How did many in Israel respond to the judgment meted out to the nation?

“When He slew them, then they sought Him: and they returned and inquired early after God. And they remembered that God was their Rock, and the high God their Redeemer.” Psalm 78:34,35.

15. How obdurate, however, was the nation as a whole to the remedial judgments of God?

“For the people turned not unto Him that smites them, neither do they seek the Lord of hosts.” Isaiah 9:13.

16. What did the prophets declare God would do to Israel because they responded not to His chastening? “My God will cast them a-way, because they did not hearken unto Him.” Hosea 9:17.

“Those that hate to be refined by the fire of divine grace will undoubtedly be ruined by the fire of divine wrath.” - Matthew

Henry.

17. What lesson are we intended to learn from Israel’s obduracy and fate?

“And all men shall fear, and shall declare the work of God; for they shall wisely consider of His doing.” Psalm 64:9.

18. How should we regard the chastening of the Lord?

“My son, despise not the chastening of the Lord; neither be weary of His correction.” Proverbs 3:11. “While the marble wastes, the image grows.” - Michelangelo.

19. What response should His remedial judgments produce in our lives?

“As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.” Revelation 3:19.

20. With the psalmist what confession should affliction evoke from us?

“It is good for me that I have been afflicted; that I might learn Thy statutes.” Psalm 119:71.

Why Do the Innocent Suffer?

1. BY what examples did Jesus show that while much suffering is the result of individual sin, it may often come upon the innocent?

a. Natural disasters. “Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think you that they were sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem?” Luke 13:4.

b. Physical affliction. “Jesus answered, Neither has this man sinned, nor his parents.” John 9:3.

c. Injustice. I here were present at that season some that told Him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. And Jesus answering said unto them, Suppose you that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such things?” Luke 13:1,2.

“Man has much more to dread from the passions of his fellow creatures than from the convulsions of the elements.” - Gibbon.

2. Why is nature often an enemy to man rather than a friend?

“Cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shall thou eat of it all the days of thy life; thorns also, and thistles shall it bring forth to thee.” Genesis 3:17,18.

3. What explanation does Paul offer for natural calamities?

“For we know that the whole creation groans and travailed in pain together until now.” Romans 8:22.

4. What divine purpose is there in the permitted derangement of nature?

“For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of Him who has subjected the same in hope.” - Romans 8: 20.

5. How do the beneficent laws of nature, through sin, bring suffering on the innocent?

a.Cause and effect. "Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man sowed, that shall he [and often other innocent ones] also reap." Galatians 6:7. (See also 2 Corinthians 9:6.)

b.Heredity. "The Lord is longsuffering, and of great mercy, forgiving iniquity and transgression, and by no means clearing the guilty, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation." Numbers 14:18.

"When we analyze most of the things which we call calamity, we find that they are due to human ignorance or human folly or human sin, not possibly in the person who suffers, but caused by some member of the great human family." - Revelation Leslie Weatherhead.

6. How did the prophet Habakkuk reveal his perplexity at the suffering of the innocent at the hands of wicked men?

"Thou art of purer eyes than to behold evil, and can not look on iniquity: wherefore look Thou upon them that deal treacherously, and boldest Thy tongue when the wicked devoured the man that is more righteous than he?" Habakkuk 1:13.

7. Is God indifferent to their affliction?

"Who mocked the poor reproached his Maker: and he that is glad at calamities shall not be unpunished." Proverbs 17:5.

8. Why, then, have not the oppressors been cut off ere now?

"The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance." 2 Peter 3:9.

9. While deliverance from oppression may tarry, what does the Lord invite innocent sufferers to do?

"Come unto Me, all you that labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest." Matthew 11:28. "Cast thy burden upon the Lord, and He shall sustain thee: He shall never suffer the righteous to be moved." Psalm 55:22.

10. How does God reveal the intensity of His sympathy for the afflicted?

"As one whom his mother comforts, so will I comfort you; and you shall be comforted in Jerusalem." Isaiah 66:13. (See also Isaiah 49:15.)

11. What promise of strength to endure does He make to the afflicted and distressed?

"He gives Power to the faint; and to them that have no might He increases strength." Isaiah 40:29.

"I never try to explain evil. When people ask me for an explanation of suffering, I tell them that I have none. But I tell them that I have a power which can conquer suffering."-Dr. Maude Royden in "A Plain Man Seeks for God," page 195.

12. What testimony does the psalmist bear to the Lord's help in affliction?

"Unless the Lord had been my help, my soul had almost dwelt in silence." Psalm 94:17. "In my distress I called upon the Lord, and cried unto my God: He heard my voice out of His temple, and my cry came before Him, even into His ears." Psalm 18:6.

13. How confident was he of God's care for all who seek Him in trouble?

"The Lord also will be a refuge, for the oppressed, a refuge in times of trouble." Psalm 9:9.

14. How long will He permit the wicked to continue to oppress and the innocent to suffer?

"Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather you together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into My barn." Matt 13: 30.

15. In what mood will the oppressed believer await final deliverance from the oppressor?

"Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waits for the precious fruit of the earth, and has long patience for it, until he receive the early and latter rain. Be you also patient; establish your hearts: for the coming of the Lord draws nigh." James 5:7,8.

16. Into what will their sorrow then be turned?

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, That you shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and you shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy." "And you now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man takes from you." John 16: 20, 22.

17. What other changes will accompany the elimination of moral evil?

a.Elimination of all physical affliction. "Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped. Then shall the lame man leap as an hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing." Isaiah 35:5,6.

b.Restoration of nature. "Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God." Romans 8:21. "For behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind." Isaiah 65:17. (See also Revelation 21:1)

18. What will be the most convincing evidence of the complete elimination of suffering from nature and from the experience of mankind?

"And God shall wipe away all tears, from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away." Revelation 21:4.

19. How will the ills of this life compare with the glory of the restored earth and humanity?

"For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us." Romans 8:18. (See also 2 Corinthians 4: 17, 18.)

The Divine Refiner

1.To what strange experience of the righteous does the psalmist draw attention?

“Many are the afflictions of the righteous.” Psalm 34:19.

“If we think to return to God merely that He may make the world safe and comfortable for us the call will be a failure.”
Canon Peter Green, MA, in “The Christian Man.”

2. For what valuable purpose are trials permitted?

“Behold, I have refined thee, but not with silver; I have chosen thee in the furnace of affliction.” Isaiah 48:10.

3. By what other illustration does Jesus reveal the purpose of trials?

“Every branch in Me that bears not fruit, He takes away: and every branch that bears fruit, He purges it, that it may bring forth more fruit.” John 15:2.

4. For what reason was Paul given a “thorn in the flesh”?

“And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me.” 2 Corinthians 12: 7.

5. Until he understood this how earnestly did he plead for release from his affliction? “For this thing I besought the Lord ‘thrice, that it might depart from me.” 2 Corinthians 12: 8.

6. What reply did Paul receive from the Lord?

“And He said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for My strength is made perfect in weakness.” 2 Corinthians 12: 9.

“God often lets His people reach the shore as on the planks of a shipwrecked vessel. He deprives us of the cistern, in order to make us drink out of the fountains of waters. He frequently takes away our supports, not that we may fall to the ground, but that He may Himself become our rod and our staff. The embarrassments of His people are only the festive scaffoldings on which His might, His faithfulness, and, His mercy, celebrate their triumphs.” Dr. F. W. Krummacher.

7. When he saw that it was for his good, how resigned was he to his affliction?

“Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me.” 2 Corinthians 12:9.

8. What other salutary effect do trials have upon the heart?

“Knowing this, that the trying of your faith works Patience.” James 1:3.

9. In whose experience is this strikingly illustrated?

“You have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord; that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy.” James 5:11.

10. How resigned was Job to his affliction?

“Though He slay me, yet will I trust in Him.” Job 13: 15.

11. What confidence had he as to the outcome?

“But He knows the way that I take when He has tried me, I shall come forth as gold.” Job 23:10,12.

12. What did Jesus learn through suffering?

“Though He were a Son, yet learned He obedience by the things which He suffered.” Hebrews 5:8.

13. What will trials also produce in the believer’s experience?

“Now no chastening for the present seems to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yields the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.” Hebrews 12:11.

14. To what exalted experience was Jesus raised through suffering?

“For it became Him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation Perfect through sufferings.” Hebrews 2:10.

15. What will be the effect in us of trials patiently borne?

“But the God of all grace, who has called us unto His eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that you have suffered a while, make you perfect, establish, strengthen, settle you.” 1 Peter 5:10.

“Most of the grand truths of God have to be learned by trouble; they must be burned into us with-the hot iron of affliction otherwise we shall not truly receive them.” - C. H. Spurgeon.

16. How then should we relate ourselves to the testing of our faith?

a. Not question. “The Lord gave, and the Lord has taken away; blessed be the name of the Lord.” Job 1:21.

b. Endure in patience. “Rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer.” Romans 12:12.

17. Of whose sympathy may we be assured in trial?

“Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort. Who comforted us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God.” 2 Corinthians 1:3,4.

Richard Baxter truly says, “He leads us through no darker rooms than He went through before.”

18. What does Jesus also extend to the afflicted?

a. Understanding sympathy. “For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin.” Hebrews 4:15.

b. Loving aid. “And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan has desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat: but I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not.” Luke 22:31,32.

19. What control does God exercise over the trials which He permits us to pass through?

“When thou passes through the waters, I will be with thee; and through the rivers, they shall not overflow thee: when thou walked through the fire, thou shall not be burned; neither shall the flame kindle upon thee.” Isaiah 43:2.

“God knows when to bring trouble and when to take it away.” - Dr. Parker.

20. Of what, therefore⁹ may we be confident?

“And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to His purpose.” Romans 8:28.

21. What will be their glorious outcome?

“That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perishes, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honor and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ.” 1 Peter 1:7.

“So the righteous flourish under their burdens; the more they are afflicted, the more they multiply.” - Matthew Henry.

22. By what were Christ’s sufferings crowned?

“Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into His glory?” Luke 24:26.

23. How will the patient endurance of the saints be rewarded when Jesus comes?

“Blessed is the man that endures temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord has promised to them that love Him.” James 1:12.

Suffering for Christ’s Sake

1. What did Jesus warn His disciples to expect?

“In the world you shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.” John 16: 33.

2. Through what experience must we pass to attain unto the kingdom?

“Confirming the souls of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that we must through muck, tribulation enter into the kingdom of God.” Acts 14:22.

3. Are we then to be surprised when trials come?

“Beloved, think- it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you.” “For even hereunto were you called.” 1 Peter 4:12; 2:21.

4. With whom should we be willing to associate in suffering?

“Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted Me, they will also persecute you.” John 15: 20.

“The cross is the ground plan of the universe; and the way of the cross for all followers of the Crucified is ‘the only pathway from illusion to reality,’ the one way of life and peace.” - A Correspondent in the Hibbert Journal.

5. Who is the instigator of the persecution of the righteous?

“Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walks about, seeking ‘whom he may devour.’” 1 Peter 5: 8.

6. What motives impel the wicked to persecute the righteous?

a. Guilty conscience. “Cain, who was of that wicked one, slew his brother. And wherefore slew he him? Because his own works were evil, and his brother’s righteous.” 1 John 3:12. “Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.” 2 Timothy, 3: 12.

b. Antagonism of the flesh to the spirit. “But as then he that was born after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, even so it is now.” Galatians 4: 29.

c. Perverted religion. “The time comes, that whosoever kills you will think that he does God service.” John 16:2.

“The death sentence is a necessary and efficacious means for the church to attain its end when rebels against it and disturbers of the ecclesiastical unity especially obstinate heretics and heresies, cannot be restrained by any other penalty from continuing to, disturb the ecclesiastical order and impelling others to all sorts of crime, particularly ecclesiastical crime.” – “The Popes and Their Church,” Volume 1, page 143.

“The gospel will not admit of coercion for the propagation and establishment of its doctrines. It is a spiritual system, and can be propagated only by spiritual influence. As it proclaims holiness of heart and life, which nothing but the Spirit of God can produce, so it is the Spirit of God alone that can persuade the understanding and change the heart. If the kingdom of Christ were of this world, then would His servants fight. But it is not from hence.” Dr. Adam Clarke.

7. What example of fortitude in persecution has Jesus set us?

“Because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that you should follow His steps: who, when He was reviled, reviled not again; when He suffered, He threatened not; but committed Himself to Him that judges righteously.” 1 Peter 2:21-23.

8. In what spirit, therefore, are we urged to meet persecution?

“Rejoicing in hope; Patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer.” Romans 12:12.

9. What other examples of patient endurance do the Scriptures provide?

“Take, my brethren, the Prophets, who have spoken in the name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of Patience.” James 5:10.

10. How is the believer bound to be temporarily affected by tribulation?

“And I said, Oh that I had wings like-a dove! for then would I fly away, and be at rest.” Psalm 55:6.

11. To what depths of despondency did even the Savior momentarily come in His affliction?

“And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is to say, My God, My God, why has Thou forsaken Me?” Matthew 27:46.

12. What emotion, however, will triumph over transitory heaviness of spirit?

“Rejoice you in that day, and leap for joy: for, behold, your reward is great in heaven: for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets.” Luke 6:23.

13. By what knowledge was Christ buoyed up in His terrible sufferings?

“He shall see of the travail of His soul, and shall be satisfied: by His knowledge shall My righteous Servant justify many; for He shall bear their iniquities.” Isaiah 53:11.

14. What aspiration enabled Paul to suffer with fortitude in the cause of the gospel?

“But none of these things move me, neither count my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the gospel of the grace of God.” Acts 20: 24.

15. What example did Paul set of joy in tribulation?

“Therefore I take Pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christ’s sake: for when I am weak, then am I strong.” 2 Corinthians 12:10.

“Be of good comfort, Master Ridley; play the man; we shall this day light such a candle, by God’s grace, in England, as I trust shall never be put out.” - Bishop Latimer at the stake.

“How good it is that the old truths remain firm, that the Rock stands and will continue unshaken amid all the things that are against us! Let us not be impatient.”-Pastor Niemoller in a letter to his wife from a concentration camp.

16. How does God promise to sustain those who suffer for His sake?

“Strengthened with all might, according to His glorious power, unto all patience and longsuffering with joyfulness.” Colossians 1:11

17. What will it be our privilege to share in the day of Christ’s triumph?

“If we suffer, we shall also reign with Him: if we deny Him, He also will deny us.” 2 Timothy 2:12.

“Christ’s people shall never be entirely forsaken. Though sorely harassed, they shall not be destroyed. Though cast down they shall not be cast away. At the darkest time let true Christians rest in the thought, that ‘greater is He who is for them than all they that be against them.’ The winds and waves of political and ecclesiastical trouble may beat fiercely over them, and all hope may seem taken away. But still let them not despair. There is One living for them in heaven, who can make these winds and waves to cease in a moment. The true church, of which Christ is the Head, shall never perish. Its glorious Head is almighty, and lives for evermore, and His believing members shall all live also, and reach home safe at last.” - Bishop Ryle.

18. Among what glorious company shall we have a place?

“And he said unto me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve Him day and night in His temple: and He that sits on the throne shall dwell among them.” Revelation 7:14,15.

19. What eternal reward will be ours if faithful?

“Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness’ sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.” Matthew 5:10. (See also verses 11 and 12.)

11. The Privilege of Prayer

1. WHAT invitation to communion does God extend to man?

“Draw nigh to God, and He will draw nigh to you.” James 4:8. “Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and you shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: for every one that asks receives; and he that seeks finds; and to him, that knocks it shall be opened.” Matthew 7: 7, 8.

“All true prayer is a rising up and a drawing nearer to God in mind, and in heart, and in spirit.”-Dr. Alexander Whyte.

2. Of what may we be assured as we approach Him in prayer? “O Thou that hears prayer, unto Thee shall all flesh come.” Psalm 65:2.

3. What attitude do the wicked take to the privilege of prayer?

“What is the Almighty, that we should serve Him? And what profit should we have, if we pray unto Him?” Job 21:15.

4. To whom do many in ignorance make their petitions?

“They have no knowledge that set up the wood of their graven image, and pray unto a god that cannot save.” Isaiah 45: 20.

5. In contrast with the wicked, how did the psalmist respond to God’s invitation to communion? “When Thou said, Seek you My face my heart said unto Thee, Thy face, Lord, will I seek.” Psalm 27:8.

6. How appreciative was he of the privilege of prayer?

“But it is good for me to draw near to God: I have put my trust in the Lord God, that I may declare all Thy works.” Psalm 73: 28.

7. What will the Lord be to all who seek Him?

“For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon Him.”
Romans 10:12.

8. How does God’s willingness to hear and answer compare with the readiness of earthly parents?

“If you then, being evil, know how to give good gift unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask Him?” Matthew 7:11.

9. Is God ever grudging in His answers to our prayers?

“If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that gives to all men liberally and upbraids not; and it shall be given him.”
James 1:5.

10. How fully will He satisfy the desire of our hearts?

“And this is the confidence that we have in Him, that, if we ask anything according to His will, He hears us: and if we know that He hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of Him.” 1 John 5: 14, 15.

11. Is it possible for us to overtax His capacity to give?

“Now unto Him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that works in us.” Ephesians 3:20.

12. What personal testimony does the psalmist bear concerning God’s answers to his own prayers?

“I sought the Lord, and He heard me, and delivered me from all my fears. This poor man cried, and the Lord heard him, and saved him out of all his troubles.” Psalm 34:4-6.

“Prayer is a fact of experience, and through all the ages the testimony of those who prayed has been that God hears and answers the prayers of His children.” - Samuel Chadwick in “The Path to Prayer,” page 10.

13. On occasions, how immediate is the Lord’s response to the prayers of His children?

“And it shall come to pass, that before they call, I will answer; and while they are yet speaking, I will hear.” Isaiah 65:24.

14. What complaint, however, did the psalmist at one time make to God?

“O my God, I cry in the daytime, but Thou hears not; and in the night season, and am not silent.” - Psalm 22:2.

15. What confession, however, was he led to make?

“For I said in my haste, I am cut off from before Your eyes: nevertheless Thou heard the voice of my supplications when I cried unto Thee.” Psalm 31:22.

16. What had he learned to do?

“I waited patiently for the Lord; and He inclined unto me, and heard my cry.” Psalm 40:1.

17. Of what may we be fully assured concerning the Lord’s help?

“Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.”
Hebrews 4:16.

18. What should God’s answers to prayer evoke from us?

a. Love. “I love the Lord, because He has heard my voice and my supplications.” Psalm 116:1.

b. Praise. “I will Praise Thee: for Thou has heard me, and art become my salvation.” Psalm 118:21.

How to Pray

1. WHAT counsel does Jesus give to those who seek communion with God in prayer?

“When thou prays, enter into thy closet, and when thou has shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which sees in secret shall reward thee openly.” Matthew 6:6.

Corporate prayer has its definite value, emphasizing the fellowship of believers at the throne of grace, but it is no substitute for personal private prayer. “In private prayer,” says Samuel Chadwick, “the soul stands naked and alone in the presence of God.” – “The Path of Prayer,” page 26.

2. How we show reverence when approaching God in prayer?

“For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.” Ephesians 3:14. “O come, let us worship and bow down: let us kneel before the Lord our Maker.” Psalm 95:6.

3. What, however, is more important than the physical posture?

“Let us lift up our heart with our hands unto God in the heavens.” Lamentations 3:41. (See also 1 Chronicles 22:19.)

4. In whose name should our petitions be made to God?

“And whatsoever you shall ask in My name, that will I do’ that the Father may be glorified in the Son. If you shall ask anything in My name, I will do it.” John 14: 13, 14.

“To pray in Christ’s name means something more than adding ‘for Christ’s sake’ to our petitions. To pray in the name of Christ is to pray as one who is at one with Christ, whose mind is the mind of Christ, whose desires are the desires of Christ and whose purpose is at one with that of Christ.” - Samuel Chadwick in “The Path of Prayer,” page 52.

5. What help are we promised in making our -petitions to God?

“Likewise the Spirit also helps our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself makes intercession for us with groaning which cannot be uttered. And He that searches the hearts knows what is the mind of the Spirit, because He makes intercession for the saints according to the will of God.” Romans 8:26,27.

6. What are the essential conditions of effectual prayer?

a. Faith. “And all things, whatsoever you shall ask in prayer, believing, you shall receive.” Matthew 21:22.

b. Readiness to obey the will of God. “The eyes of the Lord are upon the righteous, and His ears are open unto their cry.”

Psalm 34:15.

7. On the other hand, what will prevent God from hearing our prayers?

a. Cherished sin. “If I regard iniquity in my heart, the Lord will not hear me.” Psalm 66:18. (See also Isaiah 59:1-3.)

b. Unholy desires. “You ask, and receive not, because you ask amiss, that you may consume it upon your lusts.” James 4:3.

8. What test does the Lord often apply before answering prayer? “He rewards them that diligently seek Him.” Hebrews 11:6.

9. With what determination did Jacob seek to gain an answer to his prayer?

“And He said, Let Me go, for the day breaks. And he said, I will not let Thee go, except Thou bless me.” Genesis 32:26.

10. How may prayer be made more efficacious?

“And when He was come into the house, His disciples asked Him privately, Why could not we cast him [the evil spirit] out? And He said unto them, This kind can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.” Mark 9:28,29.

11. What, however, must ultimately characterize all our prayers to God?

“And He went a little farther, and fell on His face, and prayed, saying, O My Father, If it be possible, let this cup pass from Me: nevertheless not as I will, but as Thou wilt.” Matthew 26: 39.

12. What should always accompany our petitions?

“Be careful for nothing; but in everything by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God.” Philippians 4: 6.

13. How frequently did the psalmist approach God in prayer?

“Evening, and morning, and at noon, will I pray, and cry aloud: and He shall hear my voice.” Psalm 55:17.

14. In the crises of life what example of Christ may we well follow?

a. Before day. “And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, He went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.” Mark 1:35.

b. All night. “And it came to pass in those days, that He went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.” Luke 6:12.

15. While we need to have set periods for prayer, how constantly should the prayer spirit be maintained? “Pray without ceasing.” 1 Thessalonians 5:17.

16. With what should prayer invariably be combined, and why? “Watch and pray, that you enter not into temptation.” Matthew 26: 41.

Prayers God Will Answer

1. WHAT may we with confidence cry unto God?

“Hear my Prayer, O God; give ear to the words of my mouth.” Psalm 54: 2.

2. What was the chief burden of the psalmist’s prayers?

“Then called I upon the name of the Lord; O Lord, I beseech Thee, deliver my soul.” Psalm 116:4. “Show us Thy mercy, O Lord, and grant us Thy salvation.” Psalm 85:7.

3. Of what was he sure when he pleaded for forgiveness?

“For Thou, Lord, art good, and ready to forgive; and plenteous in mercy unto all them that call upon thee.” Psalm 86:5.

4. For what spiritual illumination did he also seek?

“I am Thy servant; give me understanding, that I may know Thy testimonies.” Psalm 119:125.

5. How willing is God to give wisdom and understanding to His children?

“If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that gives to all men liberally, and upbraids not; and it shall be given him.” James 1:5.

6. What other spiritual blessings did Paul desire for believers?

a. Love. “And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge and in all judgment.” Philippians 1:9.

b. Spiritual strength. “That He would grant you according to the riches of His glory, to be strengthened with might by His Spirit in the inner man.” Ephesians 3:16.

c. Patience. “And the Lord direct your hearts into the love of God, and into the patient waiting for Christ.” 2 Thessalonians 3:

5.

d. Sanctification. “And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.” 1 Thessalonians 5:23.

“How much of our prayer is vague and pointless! Some cry for mercy, but take not the trouble to know

what mercy must do for them. Others ask, perhaps, to be delivered from sin but do not begin by bringing any sin by name from which the deliverance may be claimed. Still others pray for God's blessing on those around them, and yet have no special field where they wait and expect to see the answer. To all the Lord says: And what is it now you really want and expect Me to do?" - Andrew Murray in "With Christ in the School of Prayer," page 22.

7. To what spiritual heights did Peter pray that believers might attain?

"But the God of all grace, who has called us unto His eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that you have suffered awhile, make you perfect, establish, strengthen, settle you." 1 Peter 5:10.

8. For what should we also have courage to pray?

"O Lord, correct me, but with judgment; not in Your anger, lest Thou bring me to nothing." Jeremiah 10:24.

9. For what temporal, as well as spiritual, needs may we properly pray? "Give us this day our daily bread." Matthew 6:11.

10. Are there any matters too insignificant to be referred to Him in prayer?

Be careful for nothing; but in everything by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God." Philippians 4:6.

11. What is an essential preparation for effectual service?

"Tarry you in the city of Jerusalem, until you be endued with Power from on high." Luke 24:49.

"The secret life of prayer, the open life of purity, the active life of service. This is the true ideal. This is the true rounded life. The service life grows up out of the other two. Its roots lie down in prayer and purity." - S. D. Gordon in "Quiet Talks on Service," pages 58, 59.

"Four hours of work for which one hour of praying prepares, is better than five hours' work with the praying left out." - George Muller.

12. What does God urge us to do in time of trouble?

"And call upon Me in the day of trouble: I will deliver thee, and thou shall glorify Me." Psalm 50:15.

13. How many of our cares does Peter say we may cast upon the Lord? "Casting all your care upon Him; for He cares for you." 1 Peter 5:7.

14. Should we, however, expect deliverance always and in all circumstances?

"For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me." 2 Corinthians 12: 8. 15. Though God may not always grant us immediate relief, what does He promise?

"My grace is sufficient for thee: for My strength is made perfect in weakness." 2 Corinthians 12:9.

16. In what attitude of mind, therefore, should all our petitions be made?

"And He went a little farther, and fell on His face, and prayed, saying, O My Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from Me: nevertheless not as I will, but as Thou will." Matthew 26:39.

17. What comprehensive plea may believers properly make to the Lord?

"Do good, O Lord, unto those that be good, and to them that are upright in their hearts." Psalm 125:4.

For Whom Should We Pray?

1. WHAT responsibility rests upon those who know the power of prayer in their own experience?

"Pray one for another. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man avails much." James 5:16.

2. Who will naturally have first place in our intercessory prayers?

Our loved ones. "The Angel which redeemed me from all evil, bless the lads; and let my name be named on them, and the name of my fathers Abraham and Isaac; and let them grow into a multitude in the midst of the earth." Genesis 48:16.

3. From our families according to the flesh, to what greater family will our prayers turn?

"Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints." Ephesians 6: 18.

4. For whom, among others, in the household of faith are we urged to pray?

"And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him." James 5:15.

5. In our prayers for the church of God, who else should be especially upon our hearts?

God's ministers. "Finally, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord may have free course, and be glorified, even as it is with you." 2 Thessalonians 3:1.

"Revival does not begin with the evangelist, but with little groups of men and women on their knees before God in prayer. A revival produces its evangelists. It is not produced by them. The prime need at this present time is for men and women mighty in prayer." - Lionel B. Fletcher.

6. For what did Jesus enjoin His disciples to pray?

"Then said He unto His disciples, The harvest truly is plenteous, but the laborers are few; pray you therefore the Lord of the harvest, that He will send forth laborers into His harvest." Matthew 9:37,38.

7. For what special blessing upon the church are believers in the latter days to pray?

“Ask you of the Lord rain in the time of the latter rain; so the Lord shall make bright clouds, and give them showers of rain, to every one grass in the field.” Zechariah 10:1.

8. Should our prayers extend to others beyond the household of faith?

“I exhort therefore,” that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men.” 1 Timothy 2:1.

“He who embraces in his prayer the widest circle of his fellow creatures, is most in sympathy with the mind of God.” - Dean Goulbourn.

9. Whom does “all men” include?

“But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you.” Matthew 5:44.

10. Who is our great Exemplar in intercessory prayer?

“For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us.” Hebrews 9:24.

11. Are there any limits to the efficacy of intercessory prayer?

“If any man see his brother sin a sin which is not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it. All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not unto death.” 1 John 5:16,17.

12. For what sin is there no forgiveness?

“But he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost has never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation.” Mark 3:29.

13. What place should temporal rulers and authorities have in our prayers?

The Bible Speaks “I exhort therefore, that supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for kings, and for all that are in authority.” 1 Timothy 2:1,2.

14. Why should we remember them?

“That we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty. For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Savior; who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.” 1 Timothy 2:2-4.

15. Whose kingdom, however, should be paramount in our prayers? “Thy kingdom come.” Matthew 6:10.

16. For what, glorious future state should we daily plead?

a.End of sin. “Oh let the wickedness of the wicked come to an end; but establish the just: for the righteous God tries the hearts and reins.” Psalm 7:9.

b.Triumph of God’s will and purpose. “Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven.” Matthew 6:10.

12. The Holy Spirit

The Holy Spirit

1. WHO is associated with the Father and Son in the triune Godhead?

“Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.” Matthew 28:19.

2. What statements make it quite clear that the Spirit is a Person and not merely a divine influence?

a.He is capable of speech. “He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit said unto the churches.” Revelation 2:7.

b.He manifests emotions of pleasure, vexation, grief. “For it seemed good to the Holy Ghost.” Acts 15: 28. “But they rebelled, and vexed His Holy Spirit.” Isaiah 63:10. “And grieve not the Holy Spirit of God.” Ephesians 4: 30.

c.He has executive ability and is capable of purposive action. “But all these work that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as He will.” 1 Corinthians 12:11. “And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.” Genesis 1:2.

d.He works wonders. “Through mighty signs and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God; so that from Jerusalem, and round about unto Illyricum, I have fully preached the gospel of Christ.” Romans 15:19.

e.He gives guidance. “When He, the Spirit of truth, is come, He will guide you into all truth.” John 16: 13.

f.He appeals to the Father on behalf of men. “Likewise the Spirit also helps our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself makes intercession for us with groaning which cannot be uttered.” Romans 8: 26.

“To each Person in one passage or other of the New Testament are ascribed the same titles and works; each is acknowledged as Lord; each is eternal. Each is Creator; each wills with a supreme will; each is the Author of the new birth. What is all this but the Father Eternal, the Son Eternal, and the Holy Ghost Eternal; the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, Omnipotent; the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, God.” - Cardinal Newman in “Grammar of Assent,” page 133.

3. What part had the Spirit in the work of creation?

“And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.” Genesis 1:2.

4. Since the entrance of sin how has God communicated with man?

“For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.” 2 Peter 1:21.

5. How was the Holy Spirit associated with the incarnation?

“And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost, shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God.” Luke 1: 3 5.

6. In what way did God manifest His approval of Jesus at His baptism?

“And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon Him.” John 1: 32.

7. How was Jesus empowered for His ministry?

“And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee: and there went out a fame of Him through all the region round about.” Luke 4:14.

8. By what power was Jesus fortified to endure the cross?

“How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to -serve the living God?” Hebrews 9:14.

9. What part had the Spirit in the resurrection of Jesus?

“For Christ also has once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that He might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit.” 1 Peter 3:18.

10. Who was appointed to take the place of Jesus at His ascension?

“And I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you for ever; even the Spirit of truth.” John 14:16,17.

“Need I dwell upon the great thoughts that spring from that metaphor-how we have to look for a Person, and not merely a vague influence. A divine Person who will be by our side on condition of our faith, love, and obedience, to be our strength in all weakness, our peace in all trouble, our wisdom in all darkness, our guide in every perplexity, our comforter and cherisher, our righteousness when sin is strong, the victor over our temptations, and the companion and sweetener of our solitude? And this sweet, strong, all-sufficient Person is offered to each of us, and waits to enter our hearts.” - Dr. Alexander Maclaren.

11. In what ways is the Spirit still active in the work of redemption?

a.Convicts of sin, makes known divine righteousness, and warns of judgment. “And when He is come, He will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment.” John 16: 8.

b.Regenerates. “Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.” John 3:5,6.

12. In what further work is the Spirit engaged on behalf of the children of God?

a.Sanctifies. “That I should be the minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministering the gospel of God, that the offering up of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the Holy Ghost.” Romans 15: 16.

b.Illuminates. “Howbeit when He, the Spirit of truth, is come, He will guide you into all truth: for He shall not speak of Himself; but whatsoever He shall hear, that shall He speak.” John 16:13.

c.Empowers. “Then he answered and spoke unto me, saying, This is the word of the Lord unto Zerubbabel, saying, Not by might, nor by power, but by My Spirit, said the Lord of hosts.” Zechariah 4:6.

d.Protects. “When the enemy shall come in like a flood, the Spirit of the Lord shall lift up a standard against him.” Isaiah 59:19.

“The great needs of the soul, conversion, communion, and character, are all made possible by the Holy Spirit, and His action covers the entire life of the believer from first to last.” His work embraces “a revelation of truth, a bestowal of life, and an equipment for service.” - Dr. Griffith Thomas in “The Principles of Theology.”

13. In what mighty way will the activity of the Spirit be manifest in the latter days?

“Be glad then, you children of Zion, and rejoice in the Lord your God: for He has given you the former rain moderately, and He will cause to come down for you the, rain, the former rain, and the latter rain in the first month.” Joel 2:23. (See also Hosea 6:3.)

14. In what way will the work of the Spirit in the latter days correspond with that at Pentecost?

“And with many other words did he testify and exhort, saying, Save yourselves from this untoward generation.” Acts 2:40.
“Come out of her, My people, that you be not partakers of her sins, and that you receive not of her plagues.” Revelation 18:4.

What Happened at Pentecost?

1. BY what means was Israel instructed in the wilderness?

“Thou gave also Thy good Spirit to instruct them, and withheld not Thy manna from their mouth, and gave them water for their thirst.” Nehemiah 9:20.

2. Through whom did the prophets receive their messages?

“For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.” 2 Peter 1:21.

3. How did Israel relate themselves to these ministrations of the Spirit of God? “But they rebelled, and vexed His Holy Spirit.” Isaiah 63:10.

4. What attitude did the Spirit’ therefore adopt toward Israel?

“Therefore He was turned to be their enemy, and He fought against them.” Isaiah 63:10.

5. With what promise, however, did God encourage the faithful remnant?

“And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out My Spirit upon all flesh.” Joel 2:28. (See also Isaiah 44:3.)

6. What profound results would follow this new outpouring of the Spirit?

“And I will put My Spirit within you, and cause you to walk in My statutes, and you shall keep My judgments, and do them.” Ezekiel 36: 27.

7. By whom was the promise of the Spirit renewed?

John the Baptist. “I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but He that comes after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire.” Matthew 3: 11.

8. In what fuller way did Jesus tell the disciples of the coming outpouring of the Spirit?

“And I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you for ever; even the Spirit of truth. Whom the world cannot receive, because it sees Him not, neither knows Him: but you know Him; for He dwells with you, and shall be in you.” John 14:16,17.

9. After His resurrection, how did Jesus assure His disciples that the promise was about to be fulfilled?

“And, being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which, said He, you have heard of Me. For John truly baptized with water; but you shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence.” Acts 1:4,5.

10. In what spectacular way was the promise fulfilled?

“And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost.” Acts 2:1-4.

“The Pentecostal outpouring was Heaven’s communication that the Redeemer’s inauguration was accomplished. According to His promise He had sent the Holy Spirit from heaven to His followers, as a token that He had, as priest and king, received all authority in heaven and on earth, and was the Anointed One over His people.” - E. G. White in “The Acts of the Apostles,” page 39.

11. What transformation did the Spirit work in the disciples?

“And they began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.” Acts 2: 4.

12. What revolutionary results followed their witness in the power of the Spirit?

“Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do? Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls. And many wonders and signs were done by the apostles.” Acts 2:37-43.

13. How did Peter explain the miracle of Pentecost to the multitude?

“But this is that which was spoken by the Prophet Joel; And it shall come to pass in the last days, said God, I will pour out of My Spirit upon all flesh.” Acts 2: 16, 17. (Read verse 18.)

14. What promise was extended to all who responded to the gospel appeal?

“Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.” Acts 2: 38.

15. For how many was this new outpouring of the Spirit intended?

“For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord, our God shall call.” Acts 2: 39.

“To us today, as verily as to the first disciples, the promise of the Spirit belongs. God will today endow men and women with power from above, as He endowed those who, on the day of Pentecost, heard the word of salvation. At this very hour His Spirit and His grace are for all who need them and will take Him at His word.” - E. G. White.

The Spirit and the Life

1. IN what way are believers distinguished from the world?

“Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.” 1 Corinthians 2:12. “God has also given unto us His Holy Spirit.” 1 Thessalonians 4:8.

2. On what conditions does God bestow the gift of the Spirit?

a. Repentance. Repent and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.” Acts 2:38.

“Thou has neither part nor lot in this matter: for thy heart is not right in the sight of God.” Acts 8:21.

b. Faith in God and Christ. “Christ has redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hanged on a tree. That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might-receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.” Galatians 3:13-14.

c. Obedience to His will. "And we are His witnesses of these things; and so is also the Holy Ghost, whom God has given to them that obey Him." Acts 5:32.

3. In what ways is the coming of the Spirit described?

a. Shed upon men. "Which He shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior." Titus 3:6.

b. Anointing men. "But you have an unction from the Holy One, and you know all things." 1 John 2:20.

c. Baptizing men. "For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body." 1 Corinthians 12: 13.

4. How closely does the Holy Spirit associate Himself with the life- of believers?

"He shall give you another Comforter, even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive. because it sees Him not, neither knows Him: but you know Him; for He dwells with you, and shall be in you." John 14:16,17. "What? know you not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which you have of God, and you are not your own?" 1 Corinthians 6: 19.

"He [Jesus] told them that, in spite of all the anguish with which they contemplated the coming separation from Him, it was actually better for them that His personal presence should be withdrawn in order that His spiritual presence might be yet nearer to them than it ever had been before. This would be effected by the coming of the Holy Ghost, when He who was now with them should be ever in them."-Dean Farrar, in "Life of Christ," page 390.

5. How fully does the Spirit desire to take possession of the lives of believers?

"And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit." Ephesians 5:18. "For he [Barnabas] was a good man, and full of the Holy Ghost and of faith." Acts 11:24.

6. What work does the indwelling Spirit accomplish in the life of the believer?

a. Mortification of sinful desires. "For if you live after the flesh, you shall die: but if you through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, you shall live." Romans 8:13.

b. Sanctification of the life. "But we are bound to give thanks always to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth." 2 Thessalonians 2:13.

"Every step of progress in the Christian life is taken by a fresh and fuller appreciation of Christ by faith, a fuller baptism of the Holy Spirit. As we are more and more emptied of all self dependence, and as by faith we secure deeper and deeper baptisms of the Holy Ghost, and put on the Lord Jesus Christ more thoroughly, by just so much faster do we grow in the favor of God. You must pray in faith for the Holy Spirit. At every forward step in your progress you must have a fresh anointing of the Holy Spirit through faith." - Charles G. Finney in "Lectures on Revivals."

c. Peace of soul. "For the kingdom of God is righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost." Romans 14: 17. "Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that you may abound in hope, through the power of the Holy Ghost." Romans 15:13.

7. By what visible evidences is the Spirit's activity manifest in the life?

"But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance: against such there is no law." Galatians 5: 22, 23. "For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth." Ephesians 5: 9.

8. What divine illumination is promised to believers through the Spirit?

"But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in My name, He shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you." John 14:26.

9. By what means are God's messengers equipped for service?

"But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal. For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; to another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit. To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues: but all these works that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as He will." 1 Corinthians 12:7-11.

10. Upon what power may the children of God ever rely?

"Then he answered and spoke unto me, saying, This is the word of the Lord unto Zerubbabel, saying, Not by might, nor by power, but by My Spirit, said the Lord of hosts." Zechariah 4: 6. "You shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and you shall be witnesses unto Me." Acts 1: 8.

"The promise of the Spirit is not appreciated as it should be. Its fulfillment is not realized as it might be. Learning, talents, eloquence, every natural or acquired endowment may be possessed; but without the presence of the Spirit of God, no heart will be touched, no sinner be won to Christ. On the other hand, if they are connected with Christ, if the gifts of the Spirit are theirs, the poorest and most ignorant of His disciples will have a power that will tell upon hearts." - E. G. White in "Christ's Object Lessons," page 328.

11. In view of the benefits resulting from the indwelling of the Spirit what did the psalmist ask God never to do?

"Cast me not away from Thy presence and take not Thy Holy Spirit from me." Psalm 51:11.

12. How may we prove ourselves worthy of the abiding presence of the Spirit?

“Quench not the Spirit.” – 1 Thessalonians 5:19. “And grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, whereby you are sealed unto the day of redemption.” Ephesians 4:30.

13. What will be the glorious outcome of sowing to the Spirit?

“For he that sows to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that sows to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.” Galatians 6:8.

14. What fitting invocation therefore does the Apostle Paul offer for all believers?

“The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost, be with you all.” 2 Corinthians 13:14.

The Gifts of the Spirit

1. WHEN Jesus ascended to heaven, what did He receive from the Father on behalf of His disciples?

“Thou has ascended on high, Thou has led captivity captive: Thou has received gifts for men.” Psalm 68: 18 (See also Ephesians 4: 7, 8.)

2. Through whom are these spiritual gifts communicated to men?

“God also bearing them witness, both with signs and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts of the Holy Ghost, according to His own will.” Hebrews 2:4.

3. How anxious was Paul that the church should understand the nature and purpose of spiritual gifts? “Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant.” 1 Corinthians 12:1.

“I have written and preached much of the Holy Spirit, for the knowledge of Him has been the most vital fact of my experience. I owe everything to the gift of Pentecost.” - Dr. Samuel Chadwick.

4. How varied did he declare them to be?

“Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit.” 1 Corinthians 12:4.

5. What are some of the gifts of the Spirit?

“And He gave some, apostles; and some, Prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, Pastors and -teachers.” Ephesians 4:11. (See also 1 Corinthians 12:28.)

6. Elsewhere what other gifts of the Spirit does Paul enumerate? -

“For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; to another faith by the same Spirit. To another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; to another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues.” 1 Corinthians 12: 8-10.

7. On what basis are the gifts of the Spirit dispensed?

a. According to the will of God. “But all these works that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as He will.” 1 Corinthians 12: 11.

b. Appropriate to the individual. “But every man has his proper gift of God, one after this manner, and another after that.” 1 Corinthians 7: 7.

8. How is the Christian’s experience enriched by spiritual gifts?

“Thank my God always on your behalf that in every thing you are enriched by Him, in all utterance, and in all knowledge.” 1 Corinthians 1:4,5.

9. What may the Christian, therefore, legitimately covet? “But covet earnestly the best gifts.” 1 Corinthians 12:31.

10. What, however, is even more to be desired than the gifts of the Spirit?

“And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have not charity, I am nothing.” 1 Corinthians 13:2. (See also 1 Corinthians 14:1.)

11. For what purpose are the gifts of the Spirit conferred?

“But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal.” 1 Corinthians 12: 7.

12. In what ways does the church profit, from the exercise of spiritual gifts?

“For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ.” Ephesians 4: 12.

13. What responsibility, therefore, does the recipient have toward his gifts?

“As every man has received the gift, even so minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God. If any man speak, let him speak as the oracles of God; if any man minister, let him do it as of the ability which God gives: that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ.” 1 Peter 4:10,11. (See also Romans 12:6-8.)

14. How did Paul encourage Timothy in the use of his particular gifts?

“Wherefore I put thee in remembrance that thou stir up the gift of God, which is in thee by the putting on of my hands.” 2

Timothy 1:6. “Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery.” 1 Timothy 4:14.

“There is no limit to the usefulness of one who, putting self aside, makes room for the working of the Holy Spirit upon his heart, and lives a life wholly consecrated to God.” – E. G. White.

15. What should always characterize the exercise of spiritual gifts in the church?

“For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints.” “Let all things be done decently and in order.” 1 Corinthians 14:33,40.

16. For how long will the gifts of the Spirit be made available?

“Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a Perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ.” Ephesians 4: 13 j~

13. The Angels

Who Are the Angels?

1. WHAT controversy was there in Christ’s day as to the existence of beings of a higher order than man? “For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, neither angels nor spirit: but the Pharisees confess both.” Acts 23: 8.

2. In what visions are the inhabitants of heaven brought to view?

“I [Micalah] saw the Lord sitting upon His throne, and all the host of heaven standing on His right hand and on His left.” 2 Chronicles 18:18. “And I [John] beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne.” Revelation 5:11.

3. Are these heavenly intelligences around the throne of God created beings?

“Thou, even Thou, art Lord alone; Thou has made heaven the heaven of heavens, with all their host, the earth, and all things that are therein, the seas, and all that is therein, and Thou preserves them all; and the host of heaven worships Thee.” Nehemiah 9: 6.

4. How does a man compare, in status, with the angels? “For Thou has made him a little lower than the angels.” Psalm 8: 5.

5. Like men, however, what homage do the angels render to Jesus?

“And again, when He brings in the first begotten into the world, He said, And let all the angels of God worship Him.” Hebrews 1:6. (See also 1 Peter 3:21,22.)

6. What do we know of the nature of the angels?

“Who makes His angels spirits; His ministers a flaming fire.” Psalm 104: 4.

7. How glorious are the angels in appearance?

“His body also was like the beryl, and his face as the appearance of lightning, and his eyes as lamps of fire, and his arms and his feet like in color to polished brass, and the voice of his words like the voice of a multitude.” Daniel 10: 6. “His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow.” Matthew 28: 3.

8. How superior to mankind are they in intelligence?

“My lord is wise, according to the wisdom of an angel of God, to know all things that are in the earth.” 2 Samuel 14:20.

9. What, however, is one example of knowledge withheld even from the angels?

“But of that day and hour knows no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but My Father only.” Matthew 24:36.

10. Do they exceed men in power?

“Whereas angels which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord.” 2 Peter 2:

11. “Bless the Lord, you His angels, that excel in strength.” Psalm 103:20.

11. How has their power been demonstrated?

a. Circumvention of physical laws. “But the angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doors, and brought them forth.” Acts 5: 19.

b. Power over rapacious animals. “My God has sent His angel, and has shut the lions’ mouths, that they have not hurt me.” Daniel 6: 22.

c. Protection of saints. “The angel of the Lord encamps round about them that fear Him, and delivers them.” Psalm 34: 7.

d. Destruction of sinners. “And it came to pass that night, that the angel of the Lord went out, and smote in the camp of the Assyrians an hundred fourscore and five thousand. And when they [the Israelites] arose early in the morning, behold, they [the Assyrians] were all dead corpses.” 2 Kings 19:35.

“What we call physical law is no obstruction to angelic ministrations. Bolts and bars and prison gates disappear at their volition, and dungeons like palaces shine in their presence. No place can be so dismal, no cavern so deep and dark, no Inquisition cell so hidden and fetid, no fortress so strongly guarded, that they cannot find quick and easy access, if a child of God is there.” E. A. Stockman in “Footprints of Angels,” pages 74, 75.

12. What do we know of the moral character of the good angels?

a. Holy. “When the Son of man shall come in His glory, and all the holy angels with Him, then shall He sit upon the throne of His glory.” Matthew 25:31. (See also Mark 8:38.)

b. Obedient to the will of God. “Bless the Lord, you His angels, that excel in strength, that do His commandments, hearkening unto the voice of His word.” Psalm 103:20.

13. How many angels are there?

“And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne and the beasts and the elders: and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands.” Revelation 5:11. “But you are come unto mount Zion, and unto the city of the living, God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels.” Hebrews 12:22.

14. What special orders of angels are mentioned by name in the Scriptures?

a. Cherubim. “Then I looked, and, behold, in the firmament that was above the head of the Cherubim there appeared over them as it were a sapphire stone, with the appearance of the likeness of a throne.” Ezekiel 10:1.”

b. Seraphim. “Above it stood the Seraphim, each one had six wings; with twain he covered his face, and with twain he covered his feet, and with twain he did fly.” Isaiah 6: 2.

15. Who is the Leader of the angels?

“Yet Michael the Archangel, when contending with the devil He disputed about the body of Moses, dared not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee.” Jude 1:9.

16. Have we any means of identifying the Archangel Michael?

“And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great Prince which stands for the children of thy people.” Daniel 12: 1. “For the Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the Archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first.” 1 Thessalonians 4:16.

17. Are any of the immediate subordinates of Michael named in Scripture?

“And I heard a man’s voice between the banks of Ulai, which called, and said, Gabriel, make this man to understand the vision.” Daniel 8: 16.

18. What other angel, now fallen, once held a high position in heaven?

“How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning, how art thou cut down to the ground, which did weaken the nations!” Isaiah 14: 12. See study entitled, “Why Are Some Angels Bad?”

19. How are the angels employed?

a. Worship. “And all the angels stood round about the throne, and worshipped God, saying, Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honor, and power, and might, be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen.” Revelation 7:11,12.

b. Service. “Bless you the Lord, all you His hosts; you ministers of His, that do His pleasure.” Psalm 103:21.

20. In what work do they eagerly engage?

“Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?” Hebrews 1:14.

Why Are Some Angels Bad

1. How does the Bible distinguish between the good and the evil angels?

“I charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality.” 1 Timothy 5:21.

2. How did some angels come to incur the wrath of God?

“And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, He has reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day.” Jude 1:6. (See also 2 Peter 2:4.)

3. Who was the leader in this revolt against the government of heaven? “How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning!” Isaiah 14:12.

4. Through sinful pride to what did Lucifer aspire?

“For thou has said in your heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God. I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north. I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the Most High.” Isaiah 14:13,14.

5. By seducing some of the other angels, what conflict did he precipitate in heaven?

“And there was war in heaven: Michael [Christ] and His angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon [Lucifer] fought and his angels, and prevailed not.” Revelation 12:7,8.

6. What punishment did God mete out to the rebellious Lucifer, and how was he renamed?

“And He said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.” Luke 10:18. “And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan.” Revelation 12:9.

7. What punishment fell also upon the angels who associated with him?

“Neither was their place found any more in heaven. He was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.” Revelation 12:8,9.

8. Against whom is he now directing his deceptions?

“And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent called the Devil, and Satan, which deceived the whole world.” Revelation 12: 9.

“The facts of history concur with the statements of revelation in forcing upon us the unwelcome conviction that the human race is subject to the malevolent influence of an organized and all pervading demonism. Alike in the career of the nations And in the phenomena of personal destiny, the presence of demonic in skill and power is often prominent, frequently dominant, always evil.” - E. A. Stockman in “Footprints of Angels,” page 2.

9. How do Satan and his angels seek to enslave men?

By tempting them to do evil. "I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtle methods, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ." 2 Corinthians 11:3.

"Evil spirits, in the beginning created sinless, were equal in nature, power, and glory with the holy beings that are now God's messengers. But fallen through sin, they are leagued together for the dishonor of God and the destruction of men." E. G. White in "The Great Controversy."

10. In what fateful conflict are we therefore called upon to engage?

"We wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places." Ephesians 6: 11, 12.

11. How intensely active will Satan become as the end approaches?

"Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knows that he has but a short time." Revelation 12:12.

12. Against what particular satanic activities in the latter days are we expressly warned?

a. Doctrines of devils. "Now the Spirit speaks expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils." 1 Timothy 4:1.

b. International machinations. "For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, which goes forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty." Revelation 16:14.

13. What evidence clearly indicates, however, that Satan and his angels are a beaten foe?

"Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble." James 2: 19.

14. How may we be assured of victory in the conflict with the powers of evil?

"Put on the whole armor of God, that you may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil." Ephesians 6: 11. (See also verses 13-17.)

15. What will be their ultimate doom?

"Then shall He say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from Me, you cursed, into everlasting fire, Prepared for the devil and his angels." Matthew 25:41.

Spiritualism - Ancient and Modern

1. AGAINST what evil spiritual powers did God warn His chosen people?

"Regard not them that have familiar spirits, neither seek after wizards, to be defiled by them: I am the Lord your God." Leviticus 19:31.

"Nearly all forms of ancient sorcery and witchcraft were founded upon a belief in communion with the dead. Those who practiced the arts of necromancy claimed to have intercourse with departed spirits, and to obtain through them a knowledge of future events. The 'familiar spirits' were not the spirits of the dead, but evil angels, the messengers of Satan. Ancient idolatry, which, as we have seen, comprises both worship of the dead and pretended communion with them, is declared by the Bible to have been demon-worship." - E. G. White In "Patriarchs and Prophets," pages 684, 685.

2. With what other forms of spirit-possession were they forbidden to have any dealings?

"There shall not be found among you any that uses divination, or an observer of times, or an enchanter, or a witch, or a charmer, or a necromancer. For all that do these things are an abomination unto the Lord." Deuteronomy 18: 10-12.

3. What king of Israel disobeyed the divine command and sought after evil spirits?

"And when Saul inquired of the Lord, the Lord answered him not, neither by dreams, nor by Urim, nor by prophets. Then said Saul unto his servants, Seek me a woman that has a familiar spirit, that I may go to her, and inquire of her. And his servants said to him, Behold, there is a woman that has a familiar spirit at Endor." 1 Samuel 28:6,7.

4. How was he punished for his sin?

"So Saul died for his transgression which he committed against the Lord, even against the word of the Lord, which he kept not, and also for asking counsel of one that had a familiar spirit, to inquire of it." 1 Chronicles 10:13.

5. Who else followed the wicked example of Saul and led Israel deeper into iniquity?

"And he [Rehoboam] ordained him priests for the high places, and for the devils, and for the calves which he had made." 2 Chronicles 11:15.

6. With what urgent counsel did Isaiah exhort the nation as recourse to evil spirits increased?

"And when they shall say unto you, Seek unto them that have familiar spirits, and unto wizards that peep, and that mutter: should not a people seek unto their God? For the living to the dead?" Isaiah 8:19.

7. On what occasion did Jesus come in contact with a victim of spirit possession? "And there was in their synagogue a man with an unclean spirit; and he cried out." Mark 1:23.

8. For what did the spirit plead on recognizing Jesus?

"Let us alone; what have we to do with Thee, Thou Jesus of Nazareth? Are Thou come to destroy us? I know Thee who Thou art, the Holy One of God." Mark 1:24.

9. What command did Jesus give the evil spirit, and how did it respond?

“And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the unclean spirit had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him.” Mark 1:25,26.

10. How were the people affected by the miracle?

“And they were all amazed insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What thing is this? What new doctrine is this? For with authority commanded He even the unclean spirits, and they do obey Him.” Mark 1: 27.

11. What was included among the powers Jesus gave to the disciples?

“And these signs shall follow them that believe; In My name shall they cast out devils.” Mark 16:17.

12. How was this promise fulfilled in the ministry of Peter?

“There came also a multitude out of the cities round about unto Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and them which were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed every one.” Acts 1:16.

13. By whom was Paul once molested while in Macedonia?

“And it came to pass, as we went to prayer, a certain damsel possessed with a spirit of divination met us, which brought her masters much gain by soothsaying: the same followed Paul and us, and cried, saying, These men are the servants of the Most High God, which show unto us the way of salvation.” Acts 16: 16, 17.

14. What was he enabled, by the power of God, to do?

“And this did she many days. But Paul, being grieved, turned and said to the spirit, I command thee in the name of Jesus Christ to come out of her. And he came out the same hour.” Acts 16: 18.

15. For what did Paul condemn the Gentiles?

“But I say, that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not to God.” 1 Corinthians 10: 20.

16. How incompatible is association with evil spirits and the Christian faith?

“And I would not that you should have fellowship with devils. You cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: you cannot be Partakers of the Lord’s table, and of the table of devils.” 1 Corinthians 10: 20, 21.

17. In consequence, what did converts who had dabbled in the occult do on accepting Christ?

“Many of them also which used curious arts brought their books together, and burned them before all men.” Acts 19: 19.

18. What supreme effort will Satan and the evil spirits put forth in the last days to bring the world to ruin? “Now the Spirit speaks expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils.” 1 Timothy 4: 1.

19. Through what avenue will their deceptive power be particularly exerted?

“Wherefore if they shall say unto you, behold, He is in the secret chambers; believe it not.” Matthew 24: 26.

This is clearly a reference to the secrecy of the spiritualist seance.

“To dabble in all such matters,” says the editor of the Christian, “is to come within reach of demoniac forces, and it is no unfamiliar experience to find skepticism and curiosity about spiritual manifestation changed to hysterical ‘possession’ in those persons who have lightly attended seances ‘just to see.’ The things of which we speak are among the most serious problems of the day, and we would utter a solemn warning against confidences that are away from God and tend to the tragedy of demon possession.”

20. What common deceptions used upon ancient Israel may be expected in the latter-day manifestations of spirit activity?

a. Necromancy, or alleged contact with the dead.

b. Divination, or prognostication by astrology and other means.

c. Sorcery, or the working of miracles by occult powers.

“The phenomenal aspect of modern Spiritualism reproduces all essential principles of the magic, witchcraft, and sorcery of the past. The same powers are involved, the same intelligences are operating.” - F. F. Morse in “Practical Occultism,” page 85.

Prominent in the propaganda of modern Spiritualism are claims of “psychic healers.” Often these healers, it is alleged, work to the instruction of famous doctors who have “passed over.”

21. How are alleged spirit manifestations to be tested?

“Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God.” 1 John 4: 1.

22. By what standard are they to be tried?

“To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them.” Isaiah 8:20.

The satanic power behind Spiritualism is clearly indicated by such declarations as the following: “They [the spirits] testify that Jesus Christ has nothing to do with the question of life and death, and they know nothing about the ‘mediation of our Savior Jesus Christ.’” - J. A. Findlay in “The Rock of Truth,” page 288.

“Neither have we made any mention of a boundless store of merit laid up for him in the death of the sinless Son of God.... No such fable finds a place in our knowledge. We know of no store of merit save that which man lays up for himself by slow and laborious processes.” - “Spirit Teachings,” communicated through Stainton Moses, pages 158, 159.

“Spiritualism is a religion; but it is a religion free from the absurd and superstitious features which mar the system known as Christianity.” - “The Progressive Thinker.”

“We have no desire to hide the plain fact that there is much in some parts of the Bible which does not amalgamate with our teaching, being, indeed, the admixture of human error which came through the mind of the chosen medium.” “We mention this to avoid at once the necessity of replying to any texts from these books which may be quoted as an argument.” - “Spirit Teachings,” pages 74, 189.

“What you are now witnessing [in spiritualistic phenomenal are the signs and wonders that preclude the opening of a new dispensation, the advent of the Lord. There will be no such physical return as man dreamed of.” - Id., page 151.

23. What does the Bible teach as to the possibility of communication with the dead?

“For the living know that they shall die: but the dead know not anything, neither have they any more a portion for ever in any thing that is done under the sun.” Ecclesiastes 9:5,6.

24. Who are the spirits who purport to be dead relatives and friends?

They are “seducing spirits” and their alleged messages are “doctrines of devils.”

25. In what will the activities of the evil spirits in the latter days culminate?

“Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, and with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish.” 2 Thessalonians 2:9,10. (See also Revelation 12:12; 13:13,14.)

26. To those who are not fortified by a knowledge of the Word, how plausible will the latter-day deceptions of Satan and his evil spirits seem?

“And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness.” 2 Corinthians 11:14,15.

Indicative of the hold that Spiritualism is gaining even upon accredited Christian leaders and thinkers of today are the following statements attributed to noted churchmen in the *Psychic News*, March 2, 1940: “The evidence of Spiritualism is too strong, too widespread, and accepted by too many sober-minded people for hasty rejection. Scientific men accustomed to deal coolly and accurately with phenomena have pronounced in favor of the truth of Spiritualism.” - Dr. Pollock, Bishop of Norwich.

Spiritualism is “a confirmation of the Christian faith, and even a way from agnosticism to belief.” - Dr. W. R. Matthews, Dean of St. Paul’s.

Spiritualism is “the scientific explanation of the Christian belief and faith in survival of life after death.” - Canon Anson, Master of the Temple.

27. Who only will be undeceived?

“For there shall arise false christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.” Matthew 24: 24.

28. In what will be the sure defense of God’s people?

“Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walks about, seeking whom he may devour.” 1 Peter 5:8.

Angel Ministry

1. WHAT congenial task has been allotted to the unfallen angels?

“Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation.” Hebrews 1:14.

2. In what beautiful vision is the ministry of angels portrayed?

“And he [Jacob] dreamed, and behold a ladder set up on the earth, and the top of it reached to heaven: and behold the angels of God ascending and descending on it.” Genesis 28:12.

“Heaven is brought near to earth by that mystic ladder, the base of which is firmly planted on the earth, while the topmost round reaches the throne of the Infinite. Angels are constantly ascending and descending this ladder of shining brightness, bearing the prayers of the needy and distressed to the Father above, and bringing blessing and hope, courage and help, to the children of men.” - Fausset’s “Bible Cyclopaedia,” article, “Angels.”

3. What solemn, yet urgent, task was committed to one of the angels immediately after the fall?

“So He drove out the man; and He placed at the east of the Garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.” Genesis 3: 24.

4. What is one of the earliest examples in the Bible of angels being engaged on an errand of mercy to men? “And when the morning arose, then the angels hastened Lot, saying, Arise, take thy wife, and thy two daughters, which are here; lest thou be consumed in the iniquity of the city.” Genesis 19: 15.

5. How did angels assist in the giving of the law at Sinai?

“Who have received the law by the disposition of angels, and have not kept it.” Acts 7: 53.

6. In what special type of revelation has God frequently employed the angels?

“The revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto Him, to show unto His servants things which must shortly come to pass, and He sent and signified it by His angel unto His servant John.” Revelation 1:1.

7. In what other service do angels engage on behalf of believers?

“The angel of the Lord encamps round about them that fear Him, and delivers them.” Psalm 34: 7.

“It would be well to ponder more frequently the ministering care of the angels. They keep pace with every railway train, at whatever speed it travels, which bears some child of God to his appointed destination. They convoy every ship plowing its way through the troubled sea, which carries an heir of salvation to the haven where he would be. They encamp with horses and chariots of fire about every city, however tired, in which God’s servants are found.” - F. B. Meyer in “Israel,” page 51.

8. How does Isaiah comment on Israel’s experiences during the exodus?

“In all their affliction He was afflicted, and the angel of His presence saved them: in His love and in His pity He redeemed them; and He bare them, and carried them all the days of old.” Isaiah 63: 9.

9. What remarkable deliverance was vouchsafed to Daniel in the den of lions?

“My God has sent His angel, and has shut the lions’ mouths, that they have not hurt me: forasmuch as before Him innocence was found in me; and also before, thee, O king, have I done no hurt.” Daniel 6: 22.

10. On what occasions did angels minister to Jesus during His life on earth?

a. After His temptation. “Then the devil leaves Him, and, behold, angels came and ministered unto Him.” Matthew 4:11.

b. In every time of need throughout His ministry. “He shall give His angels charge concerning Thee: and in their hands they shall bear Thee up, lest at any time Thou dash Thy foot against a stone.” Matthew 4: 6. (See also Psalm 91:11,12.)

c. In Gethsemane. “And there appeared an angel unto Him from heaven, strengthening Him.” Luke 22:43.

d. An angel called Him forth from the tomb. “And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it.” Matthew 28:2.

11. How were Peter and John delivered from the prison into which they had been thrown by their persecutors?

“But the angel of the Lord by night opened the Prison doors, and brought them forth, and said, Go, stand and speak in the temple to the people all the words of this life.” Acts 5: 19, 20.

12. In which other ways do the angels co-operate in bringing to pass the purposes of God?

a. Overcoming resistance to God’s will. “The prince of the kingdom of Persia withstood me one and twenty days: but, Lo, Michael, one of the chief Princes, came to help me; and I remained there with the kings of Persia.” Daniel 10: 13.

b. Dispensing judgment and mercy according to His omniscient counsels. “And after these things I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree.” Revelation 7: 1.

c. Executing sentence upon evildoers. “And it came to pass that night, that the angel of the Lord went out, and smote in the camp of the Assyrians an hundred fourscore and five thousand: and when they [the Israelites] arose early in the morning, behold, they [the Assyrians] were all dead corpses.” 2 Kings 19:35.

13. How quickly do the angels respond to the tasks committed to them?

“Yea, whiles I was speaking in prayer, even the man Gabriel, whom I had seen in the vision at the beginning, being caused to fly swiftly, touched me about the time of the evening oblation.” Daniel 9: 21

“No earthly monarch ever sent so swift a messenger to bear tidings of good or ill as Jehovah sent to this prophet in prayer. No heart of love, bound by the strongest cords of devotion, ever sent so quick an answer to the object of his affections as God sends through His holy angels to those who trust in Him.”-L H. Evans in “The Ministry of Angels,” page 66.

14. What instance does the Bible give of the angels reporting on the execution of their duties?

“And they answered the angel of the Lord that stood among the myrtle trees, and said, We have walked to and fro through the earth, and, behold, all the earth sits still, and is at rest.” Zechariah 1:11. (See also verses 8-13.)

15. What other important task has been given to the angels?

“I saw in the visions of my head upon my bed, and, behold, a watcher and an holy one came down from heaven.” Daniel 4:

13.

16. What care should we therefore exercise in the presence of the angels?

“Suffer not thy mouth to cause thy flesh to sin; neither say thou before the angel, that it was an error: wherefore should God be angry at thy voice, and destroy the work of your hands?” Ecclesiastes 5: 6.

17. In the judgment how will they assist the judge of all the earth?

a. They will assemble the books of record. “I beheld till the thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of Days did sit. A fiery stream issued and came forth from before Him: thousand thousands ministered unto Him, and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before Him: the judgment was set, and the books were opened.” Daniel 7:9,10.

b. They will act as witnesses in the heavenly court. “Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess Me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God: but he that denies Me before men shall be denied before the angels of God.” Luke 12: 8, 9.

18. By whom will Christ be accompanied when He returns?

“For the Son of man shall come in the glory of His Father with His angels; and then He shall reward every man according to his works.” Matthew 16: 27.

“All through the ages, the holy angels have acted an important part in the salvation of man. They have been the messenger* of God, going between heaven and earth, bearing to the throne of Jehovah the prayers of His people and bringing back from that throne His blessing, help, and strength to His tempted, tried, and trusty children. These very angels have watched by the aide of the people of God during their lifetime. They have continually ministered to them in the hour of temptation. They have stood as silent witnesses in the death chamber. So when the Son of God comes to earth the second time, to bring His people life and immortality, then holy beings come with Him, not u silent witnesses of His glory and might and majesty, not as mere interested spectators of the marvel of the resurrection from the dead, but as His active agents in that stupendous event.” - J. H. Evans in “The Ministry of Angels,” page 209.

19. What will be their first duty?

“And the armies which were in heaven followed Him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against Him that sat on the horse, and against His army.” Revelation 19: 14, 19.

20. When all opposition to Christ has been broken, what further service will they undertake?

“So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels then come forth, and sever the wicked from among just.” Matthew 13:49.

21. What sentence will they carry out against the unrepentant?

“And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.” Matthew 13:10.

22. What will be their final happy task?

“And He shall send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.” Matthew 24:31.

14. The Church

The Israel of God

1. WHEN God began to gather out a people for Himself, whom did He choose to be their progenitor? “Now the Lord had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father’s house, unto a land that I will show thee.” Genesis 12:1.

2. What did God declare He would accomplish through Abraham?

“And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing; and I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curses thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed.” Genesis 12: 2, 3.

3. In what way does the writer of the Epistle to the Hebrews bring out the two distinguishing marks which were henceforth to characterize the people of God?

“By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went.” Hebrews 11: 8.

4. How soon was it manifest that mere literal descent from Abraham did not qualify men for a place among the chosen people of God?

“Neither, because they are the seed of Abraham, are they all children: but, In Isaac shall thy seed be called.” Romans 9:7.

5. Why was the line of Isaac chosen rather than that of Ishmael?

“That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the children of the Promise are counted for the seed.” Romans 9:8. (Read Genesis 21:10-12.)

6. What further selection took place among the sons of Isaac? “Was not Esau Jacob’s brother? said the Lord: yet I loved Jacob.” Malachi 1:2.

7. What name did God give to Jacob in confirmation of his election?

“And He said, Thy name shall be called no more Jacob, but Israel: for as a prince has thou power with God and with men, and has prevailed.” Genesis 32:28.

8. How are God’s people thereafter designated?

“Come now therefore, and I will send thee unto Pharaoh, that thou may bring forth My people the children of Israel out of Egypt.” Exodus 3:10.

9. On what condition only would literal Israel continue to be God’s chosen nation?

“Now therefore, if you will obey My voice indeed, and keep My covenant, then you shall be a peculiar treasure unto Me above all people: for all the earth is Mine: and you shall be unto Me a kingdom of priests, and a holy nation.” Exodus 19:5,6.

10. What complaint, however, had God to make against the nation?

“Hear, O heavens, and give ear, O earth: for the Lord has spoken, I have nourished and brought up children, and they have rebelled against Me.” Isaiah 1:2.

11. By whom was the rejection of literal Israel foretold?

“Then shall thou break the bottle in the sight of the men that go with thee, and shall say unto them, Thus said the Lord of hosts; Even so will I break this people and this city, as one breaks a potter’s vessel, that cannot be made whole again.” Jeremiah 19: 10, 11.

12. In what parable did Jesus warn the nation of the imminent close of its probation?

“When the Lord therefore of the vineyard comes, what will He do unto those husbandmen? They say unto Him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out His vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render Him the fruits in their seasons.” Matthew 21:40,41. (Read verses 33-41.)

“The leaders in the Jewish nation had signally failed of fulfilling God’s purpose for His chosen people. Those whom the Lord had made the depositaries of truth had proved unfaithful to their trust, and God chose others to do His work.”-E. G. White in “The Acts of the Apostles,” pages 78, 79.

13. Did their defection mean that God’s plan for a people of His own had failed?

“Not as though the word of God has taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel: neither, because they are the seed of Abraham, are they all children.” Romans 9: 6, 7.

14. Who, then, are the true children of Abraham?

“Know you therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.... So then they which be of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham.” “And if you be Christ’s then are you Abraham’s seed, and heirs according to the promise.” Galatians 3: 7-9, 29.

15. To whom, therefore, are the Abrahamic blessings equally available?

“That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.” Galatians 3:14. (See also Ephesians 2:11-13.)

“Christ recognized no virtue in lineage. He taught that spiritual connection supersedes all natural connection. The Jews claimed to have descended from Abraham; but by failing to do the Works of Abraham, they proved that they were not his true children. Only those who prove themselves to be spiritually in harmony with Abraham by obeying the voice of God, are reckoned as of true descent.”-E. G. White in “Christ’s Object Lessons,” page 268.

16. How does Paul distinguish between literal Israel and the true people of God? “Behold Israel after the flesh.” 1

Corinthians 10: 18. “And upon the Israel of God.” Galatians 6:16.

17. How is spiritual Israel elsewhere described?

“But you are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; which in time past were not a people, but are now the People of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.” 1 Peter 2: 9, 10.

18. What is the respective status of Jew and Gentile in the Israel of God?

“Many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down in the kingdom of heaven.”

“Where there is neither Greek, nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond or free: but Christ is all, and in all.” Colossians 3: 11.

19. By whom will the Israel of God ultimately be gathered?

“The scepter shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto Him shall the gathering of the people be.” Genesis 49: 10.

20. From where will they be drawn?

“And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven.” Matthew 8:11.

21. Will any of God’s true people be forgotten in the great gathering day?

“And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Zion the Deliverer and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob.” Romans 11:26.

The Church of Christ

1. WHAT appeal has God through the ages addressed to a sinful world?

“Wherefore come out from among them, and be you separate, said the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you.” 2 Corinthians 6: 17.

2. Into what are the responsive ones gathered?

“This is he, that was in the church in the wilderness with the angel which spoke to him in the mount Sinai, and with our fathers.” Acts 7: 38. “And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.” Acts 2: 47. (See also Acts 20: 28.)

3. To what is the church compared? “You are God’s building.” 1 Corinthians 3: 9.

4. Upon what foundation is the church built?

“For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.” 1 Corinthians 3:11. “And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the chief corner stone.” Ephesians 2: 20.

The Bible does not teach nor did the early church accept the view that the church was built upon Peter as the Church of Rome has erroneously interpreted Matthew 16:18 As Bishop Charles Gore declares in “Roman Catholic Claims”: “In the writings of Eusebius, St. Athanasius, St. Basil the Great, the two Gregories, and St. Epiphanius, there is not one word of any prerogative of the Roman bishop. The most copious of the Greek Fathers, St. Chrysostom, is wholly silent on the subject.” (Page 198.) The theory of Peter’s pre-eminence was developed by Cyprian and Augustine and culminated in the Petrine declaration of Leo the Great in the fifth century.

5. By what other illustrations is the relation of Christ to the church set forth?

a. The bride of Christ. “For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church.” Ephesians 5: 2 3.

b. The body of Christ. “For we are members of His body, of His flesh, and of His bones.” Ephesians 5: 30. “And He is the head of the body, the church.” Colossians 1: 18.

6. What name is given to the individuals comprising the church?

“God is greatly to be feared in the assembly of the saints, and to be had in reverence of all them that are about Him.” Psalm 89: 7.

“The Scripture gives four names to Christians, taken from the four cardinal graces so essential to man’s salvation: saints for their holiness, believers for their faith, brethren for their love, disciples for their knowledge.” - A. Fuller.

7. What are the qualifications for admission?

Faith and obedience. “God is no respecter of persons: but in every nation he that fears Him, and works righteousness, is accepted with Him.” Acts 10: 34, 35.

8. What common status do all believers share?

“There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for you are all one in Christ Jesus.” Galatians 3: 28. (See also 1 Corinthians 12: 14, 20-25.)

“No distinction on account of nationality, race, or caste is recognized by God. He is the Maker of all mankind. All men are of one family by creation, and all are one through redemption. Christ came to demolish every wall of partition, to throw open every compartment of the temple courts, that every soul may have free access to God. In Christ there is neither Jew nor Greek, bond nor free.”-E. G. White in “Prophets and Kings,” pages 369, 370.

9. To what privileges are all equally entitled?

a. Forgiveness of sin. “The people that dwell therein shall be forgiven their iniquity.” Isaiah 33:24.

b. Heavenly citizenship. “And has raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus.” Ephesians 2: 6.

c. Constant spiritual refreshment. “They shall be abundantly satisfied with the fatness of Thy house; and Thou shall make them drink of the river of Thy pleasures.” Psalm 36: 8.

d. Providential watch care. “Upon this rock will I build My church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.” Matthew 16: 18.

e. An inheritance in prospect. “Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased Possession, unto the praise of His glory.” Ephesians 1: 14.

10. What responsibilities has God given to His church in the earth?

a. The guardianship of the truth. “But if I tarry long, that thou may know how thou ought to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.” 1 Timothy 3: 15.

b. A spectacle of God’s grace. “You are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that you should show forth the Praises of Him who has called you out of darkness into His marvelous light.” 1 Peter 2: 9.

“The Lord Jesus is making experiments on human hearts through the exhibition of His mercy and abundant grace. He is effecting transformations so-amazing that Satan, with all his triumphant boasting, with all his confederacy of evil united against God and the laws of His government, stands viewing them as a fortress impregnable to his sophistries and delusions. The angels of God, seraphim and cherubim, the powers commissioned to cooperate with human agencies, look on with astonishment and joy, that fallen men, once children of wrath, are through the training of Christ developing characters after the divine similitude.” E. G. White.

c. God’s witness to a lost world. “You shall be witnesses unto Me.” Acts 1: 8.

“All who are ordained unto the life of Christ are ordained to work for the salvation of their fellow men. Their hearts will throb in unison with the heart of Christ. The same longing for souls that He has felt will be manifest in them. Not all can fill the same place in the work, but there is a place and a work for all.” - E. G. White in “Christ’s Object Lessons,” page 301.

11. To what end is Christ now working on behalf of His church?

“That He might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the Word, that He might Present it to Himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it, should be holy and without blemish.” Ephesians 5: 26, 27.

12. How will God’s purposes for His church ultimately be consummated?

“That in the dispensation of the fullness of times He might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in Him.” Ephesians 1: 10.

13. What vision of the church triumphant was given to the revelator?

“After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kingdoms, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands. And cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sits upon the throne, and unto the Lamb.” Revelation 7: 9, 10.

14. How will the glorified church occupy the eternal years?

“Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve Him day and night in His temple: and He that sits on the throne shall dwell among them.” Revelation 7: 15.

The Bible Speaks

1. WHAT honor is due to God from man?

“Thou shall worship the Lord thy God, and Him only shall thou serve.” Matthew 4:10.

2. What provision for corporate worship was Moses commanded by God to make? “And let them make Me a sanctuary; that I may dwell among them.” Exodus 25:8.

3. How did the psalmist esteem the house of God?

“Lord, I have loved the habitation of Thy house, and the place where Your honor dwells.” Psalm 26: 8.

4. How did he contrast the courts of the Lord with the tabernacles of wicked men?

“For a day in Thy courts is better than a thousand. I had rather be a doorkeeper in the house of my God, than to dwell in the tents of wickedness.” Psalm 84: 10.

5. What was his one desire?

“One thing have I desired of the Lord, that will I seek after; that I may dwell in the house of the Lord all the days of my life, to behold the beauty of the Lord, and to inquire in His temple.” Psalm 27: 4.

6. With what affection was the house of God regarded by all faithful Israelites? “For Thy servants take pleasure in her stones, and favor the dust thereof.” Psalm 102: 14.

7. What call to worship is addressed to the Christian believers?

“Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as you see the day approaching.” Hebrews 10: 25.

8. Will Jesus meet only with the large assemblies of His saints?

“For where two or three are gathered together in My name, there am I in the midst of them.” Matthew 18:20.

9. What day of the week has been particularly set apart by God for public worship?

“Six days shall work be done: but the seventh day is the Sabbath of rest, an holy convocation; you shall do no work therein: it is the Sabbath of the Lord in all your dwellings.” Leviticus 23: 3.

10. In what spirit should we enter the house of God?

“God is greatly to be feared in the assembly of the saints, and to be had in reverence of all them that are about Him.” Psalm 89: 7.

“True reverence for God is inspired by a sense of His infinite greatness and a realization of His presence. With this sense of the Unseen, every heart should be deeply impressed. The hour and place of prayer are sacred, because God is there. And as reverence is manifested in attitude and demeanor, the feeling that inspires it will be deepened.”-E. G. White in “Prophets and Kings,” pages 48, 49.

11. How may our reverence for God and His house be shown?

“O come, let us worship and bow down: let us kneel before the Lord our Maker.” Psalm 95: 6.

12. By what may the worship of the lips appropriately be preceded?.

“But the Lord is in His holy temple: let all the earth keep silence before Him.” Habakkuk 2: 20.

13. What does worship include?

a.Praise and thanksgiving. “Enter into His gates with thanksgiving, and into His courts with praise: be ‘thankful unto Him, and bless His name.” Psalm 100: 4.

b.Prayer. “These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with His brethren.” Acts 1: 14.

c.Instruction in and meditation upon His will. “Gather the people together, men, and women, and children, and thy stranger that is within thy gates, that they may hear, and that they may learn, and fear the Lord your God, and observe to do all the words of this law.” Deuteronomy 31: 12.

“TO the humble, believing soul, the house of God on earth is the gate of heaven. The song of praise, the prayer, the words spoken by Christ’s representatives, are God’s appointed agencies to prepare a people for the church above, for that loftier worship into which there can enter nothing that defiles.” - E. G. White.

14. Beside reverence what will characterize every aspect of true worship?

a.Spontaneity. “Accept, I beseech Thee, the freewill offerings of my mouth, O Lord.” Psalm 119:108.

b.Spirituality. “God is a Spirit: and they that worship Him must worship Him in spirit and in truth.” John 4: 24.

15. How attentive is God to sincere worship?

“Then they that feared the Lord spoke often one to another: and the Lord hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before Him for them that feared the Lord, and that thought upon His name.” Malachi 3: 16.

16. What blessings does God bestow upon the sincere worshipper?

a.Spiritual prosperity. “Those that be planted in the house of the Lord shall flourish in the courts of our God.” Psalm 92:13.

b.Strength for every task. “But they that wait upon the Lord shall renew their strength.” Isaiah 40:31.

The Ministry of Song

1.WHAT is one of the most acceptable ways in which we can worship God?

“O come, let us sing unto the Lord: let us make a joyful noise to the Rock of our salvation. Let us come before His presence with thanksgiving, and make a joyful noise unto Him with Psalms.” Psalm 95:1,2.

“The purpose of singing in church is to release emotions; emotions of faith, contrition, confession, gratitude, love, and devotion. Practically every great spiritual awakening in every country has been prefaced or accompanied by the singing of hymns and spiritual songs.”--John B. Nield, Mus. Doc.

Hymn-singing "is the greatest ally to godliness-next to the Scriptures."-Sir Henry Coward.

2. When do, we first hear of God's being praised in sacred song?

"Where was thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? When the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy." Job 38:4-7.

3. What other notable event evoked songs of praise from the angels of God?

"And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host Praising God, and saying, Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, goodwill toward men." Luke 2: 13, 14.

4. What joy did the psalmist find in singing the praises of God?

"It is a good thing to give thanks unto the Lord, and to sing Praises unto Thy name, O Most High." Psalm 92: 1.

"The psalm began with David. Its lyric beauty and tender grace; its rhythmic measure. Its exuberant hallelujahs and plaintive lamentations. Its inimitable expression of the changeful play of light and shade over the soul. Its blending of nature and godliness. Its references to the life of men and the world, as regarded from the standpoint of God-these elements in the Psalter which have endeared it to holy souls in every age owe their origin to the poetic, heaven-touched soul of the sweet singer of Israel." - F B Meyer in "David," page 24.

5. How long did he declare he would continue to sing unto the Lord?

"I will sing unto the Lord as long as I live: I will sing praise to my God while I have my being." Psalm 104:33.

6. How extensively did David make use of singing in the temple worship?

"So the number of them, with their brethren that were instructed in the songs of the Lord, even all that were cunning, was two hundred fourscore and eight." 1 Chronicles 25:7.

7. By what were the temple singers accompanied?

"And David spoke to the chief of the Levites to appoint their brethren to be the singers with instruments of music, psalteries and harps and cymbals, sounding, by lifting up the voice with joy." 1 Chronicles 15: 16. (Read also verses 17-21.)

8. What did the captivity destroy in the hearts of the Israelites?

"They that carried us away captive required of us a song; and they that wasted us required of us mirth, saying, Sing us one of the songs of Zion. How we sing the Lord's song in a strange land?" Psalm 137: 3, 4. (See also verses 1, 2.)

9. What came back to Israel, however, with the return from captivity?

"When the Lord turned again the captivity of Zion, we were like them that dream. Then was our mouth filled with laughter, and our tongue with singing." Psalm 126: 1, 2.

10. What duty have believers today to make use of the gift of song?

"Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs." Colossians 3: 16.

11. What may we also do in our hearts all the day?

"Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord." Ephesians 5: 19.

12. What should new experiences of God's love and mercy evoke from us?

"O sing unto the Lord a new song; for He has done marvelous things." Psalm 98: 1.

When the poet Carpani asked his friend Haydn why his music was so cheerful, the great composer answered: 'I cannot make it otherwise. I write according to the thoughts I feel. When I think upon God, my heart is so full of joy that the notes dance and leap, as it were, from my pen; and since God has given me a cheerful heart, it will be pardoned me that I serve Him with a cheerful spirit.'

13. How will the redeemed express their praise to God when the long reign of sin ends?

"And the ransomed of the Lord shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away." Isaiah 35:10. (See also Isaiah 51:3.)

The Fellowship of Saints

1. How intimate is the relation between the members of the church of Christ?

"One is your Master, even Christ; and all you are brethren." Matthew 23: 8.

"The moment a man's heart touches the heart of Christ in living faith, he becomes, whether he knows it or not, the brother of every other, in heaven or on earth, who has come into the same relationship with Christ. Whoever is united to Christ, is brother or sister to everybody else that is united to Him."-Henry Ward Beecher.

2. What unity should, therefore, characterize the church?

a. Unity of spirit. "Endeavoring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace." Ephesians 4:3.

b. Unity of faith. "There is one body, and one Spirit, even as you are called in one hope of your calling; one Lord, one faith, one baptism." Ephesians 4: 4, 5.

c. Unity of mind and judgment. "Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that you be perfectly joined together in the same mind ' and in the same judgment." 1 Corinthians 1:10. (See also 2 Corinthians 13:11.)

3. What happy relations will then obtain between believers in the church?

“But if we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin.” 1 John 1: 7.

4. How does the psalmist extol the blessed fellowship of believers?

“Behold, how good and how pleasant it is for brethren to dwell together in unity!” Psalm 133: 1.

Worship brings the believer into communion with God and into fellowship with those of like precious faith.

5. What affection should individual members of the church have for one another?

“Seeing you have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that you love one another with a pure heart fervently.” 1 Peter 1: 22. (See also Hebrews 13: 1.)

6. What constitutes the paramount reason for love among the brethren?

“A new commandment I give unto you, That you love one another; as I have loved you, that you also love one another.” John 13: 34.

7. Of what is lack of love for the brethren an evidence?

“He that loves not knows not God; for God is love.” 1 John 4: 8.

“He whose heart is not filled with love for God and his fellow men, is not a true disciple of Christ.” - E. G. White in “The Acts of the Apostles,” page 318.

8. What will love for the brethren lead us to do?

a. Do good to one another. “As we have therefore opportunity, let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the household of faith.” Galatians 6: 10.

b. Forbear with one another. “With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing one another in love.” Ephesians 4: 2.

c. Confess one to another and pray for one another. “Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that you may be healed.” James 5: 16.

9. What contribution should each make to the welfare of the church?

“From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplies, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, makes increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.” Ephesians 4: 16.

Commenting on the list of salutations in the last chapter of the Epistle to the Romans, F. B. Meyer writes:

“Women are here -Phoebe, Priscilla, Mary, Junia, Persis, Julia, and others. The apostle realized the immense help that holy women could furnish in the ministry of the gospel. Men are here-old and young, fathers, brothers, and sons. Lovely titles are given with a lavish, though a discriminating hand-succorer, helpers, beloved, approved in Christ, saints. How especially beautiful the appellation, the beloved Persis, who labored much in the Lord! This church in Rome was a model for other churches. Would that we could realize the same spiritual unity that presided over the gatherings of these early saints.”

10. What question should never arise between members of the church?

“And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest.” Luke 22: 24.

11. How did Jesus portray the proper attitude of believers to one another?

“And He said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors. But you shall not be so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that does serve.” Luke 22: 25, 26.

12. In what will all the members of the church mutually share?

“And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it; or one member be honored, all the members rejoice with it.” 1 Corinthians 12: 26.

13. How should believers relate themselves toward the weaker members?

“We then that are strong ought to bear the infirmities of the weak, and not to please ourselves.” Romans 15:1.

14. What should we be careful never to do?

“Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge this rather, that no man put a stumbling-block or an occasion to fall in his brother’s way.” Romans 14:13.

15. When we wound a weaker brother, against whom do we sin?

“But when you sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, you sin against Christ.” 1 Corinthians 8: 12.

16. How should the poor in the church be cared for?

“I have showed you all things how that so laboring you ought to support the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how He said, It is more blessed to give than to receive.” Acts 20:35.

17. What example of mutual help is provided in the story of the early church?

“And all that believed were together, and had all things common; and sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need.” Acts 2: 44, 45.

18. What thought should the more prosperous churches have for the weaker ones?

a. Material help. “Then the disciples, every man according to his ability, determined to send relief unto the brethren which dwelt in Judea.” Acts 11: 29.

b. Spiritual help. “Then tidings of these things came unto the ears of the church which was in Jerusalem: and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go as far as Antioch.” Acts 11: 22.

19. How will the world be influenced by a church united in fellowship and love?

“That they all may be one; as Thou, Father, art in Me, and I in Thee, that they also may be one in Us: that the world may believe that Thou has sent Me.” John 17: 21. (See also verse 23.)

A Hindu complained to Dr. Stanley Jones: “If you Christians had lived more like Jesus Christ, the process of conversion would have gone on much more rapidly.” – “The Christ of the Indian Road,” page 142.

Is Baptism Essential?

1. BY what ordinance did Jesus ordain that believers should be received into the church of God?

“Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.” Matthew 28:19.

2. By whom was this ordinance carried out in an anticipatory way?

“John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on Him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus.” Acts 19:4.

3. On what occasion did the apostles first carry out the Lord’s instruction?

“Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.” Acts 2: 38.

4. What response did Peter’s appeal evoke?

“Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls.” Acts 2: 41.

5. How did Philip receive the Samaritan believers into the church?

“But when they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.” Acts 8: 12.

6. What appeal did Ananias make to Saul?

“And now why tarriest thou? Arise, and be baptized.” Acts 22: 16.

7. In what way did Paul in turn receive believers into the church?

“And many of the Corinthians hearing believed, and were baptized.” Acts 18: 8.

8. What personal example did Jesus set in respect of baptism?

“Then comes Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.” Matthew 3: 13.

9. Why did John hesitate to baptize Jesus?

“But John forbade Him, saying, I have need to be baptized of Thee, and comes Thou to me?” Matthew 3:14.

10. How was he reassured?

“And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becomes us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered Him.” Matthew 3:15.

11. What are the essential spiritual preliminaries to baptism?

a. Confession of sin. “Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judea, and all the region round about Jordan, and were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.” Matthew 3:5,6. (See also Mark 1:5.)

b. Affirmation of faith in Christ. “And Philip said, If thou believe with all your heart, thou may [be baptized]. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.” Acts 8: 37.

12. What stages of experience does the symbolic act represent?

a. Burial of the old life with Christ. “Know you not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into His death?” Romans 6: 3.

b. Washing away of sin. “And now why tarry thou? Arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the Lord.” Acts 22: 16.

c. Regeneration. “Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy He saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost.” Titus 3: 5.

“As Christ entered upon a new life at His resurrection, so the new life of the Christian properly commences at baptism.” - “Biblical Institutes,” page 289.

13. What is the only form of baptism which can truly symbolize this radical spiritual change?

“And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him.” Acts 8:38.

John Wesley comments on Romans 6:4 as follows: “Buried with Him, alluding to the ancient practice of baptizing by immersion.” – “Explanatory Notes upon the New Testament!”

John Calvin taught: “The very word ‘baptize’ however, signifies to immerse; and it is certain that immersion was the practice of the ancient church.” - “Institutes of the Christian Religion!”

Martin Luther wrote: “Baptism is a Greek word; in Latin it can be translated immersion, as when we plunge something into water that it may be completely covered with water.” - Baptist Encyclopedia, article, “Baptism.”

“For the first thirteen centuries the almost universal practice of baptism was that of which we read in the New Testament, and which is the very meaning of the word ‘baptize’ - that those who were baptized were plunged, submerged, immersed, into the water.” -Dean A. P. Stanley in “Christian Institutions.”

14. Where was John accustomed to baptize his converts?

“And there went out unto him all the land of Judea, and they of Jerusalem, and were all baptized of him in the river of Jordan, confessing their sins.” Mark 1:5.

15. Why did he particularly like the district of Aenon?

“And John also was baptizing in Aenon, near to Salim, because there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized.” John 3:23.

16. By what is the symbolic act of baptism made efficacious?

a. Christ’s resurrection power. “The like figure whereunto even baptism does also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God), by the resurrection of Jesus Christ.” 1 Peter 3: 21.

b. The believer’s faith in Him. “Buried with Him in baptism, wherein also you are risen with Him through the faith of the operation of God, who has raised Him from the dead.” Colossians 2: 12.

17. How will the transformation symbolized by baptism be manifest in the life of the baptized believer?

“That like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of His death, we shall be also in the likeness of His resurrection.” Romans 6: 4, 5.

“The vows which we take upon ourselves in baptism embrace much. In the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, we are buried in the likeness of Christ’s death, and raised in the likeness of His resurrection, and we are to live a new life. Our life is to be bound up with the life of Christ. Henceforth the believer is to bear in mind that he is dedicated to God, to Christ, and to the Holy Spirit. He has died to the world. He is to live to the Lord, to use for Him all his entrusted capabilities, never losing the realization that he bears God’s signature, that he is a subject of Christ’s kingdom, a partaker of the divine nature. He is to surrender to God all that he has, employing all his gifts to His name’s glory.” - E. G. White.

18. In view of its spiritual significance, how important is baptism? “He that believes and is baptized shall be saved.” Mark 16: 16.

19. Without the experience which baptism symbolizes, what must be our fate?

“Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.” John 3: 5.

A Lesson In Humility

1. WHAT sinful feelings possessed the hearts of the disciples as they sat at the last Passover supper? “And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest.” Luke 22: 24.

2. Reading their thoughts, what silent lesson did Jesus begin to teach them?

“He rises from supper, and laid aside His garments; and took a towel, and girded Himself. After that He pours water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples’ feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith He was girded.” John 13: 4, 5.

3. By whom was such service usually performed?

“And she [Abigail] arose, and bowed herself on her face, to the earth, and said, Behold, let your handmaid be a servant to wash the feet of the servants of my lord.” 1 Samuel 25: 41.

“So Christ expressed His love for His disciples. Their selfish spirit filled Him with sorrow, but He entered into no controversy with them regarding their difficulty. Instead He gave them an example they would never forget. One of the last acts of His life on earth was to gird Himself as a servant, and perform a servant’s part.” - E. G. White in “The Desire of Ages,” pages 644, 645.

4. While some of the disciples accepted Jesus’ service in shamed silence, what protest did Peter venture against His thus humiliating Himself?

“Then comes He to Simon Peter: and Peter said unto Him, Lord, does Thou wash my feet?” John 13: 6

5. How did Jesus answer Peter’s protest?

“Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knows not now; but thou shall know hereafter.” Verse 7 .

6. How persistent was Peter in his refusal to allow Jesus to serve him? “Peter said unto Him, Thou shall never wash my feet.” Verse 8.

7. What warning did Jesus utter?

“Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou has no part with Me.” Verse 8.

8. How did Peter manifest his horror of any such possibility?

“Simon Peter said unto Him, Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head.” Verse 9.

9. What did Jesus then explain to him?

“Jesus said to him, He that is washed needs not save to wash his feet, but is clean every whit.” Verse 10.

“While baptism relates to that purification and renovation of the whole man, and happens only once, the washing of feet was intended to illustrate a daily cleansing from the contamination of the world, which even the regenerate man cannot avoid, but which would become injurious to him only in case he did not immediately endeavor to remove it.” - Olshausen.

10. What further pronouncement revealed the fact that the ordinance was symbolic and could not in itself cleanse the heart?

“You are clean, but not all.” Verse 10.

11. To whom did He refer?

“For He knew who should betray Him; therefore said He, You are not all clean.” Verse 11.

12. When they were again seated, what question did Jesus ask His disciples?

“So after He had washed their feet, and had taken His garments, and was set down again, He said unto them, Know you what I have done to you?” Verse 12.

13. What had He shown Himself to be?

“For whether is greater, he that sits at meat, or he that serves? is not he that sits at meat? but I am among you as He that serves.” Luke 22: 27.

14. How then ought they to regard any service for others?

“Verily, verily, I say unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord; neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him.” John 13: 16.

15. By what ordinance were the disciples henceforth to keep this lesson of humility in mind?

“If I then, your Lord and Master, have washed your feet; you also ought to wash one another’s feet. For I have given you an example, that you should do as I have done to you.” Verse 14.

“ ‘I have given you an example, that you should do as I have done to you.’ It is almost like the institution of a sacrament, the only sacrament, by the way, mentioned in this gospel as founded by Christ.”-Dean W. R. Inge in *The Listener*.

16. What joy and profit will believers find as they also regularly celebrate this ordinance?

“If you know these things, happy are you if you, do them.” Verse 17.

“The Waldenses, who are acknowledged to have come the nearest to the purity of the faith and practice of the doctrine of Christ, held feet-washing as an ordinance of the church. They say: ‘We confess that feet-washing is an ordinance of Christ which He Himself administered to His disciples, and recommended by example to the practice of believers.’ - Waldensian “Confession of Faith.”

At the Lord’s Table

1. WHAT was the central ordinance in the life of the early church?

“And they continued steadfastly in the apostles’ doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.” Acts 2: 42. “And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart.” Acts 2: 46.

2. On what occasion have we a record of Paul celebrating the communion service with one of the churches he had raised up?

“And upon the first day of the week, when the disciples came together to break bread, Paul preached unto them, ready to depart on the morrow; and continued his speech until midnight.” Acts 20:7.

3. How did the ordinance originate?

“For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the same night in which He was betrayed took bread.” 1 Corinthians 11:23.

4. For what purpose had the disciples gathered on this occasion?

“And He sent Peter and John, saying, Go and prepare us the Passover, that we may eat. And they made ready the Passover. And when the hour was come, He sat down, and the twelve apostles with Him.” Luke 22: 8-14.

5. How intensely significant did Jesus realize this particular Passover service was to be?

“And He said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this Passover with you before I suffer: for I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God.” Verses 15, 16.

“Christ was standing at the point of transition between two economies and their two great festivals. He, the spotless Lamb of God, was about to present Himself as a sin offering, and He would thus bring to an end the system of types and ceremonies that for four thousand years had pointed to His death. As He ate the Passover with His disciples, He instituted in its place the service that was to be the memorial of His great sacrifice.” - E. G. White in “The Desire of Ages,” page 652.

6. Following the supper and the institution of the ordinance of humility, what service of remembrance did He inaugurate?

“And He took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them.” Verse 19.

7. How did Jesus explain the symbolism of the broken bread?

“This is My body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of Me.” Verse 19.

8. What did He next distribute to the disciples?

“And He took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink you all of it.” Matthew 26: 27.

9. What did He pronounce the cup to be?

“This cup is the new testament in MY blood, which is shed for you.” Luke 22: 20.

10. In what beautiful way does Paul call to mind the significance of the Lord's supper?

"The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ." 1 Corinthians 10: 16.

"As we receive the bread and wine symbolizing Christ's broken body and spilled blood, the thought of Calvary awakens living and sacred emotions in our hearts. Praise to God and the Lamb will be in our hearts and on our lips."-E. G. White in "Desire of Ages," page 661.

11. What expressions does he recall which reveal Jesus' intention that the supper should be a permanent memorial in the church?

"This do in remembrance of Me." 1 Corinthians 11:24. "This do you, as oft as you drink it, in remembrance of Me." Verse 25.

12. How important is the remembrance of Christ's sacrificial death on our behalf?

"By which also you are saved, if you keep in memory what I preached unto you how that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures." 1 Corinthians 15: 2, 3.

13. What other important truth will the regular observance of the communion service keep in mind?

"For as often as you eat this bread, and drink this cup, you do show the Lord's death till He come." 1 Corinthians 11: 26.

"The communion service points to Christ's Second Coming. It was designed to keep this hope vivid in the minds of the disciples in their tribulation they found comfort in the hope of their Lord's return." - E. G. White in "The Desire of Ages," page 659.

14. What guilt attaches to unworthy partaking of so solemn a service?

"Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. For he that eats and drinks unworthily, eats and drinks damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body." Verses 27-29.

15. How does Paul, therefore, counsel believers to prepare themselves for this memorial service?

"But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup." Verse 28.

16. Of what commendation should we seek to be worthy?

"Now I praise you, brethren, that you remember me in all things, and keep the ordinances, as I delivered them to you." Verse 2.

15. Christian Service

Saved to Serve

1. To what high service are believers called?

"And all things are of God, who has reconciled us to Himself by Jesus Christ, and has given to us the ministry of reconciliation." 2 Corinthians 5: 18.

"To believe in God is to dedicate our lives to the cause of His kingdom in the world. The second commandment flows out from the first. When a man turns to God desiring to serve Him God directs his attention to the world and its need." - Emil Brunner in "The Divine Imperative," page 189.

2. Wherein does the chief honor of service lie?

"For we are laborers together with God." 1 Corinthians 3:9.

"The Christian is not the agent, but the instrument, not the workman, but the tool; it is not I and Christ, nor even Christ and I; but 'Christ through me'; as St. Paul says, 'according to the power that works in us.'" - Dr. Griffith Thomas.

3. How readily should the believer respond to the call to service?

"I heard the voice of the Lord, saying, Whom shall I send, and who will go for us? Then said I, Here am I; send me." Isaiah 6: 8.

"It is not enough to give our time, or energy, or money. Many will gladly give anything, rather than themselves. None of these will be accounted as a sufficient substitute by Him who gave, not only His possessions, but His very self for us. As the Lord Jesus was all for us, He asks that we should be all for Him-body, soul, and spirit; one's reasonable service and gift." - F. B. Meyer in "Light on Life's Duties," page 46.

4. How are those who respond to the call to service commended?

"The fruit of the righteous is a tree of life; and he that wins souls is wise." Proverbs 11:30.

5. What provision does God promise to His servants for the fulfillment of their ministry?

"And God is able to make all grace abound toward you; that you, always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound to every good -work." 2 Corinthians 9:8.

"When God calls us to a work He gives the needed strength. Not one of us knows the possibilities of usefulness that lie folded up in his hand and brain and heart. The Lord can use human feebleness as well as human strength." - J. R. Miller.

6. How does He encourage them in their service?

“Be you strong therefore, and let not your hands be weak: for your work shall be rewarded.” 2 Chronicles 15:7. “Therefore, my beloved brethren, be you steadfast, unmovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as you know that your labor is not in vain in the Lord.” 1 Corinthians 15:58.

7. To whom are believers to look for an example of labor?

“Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and High Priest of our Profession, Christ Jesus.” Hebrews 3:1.

8. What reasons are advanced for zeal in the Lord’s work?

a. Urgency of the task. “Say not you, There are yet four months, and then comes harvest? Behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; for they are white already to harvest.” John 4:35.

b. Scarcity of laborers. “Therefore said He unto them, The harvest truly is great but the laborers are few.” Luke 10:2.

c. Shortness of time. “Redeeming the time, because the days are evil.” Ephesians 5:16. “And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed. The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armor of light.” Romans 13:11,12.

9. How does Paul set forth his goal in service?

“But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the gospel of the grace of God.” Acts 20: 24.

10. What claim was he able to make at the close of his life?

“I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith.” 2 Timothy 4:7.

11. How does he, therefore, exhort other workers for God?

“Take heed to the ministry which thou has received in the Lord, that thou fulfil it.” Colossians 4:17. “Make full proof of thy ministry.” 2 Timothy 4:5.

12. What influence will our zeal have on others?

“For I know the forwardness of your mind, for which I boast of you to them of Macedonia, that Achaia was ready a year ago; and your zeal has provoked very many.” 2 Corinthians 9: 2.

13. How will the servants of God be rewarded?

“Now he that planted and he that watered are one: and every man shall receive his own reward according to his own labor.” 1 Corinthians 3: 8.

Testifying to the blessedness of service, a missionary to China declared: “I thought it meant renunciation; but I found it meant reward.”

14. When and by whom will the reward be conferred?

“And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, you shall receive a crown of glory that fades not away.” 1 Peter 5: 4.

The Great Commission

1. WHAT great commission did Jesus give to His disciples at His ascension?

“And He said unto them, Go you into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.” Mark 16: 15.

Of the missionary zeal of the early Christians we are told: “Every congregation was a missionary society, and every Christian believer a missionary, inflamed by the love of Christ to convert his fellow men.”- Schaff’s “History of the Christian Church,” Volume II, Page 20.

2. What is to be the theme of the gospel message?

“And daily in the temple, and in every house, they ceased not to teach and preach Jesus Christ.” Acts 5: 42.

3. What aspect of Christ’s ministry is central to the message?

“For I determined not to know anything among you, save Jesus Christ, and Him crucified.” 1 Corinthians 2:2 .

4. What aid does the Lord promise His witnesses in the delivery of their message?

“And, behold, I send the promise of My Father upon you: but tarry you in the city of Jerusalem, until you be endued with power from on high.” Luke 24: 49.

“The Pentecostal commission can only be carried out by a Pentecostal church, in Pentecostal power.”-Dr. Andrew Murray.

5. To how many is the gospel to be carried?

“Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.” Matthew 28: 19.

6. Are any social classes to be missed?

“Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, witnessing both to small and great, saying none other things than those which the prophets and Moses did say should come.” Acts 26:22.

7. How did the apostles make sure that all should receive the message?

“I kept back nothing that was profitable unto you, but have showed you, and have taught you publicly, and from house to house.” Acts 20: 20.

8. As a result, what tremendous claim was Paul able to make toward the close of his ministry?

“If you continue in the faith grounded and settled, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which you have heard, and which was preached to every creature which is under heaven.” Colossians 1: 23.

9. With what mighty message is the gospel proclamation to close?

“And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.” Matthew 24: 14.

“When the members of the church of God do their appointed work in the needy fields at home and abroad, in fulfillment of the gospel commission, the whole world will soon be warned, and the Lord Jesus will return to this earth with power and great glory.”

-E. G. White in “The Acts of the Apostles,” page iii.

10. What did Jesus warn the gospel witnesses they would have to meet?

“But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues; and you shall be brought before governors and kings for My sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles.” Matthew 10: 17, 18.

11. What did Paul endure for the gospel’s sake?

“For I think that God has set forth us the apostles last, as it were appointed to death: for we are made a spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men.” 1 Corinthians 4: 9.

12. How did he react to tribulation?

“But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the gospel of the grace of God.” Acts 20:24.

13. What definite assurance of success is given him?

“So shall My Word be that goes forth out of My mouth: it shall not return unto Me void, but it shall accomplish that which I Please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it.” Isaiah 55:11.

14. What will make up for all the tears of God’s witnesses?

“They that sow in tears shall reap in joy. He that goes forth and weeps, bearing precious seed, shall doubtless come again with rejoicing, bringing his sheaves with him.” Psalm 126: 5, 6.

15. What eternal reward will the soul-winner receive?

“And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever.” Daniel 12: 3.

“Every impulse of the Holy Spirit leading men to goodness and to God, is noted in the books of heaven, and in the day of God the workers through whom He has wrought will be commended. They will enter into the joy of the Lord as they see in His kingdom those who have been redeemed through their instrumentality. And they are privileged to participate in His work there, because they have gained a fitness for it by participation in His work here.”-E. G. White in “Christ’s Object Lessons,” page 361.

What We Owe to God

1. To whom do all things in heaven and earth belong?

“The earth is the Lord’s, and the fullness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein.” Psalm 24: 1.

2. What authority over the earth did God delegate to man at creation?

“Thou made him to have dominion over the works of Thy hands; Thou has put all things under his feet.” Psalm 8:6.

3. What capacity has He given to man to develop the resources of the earth?

“But thou shall remember the Lord thy God: for it is He that gives thee Power to get wealth.” Deuteronomy 8: 18.

4. As a continual reminder of God’s ownership and man’s stewardship, what did He require of His ancient people?

“And all the tithes of the land, whether of the seed of the land, or of the fruit of the tree, is the Lord’s: it is holy unto the Lord.” Leviticus 27: 30.

“Tithing is an expression of our stewardship in giving. We tithe in recognition of God’s ownership of the whole, just as a tenant pays rent in recognition of the landlord’s ownership of, or rights in, the house or farm.” - Charles A. Cook in “Stewardship and Missions,” page 123.

5. How do we know that this divinely ordained tithing principle long antedated Israel’s organization as a nation?

“And Melchizedek king of Salem brought forth bread and wine: and he was the priest of the Most High God. And he blessed him, and said, Blessed be Abram of the Most High God. And he gave him tithes of all.” Genesis 14: 18-20.

“Tithing was practiced by men long before the Jewish nation had an existence. The giving of one-tenth of all by Abraham to Melchizedek is the first recorded instance of tithing in the Old Testament. It is a model for us. Abraham’s tithing is free from all the objections that are made against tithing on the ground that it is a Jewish institution.” - Ibid.

6. What vow did Jacob make?

“And this stone, which I have set for a pillar, shall be God’s house: and of all that Thou shall give me I will surely give the tenth unto Thee.” Genesis 28: 22.

7. How scrupulously careful were the Israelites commanded to be in setting apart the tithe?

“Thou shall truly tithe all the increase of thy seed, that the field brings forth year by year.” Deuteronomy 14: 22.

8. Where was it to be brought?

“Then brought all Judah the tithe of the corn and the new wine and the oil unto the treasuries.” Nehemiah 13: 12. (See also Deuteronomy 12:5,6.)

9. Did the Israelite have any right to use the tithe as he pleased?

“You shall not do after all the things that we do here this day, every man whatsoever is right in his own eyes.” Deuteronomy 12: 8.

10. To what object was God’s tithe applied?

“And, behold, I have given the children of Levi all the tenth in Israel for an inheritance for their service which they serve, even the service of the tabernacle of the congregation.” Numbers 18: 21.

11. What channel of spiritual blessing did the tithe thus keep open to Israel?

“And at that time were some appointed over the chambers for the treasures, for the offerings, for the first-fruits, and for the tithes for Judah rejoiced for the priest and for the Levites that waited. And both the singers and the porters kept the ward of their God.” Nehemiah 12: 44, 45.

12. What material blessings did God also promise as a reward of faithfulness?

“Honor the Lord with thy substance, and with the first-fruits of all your increase: so shall thy barns be filled with plenty, and thy presses shall burst out with new wine.” Proverbs 3: 9, 10.

13. How did God designate the withholding of His tithe?

“Will a man rob God? Yet you have robbed Me. But you say, Wherein have we robbed Thee? In tithes and offerings. You are cursed with a curse: for you have robbed Me, even this whole nation.” Malachi 3: 8, 9.

14. While the temple was still standing, how were the first gospel preachers supported?

“Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in your Purses. And into whatsoever city or town you enter, inquire who in it is worthy; and, there abide till you go thence.” Matthew 10: 9-11.

15. Did Jesus intend, however, that the gospel ministry should continue to be dependent upon proffered hospitality?

“Then said He unto them, But now, He that has a Purse, let him take it, and likewise his scrip: and he that has no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one.” Luke 22: 36.

16. What stewardship did Paul declare was given to believers in the gospel dispensation?

“Do you not know that they which minister about holy things live of the things of the temple? and they which wait at the altar are partakers with the altar? Even so has the Lord ordained that they which preach the gospel should live of the gospel.” 1 Corinthians 9: 13, 14. (See also verse 11.)

“Some would have the gospel merely charity-nothing due, but all freewill offerings; then I am sure it is not ‘even so’ as the temple, for there were freewill offerings, it is true; but that is not all; there were tithes and other offerings, as of obligation.... There is no coherence, no argument, no comparison, nor good sense, which can be made out of this text unless the Lord had ordained, that, as the tithes were paid to the priests of the temple, they should likewise be paid to the priests of the gospel.” - Reverend Chas. Leslie in “Theological Works,” pages 341-346.

What We Owe to God

17. What other reminders have we of the believers’ obligation to support the gospel ministry?

“If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall reap your carnal things? I Corinthians 9: 11. “The laborer is worthy of his reward.” 1 Timothy 5: 18.

18. With what regularity should Christians set apart their tithes and offerings for the cause of God, and on what basis?

“Upon the first day of the week let every one of you lay by him in store, as God has prospered him.” 1 Corinthians 16: 2.

Tithing does not belong to the “law of commandments contained in ordinances” which were nailed “to the cross.” It is not typical, nor does it foreshadow anything. It is a continual reminder of the Lord’s ownership. The death of Christ did not change the fact of God’s ownership. It rather deepens the Christian’s realization of his debt. The obligation to acknowledge that ownership by tithes and offerings is thus strengthened, not diminished.

19. What divine promise to Israel of old may be claimed equally by believers today?

“Bring you all the tithes into the storehouse, that there may be meat in Mine house, and prove Me now herewith, said the Lord of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it.” Malachi 3:10.

There are many thousands of earnest Christian people in every land who have embraced the Lord’s plan for the support and extension of His work. Without exception, they testify that, as they have rendered a faithful tithe, the Lord has blessed what remained as He did the barrel of meal and the cruse of oil of the woman of Zarephath. With one accord they rejoice in reaching higher ground in faith and life. And as they have seen the result of their giving in souls won for the kingdom of God, they have found a satisfaction of spirit which is indeed their chief reward.

Freewill Offerings

1. WHAT does God ask believers to bring to Him in addition to the tithe?

“And the Lord spoke unto Moses, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, that they bring Me an offering.” Exodus 25: 1, 2.

The tithe did not belong to the Israelite. He did not give it; he paid it to the Lord as a recognition of the benefits he received from the Creator’s hand. Then, after the Israelite had paid a faithful tithe, he gave “freewill offerings” as a token of thankfulness for special mercies and benefits. These gave him opportunity, not merely to recognize his duty to God, but to reveal his love.

2. Upon how many rests the responsibility of rendering offerings to God? “Let all that be round about Him bring presents unto Him that ought to be feared.” Psalm 76:11.

“Teach your children that God has a claim upon all they possess, a claim that nothing can ever cancel; whatever they have is theirs only in trust, as a test of their obedience.” - E. G. White.

3. In what spirit should such offerings be brought?

“As for me, in the uprightness of mine heart I have willingly offered all these things: and now have I seen with joy Thy people, which are present here, to offer willingly unto Thee.” 1 Chronicles 29:17.

4. By what name are they appropriately designated?

“And thither you shall bring your freewill offerings.” Deuteronomy 12: 6.

5. Of what are such offerings an evidence?

“For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.” Luke 12: 34.

“There must be consecrated giving. I am tired of seeing money ‘raised.’ We must learn to give it.” - J. Willis Baer.

6. What would be indicative of a lack of thankfulness? “They shall not appear before the Lord empty.” Deuteronomy 16: 16.

7. Beside their regular freewill offerings, what special offerings were called for when the tabernacle was to be built, and how did the Israelites respond?

“The children of Israel brought a willing offering unto the Lord, every man and woman, whose heart made them willing to bring for all manner of work, which the Lord had commanded to be made by the hand of Moses.” Exodus 35:29.

8. How continuous was the stream of gifts?

“And they brought yet unto him free offerings every morning.” Exodus 36: 3.

9. What restraint at last had to be put upon the people?

“And they spoke unto Moses, saying, The people bring much more than enough for the service of the work, which the Lord commanded to make. So the people were restrained from bringing. For the stuff they had was sufficient for all the work to make it, and too much.” Verses 5 -7.

10. With what similar liberality did the Israelites give for the erection of the temple?

“Then the people rejoiced, for that they offered willingly, because with perfect heart they offered willingly to the Lord: and David the king also rejoiced with great joy.” 1 Chronicles 29:9.

11. On a later occasion, how did the people respond to Joash’s appeal for funds to repair the temple? “And all the princes and all the people rejoiced, and brought in, and cast into the chest, until they had made an end. Thus they did day by day, and gathered money in abundance.” 2 Chronicles 24:10,11.

12. How liberal, too, were the returned captives?

“And some of the chief of the fathers, when they came to the house of the Lord which is at Jerusalem, offered freely for the house of God to set it up in his place. They gave after their ability unto the treasure of the work threescore and one thousand drams of gold, and five thousand pound of silver, and one hundred priests’ garments.” Ezra 2: 68, 69.

13. Inspired by these examples, what should be the measure of our gifts to the Lord?

“Every man shall give as he is able.” Deuteronomy 16: 17.

“If there was ever a time when sacrifices should be made, it is now. Those who have money should understand that now is the time to use it for God.” - E. G. White.

14. What contrast did Jesus draw between the gifts of the rich Pharisees and the poor widow?

“And He looked up, and saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasury. And He saw also a certain poor widow casting in thither two mites. And He said, Of a truth I say unto you, that this poor widow has cast in more than they all.” Luke 21:1-3.

15. What is more important than the size of the gift?

“For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God: but she of her penury has cast in all the living that she had.” Luke 21:4. “For if there be first a willing mind, it is accepted according to that a man has, and not according to that he has not.” 2 Corinthians 8:12.

Ministry to the Needy

1. How may we show our gratitude for the bounties of God’s grace? “Freely you have received, freely give.” Matthew 10: 8.

2. For what opportunities should we be constantly on the watch?

“Distributing to the necessity of saints; given to hospitality.” Romans 12: 13.

“The world is very full of sorrow and trial, and we cannot live among our fellow men and be true without sharing their loads. Selfishness must die or else our own heart’s life must be frozen within us.” “Service goes with loving. We cannot love truly and not serve. Love without serving is but an empty sentiment; a poor mockery.” - J. R. Millerin “Making the Most of Life.”

3. Of what is Christian liberality an evidence?

“Wherefore show you to them, and before the churches, the proof of your love, and of our boasting on your behalf.” 2 Corinthians 8: 24.

4. What would the withholding of help from the needy demonstrate?

“But who so has this world’s good, and sees his brother have need, and shuts up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwells the love of God in him?” 1 John 3:17.

5. How did a certain young man reveal his real character?

“Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou has, and give to the poor, and thou shall have treasure in heaven: and come and follow Me. But then the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful: for he had great possessions.” Matthew 19: 21, 22.

6. What blessing shall we find in ministry to the needy?

“It is more blessed to give than to receive.” Acts 20:35.

7. To what lengths of liberality did the early believers go?

“And all that believed were together, and had all things common; and sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need.” Acts 2: 44, 45.

8. For what does Paul commend the churches of Macedonia?

“In a great trial of affliction the abundance of their joy and their deep poverty abounded unto the riches of their liberality.” 2 Corinthians 8: 2.

9. What individual examples of Christian benevolence are cited in the record of the early church? Dorcas, well known in the early Christian church for her deeds of mercy ministers to the poor and needy.

a. Phebe. “I commend unto you Phoebe our sister, which is a servant of the church which is at Cenchrea: for she has been a succor of many, and of myself also.” Romans 16: 1, 2.

b. Dorcas. “Now there was at Joppa a certain disciple named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas: this woman was full of good works and alms deeds which She did.” Acts 9:36.

10. What remembrance has God of the liberality of His children?

“For God is not unrighteous to forget your work and labor of love, which you have showed toward His name, in that you have ministered to the saints, and do minister.” Hebrews 6:10.

11. Does the smallest act of generosity pass unnoticed?

“For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in My name, because you belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward.” Mark 9:41.

12. How does God regard help rendered to the poor and needy?

“He that has pity upon the poor lends unto the Lord.” Proverbs 19: 17.

13. In what ways will the Lord recompense the liberality of the saints?

“The liberal soul shall be made fat: and he that waters shall be watered also himself.” Proverbs 11:25.

14. To what paradox connected with giving does the Bible draw attention?

“There is that makes himself rich, yet has nothing: there is that makes himself poor, yet has great riches.” Proverbs 13:7.

15. What other promise is given to those who minister to the needy?

“Blessed is he that considered the poor: the Lord will deliver him in time of trouble.” Psalm 41:1.

16. What picture does Jesus draw of the final reward of the liberal soul?

“Then shall the King say unto them on His right hand, Come, you blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: for I was an hungered, and you gave Me meat: I was thirsty, and you gave Me drink. I was a stranger, and you took Me in. Naked, and you clothed Me. I was sick, and you visited Me. I was in prison, and you came unto Me.” Matthew 25:34-36.

“Good works can never purchase salvation, but they are an evidence of the faith that acts by love and purifies the soul. And though the eternal reward is not bestowed because of our merit, yet it will be in proportion to the work that has been done through the grace of Christ.” - E. G. White in “The Desire of Ages,” page 314.

16. The Home

A Sacred Ordinance

1. WHEN God had created man and provided him with perfect surroundings, what did He still feel was needed to complete his happiness?

“And the Lord God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him.” Genesis 2: 18. (Read verses 21-23.)

“God celebrated the first marriage. Thus the institution has for its originator the Creator of the universe. It was one of the first gifts of God to man, and it is one of the two institutions that, after the fall, Adam brought with him beyond the gates of Paradise.

When the divine principles are recognized and obeyed in this relation, marriage is a blessing. It guards the purity and happiness of the race, it provides for man's social needs, it elevates the physical, the intellectual, and the moral nature."-E. G. White in "Patriarchs and Prophets," page 46.

2. For what purpose beside companionship was this first union ordained?

"And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth." Genesis 1: 28. (See also Jeremiah 29: 6.)

3. Of what was it to be a pattern?

Of all future homes. "For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh." Ephesians 5:31.

"The family tie is the closest, the most tender and sacred, of any on earth.. It was designed to be a blessing to mankind. And it is a blessing wherever the marriage covenant is entered into intelligently, in the fear of God, and with due consideration for its responsibilities."-E. G. White in "Ministry of Healing," pages 356, 357.

4. What wedding did Jesus grace with His presence?

"And the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there: and both Jesus was called, and His disciples, to the marriage." John 2:1,2.

5. In what honor, therefore, should the marriage estate be held? "Let marriage be had in honor among all." Hebrews 13:4. (RV)

6. In a sinful world how is the happiness of the family relationship often marred? "Nevertheless such [as marry] shall have trouble in the flesh." 1 Corinthians 7: 28.

7. Why are many marriages unhappy?

"Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship has righteousness with unrighteousness? And what communion has light with darkness? And what concord has Christ with Belial? Or what part has he that believes with an infidel?" 2 Corinthians 6: 14, 15.

8. For this reason what marriages did God prohibit among the Israelites?

"Neither shall thou make marriages with them [the heathen around]; thy daughter thou shall not give unto his son, nor his daughter shall thou take unto thy son. For they will turn away thy son from following Me, that they may serve other gods." Deuteronomy 7: 3, 4.

9. What very proper care did Abraham show in seeking a wife for his son?

"And I will make thee swear by the Lord, the God of heaven, and the God of the earth, that thou shall not take a wife unto my son of the daughters of the Canaanites, among whom I dwell. But thou shall go unto my country, and to my kindred, and take a wife unto my son Isaac." Genesis 24: 3, 4.

10. What advice did Paul offer to Christians contemplating marriage with unbelievers?

"Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, said the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you." 2 Corinthians 6: 17.

"We need not be surprised at these strong and repeated prohibitions. A mixed marriage is a prolific source of misery. In the course of a considerable pastoral experience, I have never known one to result in perfect happiness. Believers, in such unions, do not level their unbelieving partners up to Christ; but are themselves dragged down to infinite misery and self-reproach."-F. B. Meyer in "Israel," page 69.

11. Under what conditions, only, did he say marriage should be entered into? "She is at liberty to be married to whom she will; only in the Lord." 1 Corinthians 7: 39.

12. How will the Lord recompense those who are denied the blessings of marriage by their loyalty to Christ?

"And will be a Father unto you, and you shall be My sons and daughters, said the Lord Almighty." 2 Corinthians 6: 18.

13. What high standard do the Scriptures set for the relationship between man and wife?

"Teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands." Titus 2:4. "Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave Himself for it." Ephesians 5:25.

14. How exclusively devoted should man and wife be to each other?

"Drink waters out of your own cistern, and running waters out of your own well. Let thy fountains be dispersed abroad, and rivers of waters in the streets. Let them be only your own, and not strangers' with thee. Let thy fountain be blessed: and rejoice with the wife of thy youth." Proverbs 5: 15-18.

15. What commandments were designed particularly to safeguard family life?

"Thou shall not commit adultery." Exodus 20: 14. "Thou shall not covet thy, neighbor's wife." Verse 17.

16. What incentive beside family loyalty is there to purity of life?

"Know ye not that your bodies are the members of Christ? Shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid." 1 Corinthians 6:15. (See also verses 19,20.)

17. How indissoluble did God intend marriage to be?

"Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder." Matthew 19: 6.

18. By what only, may the marriage relationship be dissolved?

“Know you not, brethren (for I speak to them that know the law), how that the law has dominion over a man as long as he lives? For the woman which has an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he lives.” Romans 7:1,2.

19. While the marriage estate is dissolved without compunction by the world, what endeavors should believers make to uphold the sanctity of marriage even under provocation?

“And unto the married I command, yet not I, but the Lord, Let not the wife depart from her husband: but and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.” 1 Corinthians 7:10,11.

20. What special responsibility rests upon believers in divided homes?

“For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean, but now are they holy. For what knows thou, O wife, whether thou shall save thy husband? Or how knows thou, O man, whether thou shall save thy wife?” 1 Corinthians 7: 14-16.

The Ideal Husband

1. WHAT position does the husband occupy in the family? “For the husband is the head of the wife.” Ephesians 5: 2

2. Why is this position of responsibility his?

“For the man is not of the woman; but the woman of the man. Neither was the man created for the woman; but the woman for the man.” 1 Corinthians 11: 8, 9.

3. What beautiful illustration of headship precludes any abuse of this prerogative?

“For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and He is the Savior of the body.” Ephesians 5:23.

4. To whom will the godly husband himself be subject?

“But I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman is the man; and the head of Christ is God.” 1 Corinthians 11: 3.

5. How should husbands relate themselves to their wives?

“Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter against them.” Colossians 3: 19.

“Religion is love, and a religious home is one in which love reigns. There must be love in action, love that flows out in all the home intercourse, showing itself in a thousand little expressions of thoughtfulness, kindness, unselfishness, and gentle courtesy.” J. R. Miller in “Week-Day Religion,” page 81.

6. What should be the degree of their affection?

“Nevertheless let every one of you in particular so love his wife even as himself.” Ephesians 5: 33. “So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies.” Verse 28.

7. How will the husband’s love come back to him?

“He that loves his wife loves himself. For no man ever yet hated his own flesh but nourishes and cherishes it, even as the Lord the church.” Verses 28, 29.

8. What still nobler example of love is set before the husband for his emulation? “Even as Christ also loved the church, and gave Himself for it.” Verse 25.

9. What is one beautiful example of love between husband and wife which the Scriptures provide?

“And Isaac brought her into his mother Sarah’s tent, and took Rebekah, and she became his wife; and he loved her: and Isaac was comforted after his mother’s death.” Genesis 24:67.

10. In addition to bestowing upon his wife his love, what honor should the husband give to her?

“Likewise, you husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honor unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered.” 1 Peter 3:7.

11. What pride should he have in her?

“But the woman is the glory of the man.” 1 Corinthians 11: 7.

12. With what consideration should a husband treat his wife?

“Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewise also the wife unto the husband.” 1 Corinthians 7: 3.

13. What responsibility has the husband to his household?

“But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he has denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.” 1 Timothy 5: 8.

14. How long does love make the heaviest burdens?

“And Jacob served seven years for Rachel; and they seemed unto him but a few days, for the love he had to her.” Genesis 29: 20.

15. What will a good father delight in giving to his children?

“If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? Or if he ask a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent? or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion?” Luke 11:11,12. “You know how to give good gifts unto your children.” Verse 13.

16. What heritage will he also seek to pass on to them?

“A good man leaves an inheritance to his children’s children.” Proverbs 13: 22. “The just man walks in his integrity: his children are blessed after him.” Proverbs 20: 7.

17. What should increase with increasing years?

“With the ancient is wisdom; and in length of days understanding.” Job 12: 12. “Speak thou that the aged men be sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, in patience.” Titus 2: 1, 2.

18. What blessings does God promise to the godly husband?

“Thy wife shall be as a fruitful vine by the sides of your house: thy children like olive plants round about thy table. Behold that thus shall the man be blessed that feared the Lord.” Psalm 128:3,4. “Yea, thou shall see thy children’s children, and peace upon Israel.” Verse 6.

The Ideal Wife

1. WHAT companionship did God provide for Adam?

“And the Lord God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him.” Genesis 2:18. “Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.” Genesis 2:24.

2. What affection should a wife have for her husband and children?

“That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children.” Titus 2:4.

“And no marriage is heaven-made, heaven-sent, or heaven sanctioned, which does not spring from a supreme love. Alas, how many marry from some less worthy motive! Some for a home; others to escape from uncongenial surroundings. Others for position; others for baser reasons still. All these sin against God’s purpose; they sin against one another; and, not least, they sin against themselves. No two should marry unless each feels that life without the other would be incomplete. Less than this will never suffice.”-F. B. Meyer in “Israel,” page 67.

3. What mutual consideration should there be between husband and wife?

“Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewise also the wife unto the husband.” 1 Corinthians 7: 3.

4. Since the husband is head of the household what respect should wives have for their husband’s wishes? “Wives submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord.” Ephesians 5:22.

5. What pattern of loving submission is set before the wife?

“Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing.” Verse 24.

6. What limits of the submission, however, ought wives to keep in mind?

“Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.” Colossians 3:18.

7. What other wifely virtues does the Bible commend?

a. Sobriety and faithfulness. “Even so must their wives be grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things.” 1 Timothy 3:11.

b. Discretion, chastity, and goodness. “To be discreet, chaste good.” Titus 2:5.

c. Industry. “She looked well to the ways of her household, and eats not the bread of idleness.” Proverbs 31: 27.

d. Home-builder. “Every wise woman built her house: but the foolish plucked it down with her hands.” Proverbs 14: 1.

e. Home-keeper. “Weepers at home.” Titus 2:5.

f. Benevolence. “She stretches out her hand to the poor; yes, she reaches forth her hands to the needy.” Proverbs 31:20.

8. On the other hand, what particularly deplorable traits are mentioned?

a. Idleness and gossiping. “And withal they learn to be idle, wandering about from house to house; and not only idle, but tattlers also and busybodies, speaking things which they ought not.” 1 Timothy 5: 13.

b. Contentiousness. “It is better to dwell in a corner of the housetop, than with a brawling woman in a wide house.” “It is better to dwell in the wilderness, than with a contentious and an angry woman.” Proverbs 21: 9, 19.

Rachel feeds her father’s flock. Jacob found her to be not only beautiful, but industrious.

9. How precious is a good wife?

“Who finds a wife finds a good thing, and obtains favor of the Lord.” Proverbs 18:22. “Who can find a virtuous woman? for her Price is far above rubies.” Proverbs 31:10.

10. What honor does she bring to her husband?

“A virtuous woman is a crown to her husband.” Proverbs 12: 4. “She will do him good and not evil all the days of her life.” Proverbs 31: 12.

11. How will such a wife be esteemed?

“The heart of her husband does safely trust in her, so that he shall have no need of spoil.” Proverbs 31:11.

12. What will be her reward?

a. Fruit for her labor. “Give her of the fruit of her hands; and let her own works praise her in the gates.” Proverbs 31:31.

b. Praise of her husband. “Her husband also, and he Praises her.” Proverbs 31:28.

c. Gratitude from her children. “Her children arise up, and call her blessed.” Proverbs 31:28.

“The future destiny of the child is always the work of the mother.” Napoleon.

“Whatever a man is he generally owes to his mother.” Michelangelo.

“All that I am my mother made me.”- John Gurney Adams.

“I did not have my mother long, but she cast over me an influence which has lasted all my life. The good effects of her training I can never lose. My mother was the making of me. The memory of her will always be a blessing to me.” - Thomas A. Edison.

“All that I am or hope to be, I owe to the faithful training of a God-fearing mother.”-Abraham Lincoln.

“I am deeply touched by the remembrance of one to whom I owe everything that a wise mother ever gave to a son who adored her.”-Andrew Carnegie.

d. Joy in her old age. “Strength and honor are her clothing; and she shall rejoice in time to come.” Proverbs 31:25.

Privileges of Parenthood

1. How are children to be regarded?

“Lo, children are an heritage of the Lord: and the fruit of the womb is His reward.” Psalm 127: 3.

“Every child born into the home is a sacred trust. God says to the parents, Take this child, and bring it up for Me, that it may be an honor to My name, and a channel through which My blessings shall flow to the world.” “E. G. White in “Counsels to Teachers,” page 145.

2. How did Eve recognize her indebtedness to the Lord for her child?

“And Adam knew Eve his wife; and she conceived, and bare Cain, and said, I have gotten a man from the Lord.” Genesis 4:1.

3. In what beautiful way did Jacob acknowledge the blessing of God upon his home?

“And Esau ran to meet him, and embraced him. And he lifted up his eyes, and saw the women and the children; and said, Who are those with thee? And he said, The children which God has graciously given thy servant.” Genesis 33: 4, 5.

4. What affection should children receive from their parents?

“That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their children.” Titus 2: 4. “And the king was much moved and as he went, thus he said, O my son Absalom, my son, my son Absalom! would God I had died for thee, O Absalom, my son, my son!” 2 Samuel 18:33.

“Young people, look in those eyes, listen to that dear voice, and notice the feeling of even a touch that is bestowed upon you by that gentle hand. Make much of it while Yet you have that most precious of all good gifts, a loving mother.” - Lord Macaulay.

5. On what occasion did Jesus show His love for the young?

“Then were there brought unto Him little children, that He should put His hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them. But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not, to come unto Me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven.” Matthew 19:13,14.

6. What duty did He enjoin upon one of His disciples? “He said unto him, Feed My lambs.” John 21:15.

7. By whom also are children loved and guarded?

“Take heed that you despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of My Father which is in heaven.” Matthew 18:10.

8. What blessings should children bring to a home?

a. Comfort. “And he called his name Noah, saying, This same shall comfort us concerning our work and toil of our hands, because of the ground which the Lord has cursed.” Genesis 5: 29.

b. Happiness. “As arrows are in the hand of a mighty man; so are children of the youth. Happy is the man that has his quiver full of them.” Psalm 127: 4, 5.

c. Strength. “That our sons may be as Plants grown up in their youth; that our daughters may be as corner stones, polished after the similitude of a palace.” Psalm 144: 12.

9. What is one of the crowning joys of aged parents?

“Children’s children are the crown of old men; and the glory of children are their fathers.” Proverbs 17: 6.

10. What blessings may children receive through the prayers of godly parents?

“Now therefore let it please Thee to bless the house of Thy servant, that it may be before Thee for ever: for Thou blessed, O Lord, and it shall be blessed for ever.” 1 Chronicles 17: 27. (See also 1 Chronicles 29: 19; 22: 12.) “I stand today the loving witness of a mother’s faithfulness and of a prayer-hearing God.”-Richard Cecil.

11. On the other hand, what sorrows may the iniquity of parents bring upon their children?

“I the Lord thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate Me.” Exodus 20: 5.

12. How grievously may children be led astray by sinful parents?

“But have walked after the imagination of their own heart, and after Baalim, which their fathers taught them.” Jeremiah 9:14.

13. How is the importance of parental influence stressed?

“Behold, every one that uses proverbs shall use this proverb against thee, saying, As is the mother, so is her daughter.” Ezekiel 16: 44.

14. What tragic degradation of family life will mark the last days of earth’s history?

“Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son; and children shall rise up against their parents, and shall cause them to be put to death.” Mark 13: 12.

15. At the same time, what revival of family life will be found among believers before the end?

“And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse.” Malachi 4:6. “He shall turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, to make ready a People prepared for the Lord.” Luke 1: 17.

The Home and the Child

1. WHAT supreme opportunity does the pliability of childhood offer?

“Train up a child in the way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it.” Proverbs 22: 6.

2. What should be the basic principle in child training?

“Bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.” Ephesians 6: 4.

3. What constitutes the most powerful aid to this fundamental spiritual education of the child?

The family altar. “And there he [Abram] built an altar unto the Lord, and called upon the name of the Lord.” Genesis 12: 8.

“None of us can remember that any day ever passed unhallowed thus. No hurry for market, no rush to business, no arrival of friends or guests, no trouble or sorrow, no joy or excitement, ever prevented at least our kneeling around the family altar, while the high priest, our father, led our prayers to God, and offered himself and his children there.”-John G. Paton.

4. In what should parents instruct their children?

a. Providence of God. “We will not hide them from their children, showing to the generation to come the Praises of the Lord, and His strength, and His wonderful works that He has done.” Psalm 78:4. (See also Deuteronomy 6: 20-24.)

b. Statutes of the Lord. “For He established a testimony in Jacob, and appointed a law in Israel, which He commanded our fathers, that they should make them known to their children.” Psalm 78:5. (See also Deuteronomy 6: 7.)

5. In order to be effectual teachers of spiritual things, what preparation do parents themselves need?

“Therefore shall you lay up these My words in your heart and in your soul, and bind them for a sign upon your hand, that they may be as frontlets between your eyes. And you shall teach them your children.” Deuteronomy 11: 18, 19.

“For myself, it is to him [father] I owe all my earliest ideas of what the Fatherhood of God might mean.” - Principal Rainy’s daughter, quoted by Revelation W. W. Landrum, DD.

6. How satisfied was God with the way in which Abraham fulfilled his parental responsibilities?

“For I know him, that he will command his children and his household after him, and they shall keep the way of the Lord, to do justice and judgment.” Genesis 18: 19.

“Upon them [parents] depends in a great measure the wellbeing of their children in this world, and their happiness in the world to come. To a great extent they determine both the physical and the moral stamp that the little ones receive. And upon the character of the home depends the condition of society; the weight of each family’s influence will tell in the upward or the downward scale.” - E. G. White in “Ministry of Healing,” page 357.

7. What is an essential accompaniment of instruction in child training?

“Correct thy son, and he shall give thee rest; yes, he shall give delight unto thy soul.” Proverbs 29:17.

8. Why is discipline so important in the early years?

“Chasten thy son while there is hope, and let not thy soul spare for his crying.” Proverbs 19:18. (See also Proverbs 23:13, 14.)

9. How reprehensible is failure to discipline the young?

“He that spares the rod hates his son: but he that loves him chastens him betimes.” Proverbs 13:24.

10. Who is a conspicuous example of such parental neglect?

“I have told him [Eli] that I will judge his house for ever for the iniquity which he knows; because his sons made themselves vile, and lie restrained thew not.” 1 Samuel 3: 13.

11. What further important principle should be borne in mind in child training? “It is good for a man that he bear the yoke in his youth.” Lamentations 3: 27.

12. Where there are several children in the home, what danger is to be scrupulously avoided?

Favouritism. “And Isaac loved Esau, because he did eat of his venison: but Rebekah loved Jacob.” Genesis 25: 28.

13. What tragic consequences resulted from Jacob’s favouritism toward Joseph?

“And when his brethren saw that their father loved him more than all his brethren, they hated him, and could not speak peaceably unto him.” Genesis 37: 4.

14. In their relations with the young, what should parents also be careful not to do?

“Fathers, Provoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged.” Colossians 3:21.

“We want to get into the hearts of our children if we are to hold them, and help them, and bless them, and take them to heaven with us.” - Frances Murphy.

15. Of all parental virtues, what are the two most essential?

“She opened her mouth with wisdom; and in her tongue is the law of kindness. “ Proverbs 31:26.

16. What question will be asked of parents in the judgment day?

“Lift up your eyes, and behold them that come from the north: where is the flock that was given thee, thy beautiful flock?”
Jeremiah 13: 20.

Best Stories from the Best Book

The Bible is full of fascinating stories which your children will love to hear. This list will help you find them.

When the World Was Young

The Birthday of the World. Genesis 1.

A Home in a Garden-and What Befell It. Genesis 2, 3.

A Tragic Quarrel. Genesis 4:1-16.

Where the Rainbow Began. Genesis 6-9:17.

Bible Heroes and Heroines

Pioneering for God. Genesis 12:1-8.

A Boy Who Trusted His Father. Genesis 22:1-19.

Slave to Prime Minister. Genesis 37-48.

A Baby’s Great Adventure. Exodus 1:7-22: 2:1-10.

Two Men Who Believed God. Numbers 13, 14.

A Boy Who Listened to God. 1 Samuel 3.

From Sheepfold to Throne. 1 Samuel 16.

A Bible Giant Killer. 1 Samuel 17.

A Wonderful Friendship. 1 Samuel 18:1-4.

David’s Kind Act 2 Samuel 9.

How Solomon Became Wise. 1 Kings 3:5-28.

A Valiant Prophet. 1 Kings 17-19.

A Brave Little Missionary. 2 Kings 5.

An Orphan Who Became Queen. Esther 1-10.

Three Boys Who Said, “No.” Daniel 3.

A Man the Lions Could Not Eat. Daniel 6.

Strange Happenings

A Bush that Would Not Burn Up. Exodus 3:1-6.

Bread from Heaven. Exodus 16.

A Wonderful Spring. Exodus 17:1-7.

Handwriting of God. Exodus 19; 20:1-21.

When the Walls Tumbled Down. Joshua 6.

Strange Weapons That Won a Battle. Judges 6, 7.

Little Birds that Helped God. 1 Kings 17:1-7.

A Pot that Never Ran Dry. 1 Kings 17:8-16.

When God Sent His Coach. 2 Kings 2: 1-15.

Unseen Helpers. 2 Kings 6: 8-23.

A Wonderful Dream. Daniel 2.

A Tyrant Who Learned His Lesson. Daniel 4.

The Feast that Broke Up. Daniel 5.

Tragic Mistakes

When it Rained Fire. Genesis 18; 19:1-30.

Deceit Starts a Quarrel. Genesis 27.

The Tale of a Golden Call. Exodus 32.

A Foolish, Strong Man. Judges 13-16.

A King Disappoints God. 1 Samuel 15.

A Witch Who Deceived a King. 1 Samuel 28.

The Fate of a Disobedient Boy. 2 Samuel 15-18.

A Young Man Who Would Not Listen 2 Chronicles 10.

A King’s Penknife Jeremiah 36.

The Prophet Who Would Not Go. Jonah 1-2.

Stories of Jesus

The First Carol. Luke 2:8-20.

Following a Star. Matthew 2:1-11.

A Wicked King Foiled. Matthew 2:1-15.

Jesus in the Temple Luke 2:39-52.

A Great Test. Matthew 4:1-11.

Fishers for Jesus. Luke 5:1-11.

The Teacher Who Did Not Know. John 3:1-21.

Jesus Visits Friends. Luke 10:39-42.

A Selfish Rich Man. Luke 18:18-25.

Jesus Invites Himself Out. Luke 19:1-10.

A Beautiful Present. John 12: 1-9.

Supper With Jesus John 13.

The Disciple Who Turned Traitor. Mark 14:42-46.

How Peter Let Jesus Down. Mark 14:66-72.

What Jesus Promised. John 14.

What Jesus Did for You. John 18; 20:1-18.

How Thomas Made Sure. John 20:19-29.

Jesus Goes Back Home. Acts 1:1-11.

Miracles Jesus Did

When the Wind Stopped Blowing. Matthew 8:23-27.

Two Blind Men. Matthew 9:27-30.

A Remarkable Walk. Matthew 14:22-32.

A Rebuke from Jesus Matthew 16:21-23.

A Queer Money Box. Matthew 17:24-27.

The Fig Tree that Would Not Bear. Matthew 21:17-2 1.

The Spirit that Had to Go. Mark 1:23-28.

How Jesus Cured a Fever. Mark 1:29-31.

The Sick Man Who Got Up. Mark 2:1-12.

The Touch that Healed. Mark 5: 24-34.

A Little Girl Who Woke Up. Mark 5:22-24, 35-43.

A Poor Widow's Reward. Mark 7:24-30.

When the Nets Broke. Luke 5:1-11.

The Soldier Who Loved His Servant. Luke 7:1-10.

A Surprise for Mother. Luke 7:11-17.

The Bent Woman Who Was Made Straight. Luke 13:11-17.

A Good Day for a Good Deed. Luke 14:1-6.

What Nine Men Forgot to Say. Luke 17:11-19.

What Jesus Wouldn't Allow. Luke 22:50,51.

Jesus Goes to a Wedding. John 2:1-11.

A Rich Man's Boy Healed. John 4:46-54.

Waiting for the Angel. John 5:1-9.

What a Little Boy's Lunch Did. John 6:5-14.

A Man Who Never Saw Before. John 9.

Jesus Wakens a Friend. John 11:1-46.

Parables Jesus Told

Jerry-Building. Matthew 7:24-27.

Patching that Doesn't Pay. Matthew 9:16-17.

The Man Who Sowed Weeds. Matthew 13:24-30.

Treasure Trove. Matthew 13:44.

The Precious Pearl. Matthew 13:45-46.

A Mixed Catch. Matthew 13:47-50.

Tit for Tat. Matthew 18:23-35.

When Pay Day Came. Matthew 20:1-16.

Which Son Was the Better? Matthew 21:28-32.

RSVP Matthew 22:1-14.

Lamps Without Oil Matthew 25:1-13.
 The Man Who Would Not Work. Matthew 25:14-30.
 Sheep or Goats? Matthew 25:31-46.
 A Little Seed that Grew Big. Mark 4:30-32.
 The Ungrateful Tenants. Mark 12:1-9.
 How Much Love? Luke 7:40-47.
 Why the Seeds Grew. Luke 8:4-15.
 Attacked by Gangsters. Luke 10:25-37.
 The Midnight Caller. Luke 11:5-13.
 The Wealthy Fool. Luke 12:16-21.
 A Clever Steward. Luke 12: 42-48.
 A Tree that Disappointed Jesus. Luke 13: 6-9.
 The Top Seat. Luke 14: 7-11.
 Invitation to Supper. Luke 14: 15-24.
 Look Before You Leap. Luke 14: 28-33.
 The Sheep that Got Lost. Luke 15:3-7.
 A Diligent Search. Luke 15:8-10.
 The Boy Who Ran Away. Luke 15:11-32.
 A Poor Rich Man and a Rich Poor One. Luke 16:19-31.
 A Women Who Knew What She Wanted. Luke 18:1-8.
 Prayers that Wouldn't Rise. Luke 18:9-14.
 Lessons from a Tree. Luke 21:29-31.

In the Master's Footsteps

Peter Becomes a Great Preacher. Acts 2.
 Better than Gold. Acts 3:1-16.
 The First Christian Martyr. Acts 6; 7.
 A Black Convert. Acts 8: 26-40.
 Peter Learns a Lesson. Acts 10.
 When the Doors Swung Back. Acts 12:1-19.
 A Magician Rebuked. Acts 13:1-12.
 A Strange Prison Scene. Acts 16:16-34.
 Beneath the Acropolis. Acts 17:16-34.
 Brawl in Ephesus. Acts 19:21-41.
 A Plot that Did Not Succeed. Acts 23.
 Storm at Sea. Acts 27.
 A Procession of Heroes. Hebrews 11.
 The Land Without Tears. Revelation 21; 22.

A Pattern for Youth

1. To whom should the young man give his primary allegiance?

“Remember now thy Creator in the days of thy youth, while the evil days come not, nor the years draw nigh, when thou shall say, I have no pleasure in them.” Ecclesiastes 12: 1.

2. What should be the supreme guide in his life?

“Wherewithal shall a young man cleanse his way? by taking heed thereto according to Thy Word.”

Psalm 119: 9.

“I most strongly and affectionately impress upon you the priceless value of the New Testament, and the study of that book as the one unfailing guide in life. Deeply respecting it and bowing down before the character of our Savior, you cannot go very wrong, and will always preserve at heart a true spirit of veneration and humility.” - Charles Dickens to his son, quoted in the Homilist.

3. Of how much greater value is the knowledge of God than material resources?

“Happy is the man that finds wisdom, and the man that gets understanding. For the merchandise of it is better than the merchandise of silver, and the gain thereof than fine gold. She is more precious than rubies: and all the things thou can desire are not to be compared unto her.” Proverbs 3:13-15.

4. Who are commended in the Scriptures as examples of youthful piety?

a. Samuel. “And the child Samuel grew on, and was in favor both with the Lord, and also with men.” 1 Samuel 2: 2 6.

b. John the Baptist. “And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his showing unto Israel.” Luke 1:80.

5. Who is our supreme example of growth in grace and virtue?

“And the child [Jesus] grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom: and the grace of God was upon Him.” Luke 2:40.

6. After God, to whom should the young man give honor? “Honor thy father and thy mother.” Exodus 20:12.

7. For what was Solomon thankful?

“For I was my father’s son, tender and only beloved in the sight of my mother. He taught me also, and said unto me, Let your heart retain my words: keep my commandments, and live.” Proverbs 4: 3, 4.

8. What contrast is there between the wise and the foolish son?

“A wise son hears his father’s instruction: but a scorner hears not rebuke.” Proverbs 13: 1.

9. How was Timothy influenced by his mother’s faith?

“When I call to remembrance the unfeigned faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice; and I am persuaded that in thee also.” 2 Timothy 1: 5.

“Under whose preaching were you converted?” a young man was asked. “Under nobody’s preaching,” was the reply. “I was converted under my mother’s practicing.”

10. What reverence should the young render to the aged?

“Thou shall rise up before the hoary head, and honor the face of the old man, and fear thy God: I am the Lord.” Leviticus 19: 32.

11. How reprehensible, therefore, was the conduct of Rehoboam?

“But he forsook the counsel of the old men, which they had given him, and consulted with the young men that were grown up with him, and which stood before him.” 1 Kings 12: 8.

12. In what may the youth rightly glory?

“The glory of young men is their strength: and the beauty of old men is the gray head.” Proverbs 20: 29.

13. What, however, is even more commendable than physical strength?

“I have written unto you, young men, because you are strong, and the Word of God abides in you, and you have overcome the wicked one.” 1 John 2: 14.

14. Against what are the young warned?

“Be not wise in your own eyes: fear the Lord, and depart from evil.” Proverbs 3:7. “Flee also youthful lusts.” 2 Timothy 2: 22. “My son, if sinners entice thee, consent thou not.” Proverbs 1:10.

15. In what did Daniel show his strength of character?

“But Daniel purposed in his heart that he would not defile himself with the portion of the king’s meat, nor with the wine which he drank.” Daniel 1:8.

16. How did Joseph reveal his purity of life?

“And it came to pass after these things, that his master’s wife cast her eyes upon Joseph; and she said, Lie with me. But he refused, and said: how then can I do this great wickedness, and sin against God?” Genesis 39: 7-9.

17. What noble choice did Moses make?

“By faith Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh’s daughter; choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the Pleasures of sin for a season.” Hebrews 11: 24, 25.

18. To what may all worthy youth aspire?

“Let no man despise thy youth; but be thou an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity.” 1 Timothy 4: 12.

Ideals of Womanhood

1. BY comparison with man, how is woman described?

“Likewise, you husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honor unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel.” 1 Peter 3: 7.

2. What are the particular graces of womanhood?

“And the damsel was very fair to look upon.” Genesis 24:16. (See also Genesis 12:11.) “A gracious woman retains honor.” Proverbs 11:16. “The elder women as mothers; the younger as sisters, with all Purity.” 1 Timothy 5: 2. “That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children, to be discreet, chaste, good.” Titus 2: 4, 5.

3. How was womanly virtue and courage supremely manifest at the cross?

a. Last at the cross. “And many women were there beholding afar off, which followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto Him: among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of Zebedee’s children.” Matthew 27: 55, 56.

b. Last to leave the tomb. “And Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of Joses beheld where He was laid.” Mark 15: 47.

c. First to return to the sepulchre. "And when the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint Him. And very early in the morning the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulchre at the rising of the sun." Mark 16: 1, 2.

4. In what way was a woman honored by the risen Jesus?

"Now when Jesus was risen early in the first day of the week, He appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom, He had cast seven devils." Mark 16: 9.

5. What is one of the principal temptations to which woman, by her position, is subject?

"Rise up, you women that are at ease; hear my voice, you careless daughters; give ear unto my speech. Many days and years shall you be troubled, you careless women: for the vintage shall fail, the gathering shall not come. Tremble, you women that are at ease." Isaiah 32: 9-11.

6. How futile is a life devoted only to pleasure?

"But she that lives in pleasure is dead while she lives." 1 Timothy 5: 6.

7. What will characterize the life of a true woman?

"She looks well to the ways of her household, and eats not the bread of idleness." Proverbs 31:27.

8. In what direction is it natural for woman's thoughts to turn?

"Can a maid forget her ornaments, or a bride, her attire? yet My people have forgotten Me days without number." Jeremiah 2: 32.

9. What, however, have the Scriptures to say concerning sinful vanity?

"Favor is deceitful, and beauty is vain: but a woman that fears the Lord, she shall be praised." Proverbs 31:30.

10. What should guide a woman in the choice of her dress and adornments? "In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparel." 1 Timothy 2: 9.

11. What should she scrupulously avoid?

Vanity and ostentation. "Not with embroidered hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array." 1 Timothy 2: 9. "Whose adorning let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel." 1 Peter 3: 3.

12. How little regard had the godly Israelite women for their trinkets when the needs of the work of God were set before them?

"And they came, both men and women, as many as were willing hearted, and brought bracelets, and earrings, and rings, and tablets, all jewels of gold: and every man that offered, offered an offering of gold unto the Lord." Exodus 35:22.

13. What is far more precious in God's sight than material adornments?

"But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price." 1 Peter 3: 4.

14. How may woman's influence be misused?

a. Lead into sin. "She took of the fruit thereof" and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat." Genesis 3:6. "But there was none like unto Ahab, which did sell himself to work wickedness in the sight of the Lord, whom Jezebel his wife stirred up." 1 Kings 21: 25.

b. Lead into idolatry. "Did not Solomon king of Israel sin by these things? yet among many nations was there no king like him, who was beloved of his God, and God made him king over all Israel: nevertheless even him did outlandish women cause to sin." Nehemiah 13: 26.

15. What is the object of the Bible's counsel to women?

"And these things give in charge, that they may be blameless." 1 Timothy 5: 7.

Jesus ever taught the dignity and responsibility of womanhood.

17. Healthful Living

Though in the court-of the greatest monarch of his day, Daniel refused to be swayed from the principles of temperate living and partake of the king's rich foods and wines.

The Gospel of Good wealth

1. WRITING to one of his converts, what wish did John express?

"Beloved, I wish above all things that thou may prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospers." 3 John 2.

“These three things, health of the body, health of the soul, prosperity in secular affairs, so necessary to the comfort of life, every Christian may in a certain measure expect, and for them every Christian is authorized to pray; and we should have more of all three if we devoutly prayed for them.”--Dr. Adam Clarke.

2. What is one of the most important factors in the maintenance of health?

MY son, attend to My words; incline your ear unto My sayings. Let them not depart from your eyes; keep them in the midst of your heart. For they are life unto those that find them, and health to all their flesh.” Proverbs 4:20-22. “Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds out of the mouth of God.” Matthew 4:4.

“We should, after all, have to cross out a tremendous lot of the New Testament if we said there was no relationship between health and religion.”--Revelation Leslie D. Weatherhead.

3. On what condition did God promise to keep sickness from Israel?

“And you shall serve the Lord your God, and He shall bless thy bread, and thy water; and I will take sickness away from the midst of thee.” Exodus 23:25.

4. Beside stressing the relation of spiritual life to health, what guidance concerning healthful living did God give to His ancient people?

a.Laws respecting diet. “This is the law to make a difference between the unclean and the clean, and between the beast that may be eaten and the beast that may not be eaten.” Leviticus 11:46,47. (Read verses 2-47; Deuteronomy 14:3-20.)

b.Laws respecting labor and rest. “Six days shall thou labor, and do all thy work: but the seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God: in it thou shall not do any work.” Exodus 20:9,10.

c.Laws of hygiene. “And he that is to be cleansed shall wash his clothes, and shave off all his hair, and wash himself in water, that he may be clean.” Leviticus 14:8. (See also Leviticus 7:17,19; Numbers 5:2,3.)

d.Laws respecting morality. “Thou shall not commit adultery.” Exodus 20:14.

5. How greatly was Israel blessed so long as they followed God’s counsels on health?

“He brought them forth also with silver and gold: and there was not one feeble person among their tribes.” Psalm 105:37.

Peter points the cripple at the temple gate to the source of healing and spiritual blessing. See Acts 3. Christ healed the man sick of the palsy. Luke 5: 18-26.

6. If health is the reward of obedience to God’s laws, spiritual and physical, what is the most important cause of disease?

“Fools because of their transgression, and because of their iniquities, are afflicted and they draw near unto the gates of death.” Psalm 107:17,18. (See also Leviticus 26:14,16.)

7. How impotent are medicines to those who reject of God and His laws?

“Go up into Gilead, and take balm, O virgin, the daughter of Egypt: in vain shall thou use many medicines; for thou shall not be cured.” Jeremiah 46:11.

8. Where only is true healing to be found?

“For I am the Lord that healed thee.” Exodus 15:26. “Who forgives all your iniquities; who heals all thy diseases.” Psalm 103:3.

“Healing of any kind is necessarily divine. A physician does not heal, nor does medicine, nor does a scientific diet, nor an improved environment, nor anything else that may be named. All creation or recreation is from God; and hence, in every, instance of healing He is the One who heals, whether He acts directly through unknown laws or indirectly through known laws.” - Dr. Frost.

9. In what way did Jesus show His sympathy for the sick?

“God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with Him.” Acts 10:38.

10. What does the great Physician promise to all who seek Him?

a.Comfort in affliction. “The Lord will strengthen him upon the bed of languishing: Thou wilt make all his bed in his sickness.” Psalm 41:3.

b.Healing of body and soul. “But unto you that fear My name shall the Sun of Righteousness arise with healing in His wings.” Malachi 4:2.

“There has not been one of my patients in the latter half of life, whose problem in the last resort was not that of finding, a religious outlook on life. None of them has been really healed who did not regain his religious outlook.” - Dr. Jung, the famous psychotherapist.

11. Along with physical affliction, what does the Lord promise to remove from those who come to Him? “And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.” James 5:15.

12. When will sickness and affliction be finally taken away?

“And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.” Revelation 21:4.

The Bible and Diet

1. FROM whom do all living creatures receive their sustenance?

“The eyes of all wait upon Thee; and Thou gives them their meat in due season. Thou opened Your hand, and satisfies the desire of every living thing.” Psalm 145:15,16.

2. What example did Jesus set of thankfulness for God’s bounty?

“And He commanded the people to sit down on the ground: and He took the seven loaves, and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to His disciples to set before them; and they did set them before the people.” Mark 8:6. (See also 1 Timothy 4:4,5.)

3. What basic principles should govern our choice of food and drink?

a. For strength. “Blessed art thou, O land, when thy king is the son of nobles, and thy princes eat in due season, for strength, and not for drunkenness.” Ecclesiastes 10: 17.

b. To glorify God. “Whether therefore you eat, or drink, or whatsoever you do, do all to the glory of God.” 1 Corinthians 10:31.

4. What food did God provide for our first parents?

“And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat.” Genesis 1:29.

“As a result of all my studies and experiments, I draw the conclusion that the best diet should be composed mainly of whole wheat or whole-rye bread, barley, oats, potatoes, butter or margarine, some green vegetables, and some fruits as relish.” Dr. M. Hindhede, the eminent Danish authority, in “Third Race Betterment Report.”

“I have not the slightest hesitation in saying that a vegetarian diet, supplemented with fairly liberal amounts of milk, is the most satisfactory type of diet that man can take.”-Dr. E. V. McCollum, of the Johns Hopkins University School of Hygiene and Public Health.

5. As a result of the earth’s reduced productivity through sin, what food was also permitted after the Flood? “Every moving thing that lives shall be meat for you; even as the green herb have I given you all things.” Genesis 9: 3.

6. What are some of the wholesome non-flesh foods mentioned in Scripture?

Cereals. Deuteronomy 8:8; 1 Samuel 17:17. Milk. Exodus 3:8. Butter and cheese. 2 Samuel 17:29. Pulses. 2 Samuel 17:28. Vegetables. Hebrews 6:7. Fruit. Deuteronomy 8:8.

7. What warnings and prohibitions did God give to Israel concerning the use of flesh foods?

“This is the law of the beasts, and of the fowl, and of every living creature that moves in the waters, and of every creature that creeps upon the earth. To make a difference between the unclean and the clean, and between the beast that may be eaten and the beast that may not be eaten.” Leviticus 11:46, 47.

“The distinction between articles of food as clean and unclean was not a merely ceremonial and arbitrary regulation, but was based upon sanitary principles. To the observance of this distinction may be traced, in a great degree, the marvelous vitality, which for thousands of years has distinguished the Jewish people.” - E. G. White in “Patriarchs and Prophets,” page 562.

8. Why was the Lord particular about His people’s diet?

“For thou art an holy People unto the Lord thy God) and the Lord has chosen thee to be a peculiar people unto Himself, above all the nations that are upon the earth. Thou shall not eat any abominable thing.” Deuteronomy 14:2,3.

9. What courageous stand did Daniel make on the question of diet in the palace of the heathen king, Nebuchadnezzar?

“But Daniel purposed in his heart that he would not defile himself with the portion of the king’s meat, nor with the wine which he drank: therefore he requested of the prince of the eunuchs that he might not defile himself.” Daniel 1:8.

10. For what consideration did he ask?

“Prove thy servants, I beseech thee, ten days, and let them give us Pulse to eat, and water to drink.” Daniel 1: 12.

11. How did God honor Daniel’s courage and loyalty?

“And at the end often days their countenances appeared fairer and fatter in flesh than all the children which did eat the portion of the’ king’s meat.” Daniel 1: 15.

12. What responsibility have Christians to preserve their health by obedience to God’s laws?

“What? know you not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which you have of God, and you are not your own? For you are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God’s.” 1 Corinthians 6: 19, 20.

13. Against what latter-day sin are Christians particularly warned?

“But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayed his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken. The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looked not for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers.” Luke 12:45,46.

Menace of Intemperance

1. AGAINST What excess are believers warned?

“And be not drunk with wine wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit.” Ephesians 5: 18.

2. What are the immediate harmful effects of strong drink?

a. Red eyes. “Who has redness of eyes? They that tarry long at the wine.” Proverbs 23: 29.

b.Sickness. "In the day of our king the princes have made him sick with bottles of wine." Hosea 7:5.

c.Staggering gait. "The Lord has mingled a perverse spirit in the midst thereof: and they have caused Egypt to err in every work thereof, as a drunken man staggereth in his vomit." Isaiah 19: 14.

d.Inflamed emotions. "Woe unto them that rise up early in the morning, that they may follow strong drink; that continue until night, till wine inflame them." Isaiah 5:11.

"As beverages, alcoholic liquors are out of date, and should be classed with other enemies which threaten human personality. We do not need this fictitious aid to gaiety. The higher our civilization the more devastating will the effect of alcohol become. Alcohol deadens self-criticism and lessens self-control; it makes a fool of wits and is a counterfeit of real happiness." - Miss Margaret Bondfield, J.P., LL.D.

"The man who 'wakes up' under alcohol is really going to sleep as far as his judgment and reason are concerned." - "How to Live," page 3 10.

3. What are some of the ultimate effects of intemperance?

a.Sorrow and strife. "Who has woe? Who has sorrow? Who has contentions? Who has babbling? Who has wounds without cause? who has redness of eyes? They that tarry long at the wine; they that go to seek mixed wine." Proverbs 23:29,30.

b.Poverty. "He that loves pleasure shall be a poor man: he that loves wine and oil shall not be rich." Proverbs 21: 17.

c.Apostasy. "But they also have erred through wine, and through strong drink are out of the way; the priest and the prophet have erred through strong drink, they are swallowed up of wine, they are out of the way through strong drink; they err in vision, they stumble in judgment." Isaiah 28: 7.

"It cuts down youth in its vigor, manhood in its strength, old age in its weakness. It produces weakness not strength, sickness not health, death not life. It makes wives widows, children orphans, fathers fiends, and all of them paupers and beggars. It fills the jails, supplies almshouses, and demands asylums. It engenders controversies, fosters quarrels, cherishes riots. It crowds penitentiaries and furnishes victims for scaffolds. It is the sum of all villainies, the father of all crime, the mother of all abominations. It is the devil's best friend and God's worst enemy." Robert Ingersoll.

4. To what sins does drink often lead?

a.Violence. "For they eat the bread of wickedness, and drink the wine of violence." Proverbs 4:17.

b.Prostitution. "Whores and wine and new wine take away the heart." Hosea 4: 11.

5. How does strong drink treat its victims?

"Wine is a mocker, strong drink is raging: and whosoever is deceived thereby is not wise." Proverbs 20: 1. "One of the subtlest effects of this many-sided drug is to produce a craving for itself, while weakening the will that could resist that craving."

- Dr. Williams in "Alcohol," page 48.

6. In view of its serious effects who, in particular, should abstain from it?

a.Temporal rulers. "It is not for kings, O Lemuel, it is not for kings to drink wine; nor for princes strong drink: lest they drink, and forget the law, and pervert the judgment of any of the afflicted." Proverbs 31:4,5.

"When the brain is under the depressant effects of alcohol, the drinker is not aware of it because his judgment and perception are clouded. He is deluded by the effects of the relaxation of his higher centers, and the consequent setting free of lower activities." - Sir Victor Horsley.

b. Spiritual leaders. "Do not drink wine nor strong drink, thou, nor thy sons with thee, when you go into the tabernacle of the congregation, lest you die: it shall be a statute for ever throughout your generations." Leviticus 10:9.

Among prominent tee totalers are the recently retired Bishop of London, the Archbishop of Canterbury, and the Bishop of Norwich.

7. Who among the Israelites are mentioned as having taken vows of total abstinence?

a.The Nazarites. "Speak thou unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, When either man or woman shall separate themselves to vow a vow of a Nazarite, to separate themselves unto the Lord. He shall separate himself from wine and strong drink, and shall drink no vinegar of wine, or vinegar of strong drink, neither shall he drink any liquor of grapes, nor eat moist grapes, or dried. All the days of his separation shall he eat nothing that is made of the vine tree, from the kernels even to the husk." Numbers 6:2-4.

b. The Rechabites. "But they said, We will drink no wine: for Jonadab the son of Rechab our father commanded us, saying, You shall drink no wine, neither you, nor your sons for ever." Jeremiah 35:6.

8. How were these people who totally abstain commended?

"Her Nazarites were Purer than snow, they were whiter than milk, they were more ruddy in body than rubies, their polishing was of sapphire." Lamentations 4: 7.

9. What should characterize the Christian's walk?

"Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying." Romans 13:13.

10. With whom will believers have no fellowship?

"But now I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a pagan, or a drunkard, or one who uses extortion; with such an one no not to eat." 1 Corinthians 5:11. "Be not among wine drinkers; among riotous eaters of flesh." Proverbs 23:20.

"Bridle the appetite of gluttony, and thou wilt with less difficulty restrain all other inordinate desires of animal nature."- Thomas A Kempis.

11. With what is drunkenness classed?

“Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, envying, murders, drunkenness, revelling, and such like.” Galatians 5: 19-21.

12. What warning is given to those who look for the Lord’s return?

“And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares.” Luke 21: 34.

13. Who will find no place in the kingdom of heaven?

“Know you not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor those who use extortion, shall inherit the kingdom of God.” 1 Corinthians 6: 9, 10.

14. In what state does Paul desire believers to be found when Jesus comes?

“The very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.” 1 Thessalonians 5: 23.

Christian Temperance

1. WHAT is one of the essential Characteristics of the Christian life?

“And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge; and to knowledge temperance.” 2 Peter 1:5,6.

2. What other terms are synonymous with temperance?

a. Sobriety. “Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world.” Titus 2: 12.

b. Moderation. “Let your moderation be known unto all men.” Philippians 4: 5.

3. What self-discipline is essential to temporal achievement?

“And every man that strives for the mastery is temperate in all things.” 1 Corinthians 9:25.

4. How much more necessary is it in our spiritual quest?

“Now they do it to obtain a corruptible crown; but we an incorruptible.” 1 Corinthians 9:25.

5. What did Peter suggest as additional incentives to temperance?

a. Effectively to resist temptation. “Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walks about, seeking whom he may devour.” 1 Peter 5: 8.

b. Because of the nearness of the end. “But the end of all things is at hand: be you therefore sober, and watch unto prayer.” 1 Peter 4: 7.

6. What does temperance include?

a. Eating wisely. “Blessed art thou, O land, when thy king is the son of nobles, and thy princes eat in due season, for strength, and not for drunkenness!” Ecclesiastes 10: 17.

“Let none who profess godliness regard with indifference the health of the body, and flatter themselves that intemperance is no sin, and will not affect their spirituality. A close sympathy exists between the physical and the moral nature. The standard of virtue is elevated or degraded by the physical habits. Excessive eating of the best food will produce a morbid condition of the moral feelings. And if the food is not the most healthful, the effects will be still more injurious.” - E. G. White in. “Counsels on Health,” page 67.

b. Avoiding intoxicants and other harmful things. “And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit.” Ephesians 5: 18.

In addition to alcohol dealt with in the study, “Menace of Intemperance,” tobacco-using should be listed as one of the most harmful forms of intemperance. “Tobacco is the most subtle poison known to chemists, except the deadly prussic acid.” - M Orfila, president of the Paris Medical Academy.

“Since nicotine is known to be one of the worst heart poisons it is in place to inquire whether a large part of the mortality from heart disease may not be properly charged to smoking. Future investigators may reveal tobacco to be the world’s greatest killer.” - Dr. J. H. Kellogg.

“Cigarette smoke has a violent action on the cells of the brain, which is quite rapid among nerve centers. Unlike most narcotics the degeneration is permanent and uncontrollable.” - Thomas A. Edison.

c. All-round self-control. “But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway.” 1 Corinthians 9:27.

“Moral self-denial in the Christian life is as natural and necessary as the strict regime of the athlete, who limits or cuts out tobacco and alcohol for the plain, practical, and sufficient reason that these things are obstacles in the path of fitness, and therefore must go.” - Leslie S. Wilson, BD.

7. On whom did Paul urge the importance of sobriety and temperance?

a. All, from youth to old age. “Young men likewise exhort to be sober minded.” Titus 2: 6. “That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children.” Verse 4. “That the aged men be sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, in patience.” Verse 2.

b. Administrators. "He reasoned [with Felix] of righteousness, temperance, and judgment to come." Acts 24:25.

c. The ministry. "A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behavior, given to hospitality, apt to teach; not given to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre; but patient, not a brawler, not covetous." 1 Timothy 3: 2, 3.

"I have, in particular, avoided two poisons-alcohol and tobacco. Drinking and smoking do infinite harm."-Dr. Winnington Ingram when Bishop of London.

8. Where must temperance begin?

"For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God has dealt to every man the measure of faith." Romans 12:3.

9. What appeal, therefore, should be heeded by every believer? "Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober." 1 Peter 1:13.

10. Among what fruits is temperance classed?

"But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance: against such there is no law." Galatians 5: 22, 23.

18. Community and State

"The half was not fold me," declared the Queen of Sheba, when she had seen Solomon's kingly estate and heard his wisdom. "Blessed be The Lord thy God, which delighted in thee, to set thee on the throne of Israel." 1 Kings 10:1-9.

The Powers That Be

1. WHO is the supreme Ruler of heaven and earth?

"Know therefore this day, and consider it in your heart, that the Lord He is God in heaven above, and upon the earth beneath: there is none else." Deuteronomy 4: 39.

"If God is King, history has a meaning. If not, it is just a succession of events, without a purpose and without a goal-a cycle of endlessly revolving escalators, raising one culture to the surface as it sweeps another down into the depths."

"The fundamental Christian assertion is that God reigns eternal in majesty, that the nations before Him are as drops in a bucket, that He has revealed His purpose in Christ Jesus, and that in that will is our peace." - Canon F. R. Barry in "What Has Christianity to Say?" pages A, 17.

2. What authority did the eternal and omnipotent God delegate in the beginning to men?

"And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moved upon the earth." Genesis 1:28.

3. As the population of the earth increased, in whom did this power become centered?

"BY Me kings reign, and princes decree justice. By Me princes rule, and nobles, even all the judges of the earth." Proverbs 8:15,16.

4. By what right, therefore, do earthly authorities rule?

"There is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God." Romans 13:1 (See also Daniel 2: 37, 38; Isaiah 45: 1.)

5. Of what authority did Pilate boast?

"Then said Pilate unto Him, Speaks Thou not unto me? Know Thou not that I have power to crucify Thee, and have power to release Thee?" John 19:10.

6. How did Jesus correct his wrong understanding of his power?

"Jesus answered, Thou couldst have no power at all against Me, except it were given thee from above." John 19: 11.

7. Beside appointing earthly rulers, what else does God ordain?

"And has made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and has determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation." Acts 17: 26.

8. How completely are earthly rulers in the hands of the Lord?

"The king's heart is in the hand of the Lord, as the rivers of water: He turns it whither so ever He will." Proverbs 21:1.

"If the state is absolute in its own right, acknowledging no law but its own self-interest, then words like truth and justice are meaningless and all talk of freedom is delusory. Men are then but helots of collectivism, themselves blind, irrational, and transitory, and the age-long travail of man's making has no end but to produce more cannon fodder. If God is King, then there is a law higher than any national sovereign state, and to it the nations must conform or perish." - Id., page 2 1.

9. What epoch-making decree did God pronounce against Zedekiah, the last king of Judah?

"And thou, profane wicked prince of Israel, whose day is come, when iniquity shall have an end, thus said the Lord God; Remove the diadem, and take off the crown: this shall not be the same: exalt him that is low and abase him that is high. I will overturn, overturn, overturn, it; and it shall be no more, until He come whose right it is; and I will give it Him." Ezekiel 21: 25-27.

10. On what occasion did one of the pharaohs of Egypt question the sovereignty of God?

“And afterward Moses and Aaron went in, and told Pharaoh, Thus said the Lord God of Israel, Let My people go, that they may hold a feast unto Me in the wilderness. And Pharaoh said, Who is the Lord, that I should obey His voice to let Israel go? I know not the Lord, neither will I let Israel go.” Exodus 5:1,2.

11. What lesson had he and the Egyptians to learn?

“And I will harden Pharaoh’s heart, and multiply My signs and My wonders in the land of Egypt. And the Egyptians shall know that I am the Lord, when I stretch forth Mine hand upon Egypt, and bring out the children of Israel from among them.” Exodus 7:3-5.

12. In what contempt did Rabshakeh of Assyria hold the God of Israel?

“Beware lest Hezekiah persuade you, saying, The Lord will deliver us. Hath any of the gods of the nations delivered his land out of the hand of the king of Assyria?” Isaiah 36:18.

13. How was the power of God made known to the Assyrians?

“Then the angel of the Lord went forth, and smote in the camp of the Assyrians a hundred and fourscore and five thousand: and when they [Israelites] arose early in the morning, behold, they [Assyrians] were all dead corpses.” Isaiah 37: 36.

14. How decisive is the Lord’s intervention in the affairs of the nations?

“The Lord of hosts has sworn, saying, Surely as I have thought, so shall it come to pass; and as I have

146

purposed, so shall it stand. This is the purpose that is purposed upon the whole earth: and this is the hand that is stretched out upon all the nations. For the Lord of hosts has purposed, and who shall disannul it? and His hand is stretched out, and who shall turn it back?” Isaiah 14: 24-27.

“It is perhaps not more insane than much of our own action, when we set ourselves against what we know to be God’s will, and consciously seek to thwart it. A child trying to stop a train by pushing against the locomotive has as much chance of success.” Dr. Alexander MacLaren.

15. As earthly rulers derive their power from God and owe their continuance to Him, what ought they to render to Him?

“Kings of the earth, and all people; princes, and all judges of the earth: let them Praise the name of the Lord: for His name alone is excellent; His glory is above the earth and heaven.” Psalm 148:11-13.

16. How did Nebuchadnezzar divert the divine prerogative of worship to himself?

“Nebuchadnezzar the king made an image of gold, whose height was threescore cubits, and the breadth thereof six cubits: he set it up in the plain of Dura, in the province of Babylon. Who falls not down and worshipped shall the same hour be cast into the midst of a burning fiery furnace.” Daniel 3:1-6.

17. With what words did the three young Hebrews rebuke Nebuchadnezzar?

“Be it known unto thee, O king, that we will not serve thy gods, nor worship the golden image which thou has set up.” Daniel 3: 18.

18. Persisting in his wrong action, what order did Nebuchadnezzar give?

“Then was Nebuchadnezzar full of fury, and he commanded the most mighty men that were in his army to bind Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-nego, and to cast them into the burning fiery furnace.” Daniel 3: 19, 20.

19. How did God honor the young Hebrews who, by their loyalty to Him, reproved Nebuchadnezzar’s sin?

“Then Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-nego, came forth of the midst of the fire. And the princes, governors, and captains, and the king’s counselors, being gathered together, saw these men, upon whose bodies the fire had no Power, nor was an hair of their head singed, neither were their coats changed, nor the smell of fire had passed on them.” Daniel 3:26,27.

20. What attitude must Christians, today, take to all attempts of earthly powers to claim divine honors? “Render therefore unto Caesar the things which are Caesar’s; and unto God the things that are God’s.” Matthew 22: 21.

Privileges of Citizenship

1. BY whom are earthly rulers ordained and to whom are they subject? “For there is no power but of God: the Powers that be are ordained of God.” Romans 13:1.

2. What dual loyalty is therefore demanded of godly subjects?

“My son, fear thou the Lord and the king.” Proverbs 24:21. “Fear God. Honor the king.” 1 Peter 2:17.

“The civil state in which a man was before his conversion is not altered by that conversion; nor does the grace of God absolve him from any claims which either the state or his neighbor may have on him. All these outward things continue unaltered.” Dr. Adam, Clarke.

3. In what ways should earthly rulers be honored?

“Render therefore to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute is due; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honor to whom honor.” Romans 13:7. “Put them in mind to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready to every good work.” Titus 3:1.

“As a Christian, he does not cease to be a citizen, to be a subject. His deliverance from the death sentence of the law of God only binds him, in his Lord’s name, to a loyal fidelity to human statute; limited only by the case where such statute may really contradict the supreme divine law. The disciple of Christ, as such, while his whole being has received an emancipation unknown elsewhere, is to be the faithful subject of the emperor, the orderly inhabitant of his quarter in the city, the punctual taxpayer, the ready giver of not a servile yet a genuine deference to the representatives and ministers of human authority.”-H. C. G. Moule in “Romans,” pages 348, 349.

4. Why are we required to submit to earthly authority?

“Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord’s sake.” 1 Peter 2:13. “Wherefore you must needs be subject, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake.” Romans 13:5.

5. In refusing to submit to earthly powers, whom else are we resisting?

“Whosoever therefore resists the power, resists the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation.” Romans 13:2.

“Under even heavy pressure the Christian is still to remember that civil government is, in its principle, ‘of God.’ He is to reverence the institution in its idea. He is to regard its actual officers, whatever their personal faults, as so far dignified by the institution that their governing work is to be considered always first in the light of the institution. The most imperfect, even the most erring, administration of civil order is still a thing to be respected.” - Id., page 350.

6. Beside rendering due honor and submission, how wilt believers further strengthen the hands of rulers?

“I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, Prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men; for kings, and for all that are in authority.” 1 Timothy 2: 1, 2.

7. What should be the burden of their prayers?

a. The life of the king. “That they may offer sacrifices of sweet savors unto the God of heaven, and pray for the life of the king, and of his sons.” Ezra 6:10. (See also 1 Samuel 10:24.)

b. The peace of the realm. “That we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty.” 1 Timothy 2:2. (See also Daniel 9:19.)

8. What civic rights should all citizens enjoy?

a. Freedom of speech and action. “And when the town clerk had appeased the people, he said, You men of Ephesus. You ought to be quiet, and to do nothing rashly. For you have brought hither these men, which are neither robbers of churches, nor yet blasphemers of your goddess.” Acts 19:35-37.

b. Right of appeal against accusation. “Wherefore if Demetrius, and the craftsmen which are with him, have a matter against any man, the law is open, and there are deputies: let them plead one another. But if you inquire any thing concerning other Matters, it shall be determined in a lawful assembly.” Acts 19:38, 39.

c. No condemnation without fair trial. “Does our law judge any man, before it hear him, and know what he does?” John 7:51.

9. What right of conscience did the Persian king deny to Daniel?

Freedom of worship. “Whosoever shall ask a petition of any god or man for thirty days, save of thee, O king, he shall be cast into the den of lions.” Daniel 6: 7.

10. With what courage did Daniel continue to follow the dictates of his conscience?

“Now when Daniel knew that the writing was signed, he went into his house; and his windows being open in his chamber toward Jerusalem, he kneeled upon his knees three times a day, and prayed, and gave thanks before his God, as he did aforetime.” Daniel 6: 10.

11. Following the deliverance of Daniel from the den of lions, what evidence did Darius give of his repentance?

“I make a decree, That in every dominion of my kingdom men tremble and fear before the God of Daniel: for He is the living God, and steadfast for ever, and His kingdom that which shall not be destroyed, and His dominion shall be even unto the end.” Daniel 6: 26, 27.

12. What further right of conscience did the rulers of the Jews seek to withhold from the disciples?

Right of witness. “And they called them, and commanded them not to speak at all nor teach in the name of Jesus.” Acts 4:18.

13. How did the disciples relate themselves to this prohibition?

“But Peter and John answered and said unto them, Whether it be right in the sight of God to hearken unto you more than unto God, judge you. For we cannot but speak the things which we have seen and heard.” Acts 4: 19, 20.

14. What suffering did their loyalty to God bring upon them?

“Then the high priest rose up, and all they that were with him, (which is the sect of the Sadducees,) and were filled with indignation, and laid their hands on the apostles, and Put them in the common Prison.” Acts 5: 17, 18.

15. How did God reward His faithful witnesses?

“But the angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doors, and brought them forth, and said, GO, stand and speak in the temple to the people all the words of this life.” Acts 5:19,20.

16. What tyrannical domination will manifest itself in the latter days?

a. Civil liberties restricted. “And he causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free, and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads. And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.” Revelation 13:16,17.

b. Religious intolerance. “And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be, killed.” Revelation 13: 15. See study entitled, “The Great Conspiracy.”

17. Does the deprival of liberties, whether civil or religious, pass unnoticed by God?

“If thou sees the oppression of the poor, and violent perverting of judgment and justice in a province, marvel not at the matter: for He that is higher than the highest regarded; and there be higher than they.” Ecclesiastes 5:8.

18. With what glorious hope are the persecuted encouraged?

“Be Patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waits for the precious fruit of the earth, and has long patience for it.” James 5: 7, 8.

Master and Servant

1. How should masters treat those who labor for them?

“Masters, give unto your servants that which is just and equal.” Colossians 4:1.

2. Of what should they be ever mindful?

a. That all men are created equal. “Have we not all one Father? Has not one God created us? Why do we deal treacherously every man against his brother?” Malachi 2: 10. (See also Acts 17:26.)

b. That they will have to give an account of their rule to God. “If I did despise the cause of my manservant or of my maidservant, when they contended with me; what then shall I do when God rises up? and when He visits, what shall I answer Him.” Job 31:13,14.

“This is a lesson that all masters should carefully learn. Do not treat your servants as if God had made them of an inferior blood to yours.” - Dr. Adam Clarke.

c. That they themselves are servants of God. “Knowing that you also have a Master in heaven.” Colossians 4: 1.

3. From what, therefore, should they abstain?

a. Rigor. “Thou shall not rule over him with rigor; but shall fear thy God.” Leviticus 25:43. (See also Deuteronomy 24: 14.)

b. Threatening. “And, you masters, do the same things unto them, forbearing threatening.” Ephesians 6: 9.

4. How solicitous was the Roman centurion for his servant’s welfare?

“And a certain centurion’s servant, who was dear unto him, was sick and ready to die. And when he heard of Jesus, he sent unto Him the elders of the Jews, beseeching Him that He would come and heal his servant.” Luke 7: 2, 3.

5. What balance, however, should be maintained between privilege and discipline?

“He that delicately brings up his servant from a child shall have him become his son at the length.” Proverbs 29:21.

“Such persons are generally forgetful of their obligations, assume the rights and privileges of children, and are seldom good for anything.” - Dr. Adam Clarke.

6. What is due to the conscientious worker?

“For the workman is worthy of his meat.” Matthew 10:10. “The laborer is worthy of his reward.” 1 Timothy 5:18.

7. How are wages to be regarded by an employer?

“Now to him that works is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.” Romans 4:4.

8. How unjustly did Laban treat Jacob?

“And your father has deceived me, and changed my wages ten times; but God suffered him not to hurt me.” Genesis 31: 7.

9. Does the defrauding of the worker pass unnoticed by God?

“Lest he cry against thee unto the Lord, and it be sin unto thee.” Deuteronomy 24: 15.

10. Beside payment for services rendered, what is also due to every worker?

“But the seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God: in it thou shall not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, nor thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor your ox, nor your ass, nor any of thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates; that thy manservant and thy maidservant may rest as well as thou.” Deuteronomy 5:14.

11. In what should servants be given every facility to take part?

“And you shall rejoice before the Lord your God, you, and your sons, and your daughters, and your menservants, and your maidservants.” Deuteronomy 12: 12.

12. If a master treats his servants justly, what may he rightly expect of them?

a. Respect. “Let as many servants as are under the yoke count their own masters worthy of all honor.” 1 Timothy 6: 1.

b. Obedience and faithfulness. “Exhort servants to be obedient unto their own masters, and to please them well in all things; not answering again; not purloining, but showing all good fidelity.” Titus 2:9, 10.

13. What attitude of mind will ennoble all earthly service?

“Servants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh; not with eye service, as men pleasers; but in singleness of heart, fearing God: and whatsoever you do, do it heartily, as to, the Lord, and not unto men.” Colossians 3: 22, 23.

14. How is a faithful servant regarded by his master?

“As the cold of snow in the time of harvest, so is a faithful messenger to them that send him: for he refreshed the soul of his masters.” Proverbs 25: 13.

15. What is his reward?

a.Honor. “So he that waited on his master shall be honored.” Proverbs 27: 18.

b.Advancement. “Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord has made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods.” Matthew 24: 45-47.

16. Should unjust treatment be regarded as grounds for lack of fidelity?

“Servants, be subject to your masters with all fear; not only to the good and gentle, but also to the froward.” 1 Peter 2: 18.

17. How does God regard faithfulness under provocation?

“For this is thank worthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully. For what glory is it, if, when you be buffeted for your faults, you shall take it patiently? But if, when you do well, and suffer for it, you take it patiently, this is acceptable with God.” 1 Peter 2: 19, 20.

18. With what significant yet necessary warning does Paul admonish those who labor for fellow believers? “And they that have believing masters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren; but rather do them service, because they are faithful and beloved, partakers of the benefit.” 1 Timothy 6:2.

19. What honor does faithfulness in service bring to the church?

“That they may adorn the doctrine of God our Savior in all things.” Titus 2: 10.

20. On the other hand what grievous harm may result from unfaithfulness to duty on the part of Christians? “The name of God and His doctrine be blasphemed.” 1 Timothy 6: 1.

“The gospel does not cancel the obligations any lie under, either by the law of nature, or by mutual consent.

If servants that embraced the Christian religion should grow insolent and disobedient to their masters, the doctrine of Christ would be reflected on for their sakes, as if it had made men worse livers than they had been before they had received the gospel. And this is a good reason why we should all conduct ourselves well, that we may prevent the occasion which many seek, and will be very apt to lay hold of, to speak ill of religion for our sakes.” - Matthew Henry.

21. How will God reward faithfulness in earthly service?

“Knowing that of the Lord you shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for you serve the Lord Christ.” Colossians 3:24.

19. World Destiny

Does Prophecy Matter?

1.WHAT does God offer as the most conclusive evidence of His power?

“I am the Lord: that is My name: and My glory will I not give to another, neither My praise to graven images. Behold, the former things are come to pass, and new things do I declare: before they spring forth I tell you of them.” Isaiah 42: 8, 9. (See also Isaiah 46: 9, 10.)

2. In consequence what is the strongest evidence that God’s messengers can offer in support of their claims?

“The prophet which prophesies when the word of the prophet shall come to pass, then shall the prophet be known, that the Lord has truly sent him.” Jeremiah 28: 9.

The unaided human mind is incapable of penetrating the veil enshrouding the future. If, therefore, certain individuals manifest the power of accurately forecasting happenings in the distant future in no way deducible from present conditions, and often antagonistic to them, they must obviously be animated by some Power greater than human.

“Prophecies, already fulfilled, put the clear broad seal of God upon the Bible. To establish one Prophecy is to carry the whole fortress of the enemy by storm, for it settles the inspiration of the Word of God.” - Dr. A. T. Pierson in “Many Infallible Proofs,” pages 32-34.

3. While prophecy is thus a valuable evidence of God’s existence and character and of the inspiration of His Word, what is its main purpose?

To make men cognizant of the divine program. “Surely the Lord God will do nothing, but He revealed His secret unto His servants the prophets.” Amos 3: 7. (See also Daniel 2: 28; Revelation 22: 6.)

4. What moral effect does God intend prophecy to have?

a.To awaken faith in God. “And now I have told you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, you might believe.” John 14: 29.

b.To evoke obedience. “The secret things belong unto the Lord our God: but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children for ever, that we may do all the words of this law.” Deuteronomy 29: 29.

5. How does an understanding of prophetic truth fortify the believer for the experiences of life?

a.It gives peace of heart and mind in an evil world. “And you shall hear of wars and rumors of wars: see that you be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass but the end is not yet.” Matthew 24: 6.

b.It safeguards from the snares of the enemy. “And by a prophet the Lord brought Israel out of Egypt, and by a prophet was he Preserved.” Hosea 12: 13.

Prophecy makes plain from age to age the path marked out for the people of God, and forewarns and forearms them against the pitfalls which the evil one places along the way. Revealing his machinations and delusions in advance, it provides an infallible test whereby his workings may be recognized and unmasked.

6. To what is the believer impelled as he contemplates the future through the fulfillment of the prophetic word?

a. Self examination. "Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of Persons ought you to be in all holy conversation and godliness, looking for and hastening unto the coming of the day of God." 2 Peter 3:11,12.

b. Preparation to meet God. "And every man that has this hope in him purifies himself, even as He is pure." 1 John 3: 3.

7. What encouragement does the progressive fulfillment of prophecy give to him?

"And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draws nigh. When you see these things come to pass, know you that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand." Luke 21:28-31.

The watcher sees the prophetic pictures materialize on the stage of history, pass, and be replaced by still others. He follows the scenes as they are successively enacted, and his heart thrills as the number of fulfilled prophecies grows greater and the specifications still unfulfilled become fewer and fewer. In the very last days, when the last prophetic pictures are taking shape, the watching church is raised to the highest pitch of expectancy as the believers realize that they are on the very verge of the eternal kingdom.

8. What disaster must inevitably follow the unbelieving and heedless?

"And the Lord God of their fathers sent to them by His messengers, rising up betimes, and sending. Because He had compassion on His people, and on His dwelling place: but they mocked the messengers of God, and despised His words, and misused His prophets, until the wrath of the Lord arose against His people, till there was no remedy." 2 Chronicles 36: 15, 16. (Read verses 17-19.)

9. What respect, therefore, are we urged to give to the prophetic word?

"We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto you do well that you take heed, as unto a light that shines in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the Day-star arise." 2 Peter 1:19. (See also 1 Thessalonians 5: 20, 21; 2 Chronicles 20:20.)

Privileges of Citizenship

1. BY whom are earthly rulers ordained and to whom are they subject? "For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God." Romans 13:1.

2. What dual loyalty is therefore demanded of godly subjects?

"My son, fear thou the Lord and the king." Proverbs 24:21. "Fear God. Honor the king." 1 Peter 2: 17.

"The civil state in which a man was before his conversion is not altered by that conversion; nor does the grace of God absolve him from any claims which either the state or his neighbor may have on him. All these outward things continue unaltered." Dr. Adam Clarke.

3. In what ways should earthly rulers be honored?

"Render therefore to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute is due; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honor to whom honor." Romans 13:7. "Put them in mind to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready to every good work." Titus 3:1.

"As a Christian, he does not cease to be a citizen, to be a subject. His deliverance from the death sentence of the law of God only binds him, in his Lord's name, to a loyal fidelity to human statute; limited only by the case where such statute may really contradict the supreme divine law. The disciple of Christ, as such, while his whole being has received an emancipation unknown elsewhere, is to be the faithful subject of the emperor, the orderly inhabitant of his quarter in the city, the punctual taxpayer, the ready giver of not a servile yet a genuine deference to the representatives and ministers of human authority."-H. C. G. Moule in "Romans," pages 348, 349.

Light in a Dark Place

1. IN a dark and sinful world, what question has ever been upon men's lips? "Watchman, what of the night? Watchman, what of the night?" Isaiah 21:11.

2. By what has the darkness of earth's night of sin been illumined in each succeeding generation?

"We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto you do well that you take heed, as unto a light that shines in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the Day-star arise." 2 Peter 1:19.

3. Through whom did God give a prophetic warning in the antediluvian world?

"And God said unto Noah, The end of all flesh is come before Me; for the earth is filled with violence through them; and, behold, I will destroy them with the earth." Genesis 6:13.

4. How did Noah show his faith in the revelation given to him?

“By faith Noah, being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark, to the saving of his house; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by faith.” Hebrews 11: 7.

5. What tragedy, however, befell the rest of the antediluvian world through their failure to heed the prophetic warning?

“And every living substance was destroyed from the earth: and Noah only remained alive, and they that were with him in the ark.” Genesis 7: 23.

6. On what condition only would Israel’s prosperity be assured?

“Believe in the Lord your God, so shall you be established; believe His prophets, so shall you prosper.” 2 Chronicles 20: 20.

7. How did Israel relate themselves to the prophets, and as a result what disaster fell upon them?

“And the Lord God of their fathers sent to them by His messengers, rising up betimes, and sending; because He had compassion on His people, and on His dwelling place. But they mocked the messengers of God, and despised His words, and misused His prophets, until the wrath of the Lord arose against His people, till there was no remedy.” 2 Chronicles 36: 15, 16.

8. What brought hope to Daniel in Babylon?

“In the first year of his reign I Daniel understood by books the number of the years, whereof the word of the Lord came to Jeremiah the prophet, that He would accomplish seventy years in the desolation of Jerusalem.” Daniel 9: 2.

9. What grave omission did Daniel confess on behalf of his brethren?

“Neither have we hearkened unto Thy servants the prophets, which spoke in Thy name to our kings, our princes, and our fathers, and to all the people of the land.” Daniel 9: 6.

10. After bringing Israel back to their own land, how did God seek to prepare the hearts of Israel to receive His Son?

a. Prophecies of the advent. “To Him give all the Prophets witness, that through His name whosoever believes in Him shall receive remission of sins.” Acts 10: 43.

b. Sending a prophet as forerunner. “As it is written in the prophets, Behold, I send My messenger before Thy face, which shall prepare Thy way before Thee. The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare you the way of the Lord, make His paths straight.” Mark 1: 2, 3.

11. How completely heedless was the Jewish nation of all the prophetic admonition? “He came unto His own, and His own received Him not.” John 1: 11.

12. What precipitated Israel’s final downfall?

“If thou had known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace! but now they are hid from your eyes because thou knew not the time of thy visitation.” Luke 19: 42-44.

13. In contrast with the unbelieving Jews what evidence did the early Christians give of their study of the prophetic word?

“And now, brethren, I know that through ignorance you did it, as did also your rulers. But those things, which God before had showed by the mouth of all His prophets, that Christ should suffer, He has so fulfilled.” Acts 3: 17, 18.

14. To what particular prophecies were the Christians urged by Jesus to give heed?

“When you therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (who reads, let him understand:) then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains.” Matthew 24:15,16.

Drawing their attention to the prophecy of Daniel concerning the coming “abomination of desolation,” He bade them, when they should see this destructive power encamped about Jerusalem, flee unto the mountains and escape the doom which would fall upon the city. Some forty years later they recognized in the advancing armies of Titus the fulfillment of Daniel’s prophecy. Heeding Christ’s injunction, they fled to the small village of Pella some miles away. As a result, when the city fell and the terrible massacre of the Jews ensued, not a single Christian perished.

15. What prophetic revelation did the Spirit give through John to the church in the Christian era?

“The revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto Him, to show unto His servants things which must shortly come to Pass.” Revelation 1:1.

16. What special blessing was pronounced upon those who should study the prophecies of Revelation? “Blessed is he that reads, and they that bear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.”

Revelation 1: 3.

Throughout the Christian era God has provided timely admonitions for each generation of the church. So also to us upon whom the ends of the world are come, the sure word of prophecy, including the prophecies of the Revelation, has much to say, accurately delineating the political, social, economic, and religious movements of the day, indicating what should be the church’s attitude toward them, and forewarning concerning every modern satanic delusion.

17. What did the prophetic word enable the Reformers to discern?

When the great papal system grew up during the Middle Ages and fulfilled so exactly the specifications of the antichrist of the Revelation, it was recognized as such by the true followers of God, and the great Reformation movement of the sixteenth century was the result.

18. How far do the revelations of God’s prophets carry us in the stream of time?

“But there is a God in heaven that revealed secrets, and makes known what shall be in the latter days.” Daniel 2: 28.

19. What particular prophecies were to be unfolded in the last days?

“But thou, O Daniel, shut up the ‘Words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased.” Daniel 12: 4. (Compare Revelation 10: 8-11.)

20. What glorious morning beyond earth’s night of sin is foreshadowed in the prophetic word?

“And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.” Revelation 21: 1-4.

Can We Understand Prophecy?

1. How has God provided for our spiritual instruction and development?

“All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness.” 2 Timothy 3: 16.

2. What forms a large part of “all” Scripture which is to be studied and understood?

“We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto you do well that you take heed, as unto a light that shines in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the Day-star arise.” 2 Peter 1:19.

It is not generally realized how large a part of the Bible is taken up by prophecy. If we think only of the definitely prophetic books we find that there are no less than eighteen-amounting to almost one-quarter of the total text of the Bible. But there are also many prophecies in the other books of the Old and New Testaments, so that we may say without exaggeration that about one-half of the Bible is prophecy. Obviously, then, if we neglect the prophetic word we are necessarily setting aside a very large part of Holy Writ.

3. Were the prophecies of Daniel intended to be understood?

“So he came near where I stood: and when he came, was afraid, and fell upon my face: but he said unto me, Understand, O son of man: for at the time of the end shall be the vision.” Daniel 8:17. (See also Daniel 9: 22, 23.)

4. What significant name is given to the last book of the Bible, indicating that it is to be understood?

“The revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto Him, to show unto His servants things which must shortly come to pass.” Revelation 1:1. It would surely be ludicrous for God to designate one of the most important prophetic books in the Bible as a “revelation” or “unveiling” if it were not to be understood.

5. What specific injunctions are given to the readers of this prophecy to understand its meaning?

“Blessed is he that reads, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein.” Revelation 1:3.

6. What example of study did the prophets themselves set?

“Of which salvation the Prophets have inquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you.” 1 Peter 1: 10. (See also verse 11.)

Daniel, in captivity in Babylon, seeking to understand God’s -purpose for Israel, betook himself to the study of the prophet Jeremiah and “understood by books” that the period of desolation of Jerusalem was almost expired. (Daniel 9:2)

7. Is human wisdom adequate for an understanding of prophecy?

“But the natural man received not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.” 1 Corinthians 2: 14.

Just as divine aid is necessary to unveil the future (Daniel 2: 20, 22, 23), so spiritual understanding is required for the true interpretation of that which has been revealed. (Daniel 5: 12, 14.)

8. Were the prophecies necessarily to be fully understood from the time they were given?

a. Often they were not understood at all when first given. “And I heard, but I understood not.” Daniel 12: 8.

b. As the time of fulfillment approaches light begins to dawn. “In the first year of his reign I Daniel understood by books the number of the years, whereof the word of the Lord came to Jeremiah the prophet, that He would accomplish seventy years in the desolation of Jerusalem.” Daniel 9: 2.

c. After fulfillment understanding is complete. “But this is that which was spoken by the prophet Joel; And it shall come to pass in the last days, said God, I will pour out of My Spirit upon all flesh.” Acts 2: 16, 17.

d. The fulfilled prophecy evokes faith and confidence in God and in His Word. “And now I have told you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, you might believe.” John 14: 29.

9. What culpable ignorance did Jesus condemn?

“O you hypocrites, you can discern the face of the sky; but can you not discern the signs of the times?” Matthew 16: 3.

In connection with the understanding of prophecy there is a justifiable ignorance, a beneficent veiling of understanding, intended by God to prevent His people becoming unduly apprehensive of the trials and tribulations of the future, and to keep them ever in a state of expectancy. But there is also a culpable ignorance, a failure to understand the message of prophecy when the time has come for it to be known.

10. At what time is a great unfolding of prophetic truth promised?

“But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased.” Daniel 12: 4. (See also verse 9.)

11. In what should the people of God in every generation be established?

“Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of these things, though you know them, and be established in the Present truth.” 2 Peter 1: 12.

God’s Blue-Print of History

1. THROUGH whom was the first detailed panoramic prophecy of world history given?

“And in the second year of the reign of Nebuchadnezzar, Nebuchadnezzar dreamed dreams, wherewith his spirit was troubled, and his sleep brake from him,” Daniel 2: 1.

2. Unable to recall the remarkable vision, for whom did he call?

“Then the king commanded to call the magicians, and the astrologers, and the sorcerers, and the Chaldeans, for to show the king his dreams.” Daniel 2: 2.

3. What confession were they compelled to make?

“And it is a rare thing that the king requires, and there is none other that can show it before the king, except the gods, whose dwelling is not with flesh.” Daniel 2: 11.,

4. By whom were the dream and its interpretation made known to the king?

“Then was the secret revealed unto Daniel in a night vision.” Daniel 2: 19.

5. In what words did Daniel inform Nebuchadnezzar of the momentous nature of the dream?

“There is a God in heaven that reveals secrets, and makes known to the king Nebuchadnezzar what shall be in the latter days.” Daniel 2: 28.

6. What did the king see in his dream?

A great image comprised of diverse metals. Read Daniel 2:31-35.

7. Who was represented by the head of gold?

“Thou, O king, art a king of kings: for the God of heaven has given thee a kingdom, power, and strength, and glory. Thou art this head of gold.” Daniel 2:37, 38. (See also Isaiah 14: 4, 6.)

No metal more appropriate could have been chosen to typify this first world power. Babylon was literally a golden city. Herodotus (Herodotus, 1, 181, 183; 111, 1-7), the Greek historian, who visited Babylon some ninety years after the reign of Nebuchadnezzar, describes his astonishment at the amount of gold lavished upon the sacred temples of the city.

8. As Nebuchadnezzar glowed with pride at the divine representation of his kingdom, what rude shock did he receive?

“And after thee shall arise another kingdom.” Daniel 2: 39.

9. How specifically did Jeremiah enumerate the succeeding kings of Babylon down to the time of its fall?

“And now have I given all these lands into the hand of Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon, My servant. And all nations shall serve him, and his son, and his son’s son, until the very time of his land come. And then many nations and great kings shall serve themselves of him.” Jeremiah 27: 6, 7.

10. What was to be the actual duration of ‘the empire’?

“And it shall come to pass, when seventy years are accomplished, that I will punish the king of Babylon, and that nation, said the Lord.” Jeremiah 25: 12.

George Rawlinson states that the Babylonian empire was founded by Nabopolassar in 625 BC. Its total duration, therefore, was eighty-eight years.

11. On what occasion was Babylon’s imminent doom announced?

“Belshazzar the king made a great feast to a thousand of his lords, and drank wine before the thousand. In the same hour came forth fingers of a man’s hand, and wrote over against the candlestick upon the Plaister of the wall of the king’s palace: and the king saw the part of the hand that wrote.” Daniel 5: 1-5.

12. How did Daniel interpret the writing?

“And this is the writing that was written, MENE, MENE, TEKEL, UPHARSIN. This is the interpretation of the thing: MENE; God has numbered thy kingdom, and finished it. TEKEL; Thou art weighed in the balances, and art found wanting. PERES; Thy kingdom is divided, and given to the Medes and Persians.” Daniel 5: 25-28.

13. How speedily was the sentence pronounced upon Belshazzar executed?

“In that night was Belshazzar the king of the Chaldeans slain. And Darius the Median took, the kingdom, being about threescore and two years old.” Daniel 5: 30, 31.

It was in 538 BC, in the reign of Nebuchadnezzar’s grandson and sixty-eight years after the utterance of Jeremiah’s prophecy, that Babylon was overthrown by the Medes and Persians. Two years later, or exactly seventy years after the prophecy was given, Cyrus issued his decree liberating the remnant of Israel.

14. By what metal was the Medo-Persian empire represented in the image?

“This image’s breast and his arms of silver.” Daniel 2: 32.

As the metal gold most accurately symbolized Babylon, so history reveals the appropriateness of silver as a type of the second world empire. Silver was the principal adornment of the Persian warriors. More significant still, silver was the standard of exchange in the days of this empire, just as, until recently, a gold standard was in universal use for modern international commerce.

15. How would the second world empire compare in glory with Babylon?

“And after thee shall arise another kingdom inferior to thee.” Daniel 2:39.

It was inferior in luxury and magnificence, as the Medo-Persian kings considered it best to retain their treasures in a more mobile form for use at short notice in the financing of great military expeditions. The Medo-Persian kings were inferior also in that they did not enjoy the same absolute authority as the kings of Babylon. Not the king but the “law of the Medes and Persians” was supreme.

16. To what new kingdom would Medo-Persia eventually give place?

“And another third kingdom of brass shall bear rule over all the earth.” Daniel 2: 39.

We are not left to search the pages of secular history in order to discover this third world power, for again Inspiration provides us with the necessary clue. In the eighth chapter of Daniel the conflict between the second and third empires (which resulted in the downfall of the former in the decisive battle of Arbela, 331 BC) is dealt with at considerable length, and the ram and the he-goat are specifically designated by the angel in his interpretation as the kings of Medo-Persia and of Greece. Greece is thus identified as the third empire and corresponds to the brazen portion of the image.

As silver was used for personal adornment by the Persian warriors, so brass was characteristic of the Greek soldier. Brass was used not only for body armor but also on their head-dresses and sandals, as well as for shields, swords, battle-axes, and the tips of spears and arrows. Homer speaks of the “brass-clad Greeks.”

17. By what power was Greece ultimately to be overthrown?

“And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron: forasmuch as iron breaks in pieces and subdued all things: and as iron that breaks all these, shall it break in pieces and bruise.” Daniel 2: 40.

The battle of Pydna in Macedonia in 168 BC decided the fate of the Greek empire and left Rome undisputed mistress of the ancient world.

It is very remarkable that the rise of the Roman arms was contemporary with a gradual displacement of brazen implements and weapons in favor of iron ones.

The phrase “break in pieces and bruise” seems not only to connote power of conquest but also rapacity, blood-thirstiness, and brutality, which were all abundantly manifest in the Roman campaigns. “The arms of the republic, sometimes vanquished in battle, always victorious in war, advanced with rapid steps to the Euphrates, the Danube, the Rhine, and the ocean. And the images of gold, or silver, or brass, that might serve to represent the nations and their kings, were successively broken by the iron monarchy of Rome.” - Edward Gibbon in “The Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire,” Volume III, page 634.

Gas masks and other defense measures have been devised because nations have discovered new methods of destroying each other.

The Anarchy of Nations

1. In what way would the fall of the fourth empire of Nebuchadnezzar’s dream differ from that of the previous world kingdoms?

“And whereas thou saw the feet and toes, part of potters’ clay, and part of iron, the kingdom shall be divided.” Daniel 2: 41.

2. Into how many fragments was the Roman empire broken by the barbarian invasions of the fourth and fifth centuries?

When we examine the period of history immediately succeeding the fall of the Caesars, we find that Western Europe was portioned out among barbarian tribes into just ten divisions corresponding significantly to the ten toes, namely the Alemanni, Ostrogoths, Visigoths, Franks, Vandals, Suevi, Burgundians, Heruli, Anglo-Saxons, and Lombards.

3. What diversity of power and sovereignty would obtain among the broken fragments of the old empire? “And as the toes of the feet were part of iron, and part of clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong, and partly broken.” Daniel 2: 42.

Gibbon speaks of the “powerful monarchies of the Franks and the Visigoths, and the dependent kingdoms of the Suevi and Burgundians.”

4. In spite of attempts on the part of the strong to absorb the weak, how persistent would the divisions be? “And whereas thou saw iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men: but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay.” Daniel 2: 43.

Charles V of Spain in the sixteenth century, Louis XIV of France in the seventeenth century, Napoleon in the nineteenth century, and Wilhelm II of Germany in the early twentieth century all sought to dominate Europe. But all failed signally to achieve their object. “History records many attempts to impose domination on Europe, but all those attempts have sooner or later terminated in disaster for those who made them.” - Lord Halifax.

5. What other attempts to achieve European unity would be equally unavailing?

“They shall mingle themselves with the seed of men.” Daniel 2: 43.

The reference here is evidently to alliances effected by intermarriage between the descendants of the various European sovereigns. But these matrimonial alliances proved as transient as those secured by force of arms. Although at times they brought together two or more nations for a few years, the spirit of nationalism always proved too great, and before very long the states were independent of each other again. Immediately before the first World War the sovereigns of Europe were almost all connected by marriage with each other. But these ties failed to prevent the outbreak of that terrible cataclysm.

6. In what ways have modern European statesmen unsuccessfully endeavored to curb the menace of aggressive nationalism?

By international leagues. Speaking in Italy, President Wilson declared in words strikingly reminiscent of the word of prophecy: "We shall have to find a new cement to hold the nations together." The cement he suggested was the League of Nations, and he confidently believed that the time had come when the peoples of the world would come together and form a universal brotherhood of nations. The second World War has shown that he was wrong.

7. By what will the divided and warring kingdoms of the modern world ultimately be superseded?

"And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed." Daniel 2: 44.

8. How is the inauguration of the kingdom of God symbolized in Nebuchadnezzar's dream?

"Forasmuch as thou saw that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it brake in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver, and the gold; the great God has made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter." Daniel 2: 45.

9. Where else is the expression "without hands" used, and what does it signify?

Divine intervention. "For the punishment of the iniquity of the daughter of My people is greater than the punishment of the sin of Sodom, that was overthrown as in a moment, and no hands stayed on her." Lamentations 4: 6. "For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens." 2 Corinthians 5: 1.

10. What other Old Testament prophets use the term "Stone" to symbolize the coming Messiah?

a. Stone of Israel. "But his bow abode in strength, and the arms of his hands were made strong by the hands of the mighty God of Jacob; (from thence is the Shepherd, the Stone of Israel)." Genesis 49: 24.

b. Foundation Stone. "Therefore thus said the Lord God, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a Stone. a tried Stone, a precious corner Stone, a sure foundation: he that believes shall not make haste." Isaiah 28: 16.

c. Stone of judgment. "And He shall be for a sanctuary; but for a Stone of stumbling and for a Rock of offence to both the houses of Israel, for a gin and for a snare to the inhabitants of Jerusalem." Isaiah 8: 14.

11. What claim did Jesus make concerning Himself?

"And He [Jesus] beheld them, and said, What is this then that is written, The Stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner?" Luke 20: 17.

12. How assured were the disciples that the "Stone" represented Christ?

"This is the Stone which was set at naught of you builders, which is become the head of the corner. Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved." Acts 4: 11, 12.

13. To what does the falling of the Stone refer?

A very little acquaintance with Bible prophecy is sufficient to show, without doubt, that the falling of the Stone is identical with the second advent of the Messiah in power and glory.

14. In what statements is the coming of Christ conclusively associated with the inauguration of His kingdom?

"When the Son of man shall come in His glory, and all the holy angels with Him, then shall He sit upon the throne of His glory." Matthew 25:31. "I charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at His appearing and His kingdom; preach the Word." 2 Timothy 4:1,2.

15. How completely will the kings and the kingdoms of this world be swept away at the coming of Christ?

"Then was the iron, the Clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold, broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshing- floors; and the wind carried them away, that no place was found for them.--Daniel 2: 35.

16. Will any earthly kingdom continue as part of the kingdom of God or merge into it?

"The kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever." Daniel 2: 44.

17. How wide is to be the extent of the kingdom of God?

"And the stone that smote the image became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth." Daniel 2: 35.

18. How sure is the fulfillment of every detail of the vision?

"The dream is certain, and the interpretation thereof sure." Daniel 2: 45.

19. What then is the message of the Stone?

"Whosoever shall fall upon that Stone shall be broken; but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder." Luke 20:18.

The Bible speaks, when we follow God's command, "Preach the Word."

Anti Christ Unmasked

1. WHAT symbols are used in the seventh chapter of Daniel for the four great world powers first mentioned in Daniel 2?

“Daniel spoke and said, I saw in my vision by night, and, behold, the four winds of the heaven strove upon the great sea. And four great beasts came up from the sea, diverse one from another.” Daniel 7: 2, 3. (See also verse 17.)

The sea typifies the nations of the world (Revelation 17:15), the winds represent war, strife, and bloodshed (Jeremiah 25: 32, 33), and the four beasts, the four successive world powers, Babylon, Medo-Persia, Greece, and Rome, which were to bear rule over the earth. (See the two preceding studies.)

2. By what are the divided fragments of the Roman Empire, the fourth world power, here represented?

“After this I saw in the night visions, and behold a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly; and it had ten horns.” “And the ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings that shall arise.” Daniel 7: 7, 24.

The division was fulfilled in the dissolution of the Roman Empire in the fifth and sixth centuries, as a result of the inroads of the northern barbarians. (See previous studies.)

3. What new power is brought to view rising among the divided kingdoms of the iron monarchy?

“I considered the horns, and, behold, there came up among them another little horn.” Daniel 7:8. “Another shall arise after them; and he shall be diverse from the first.” Daniel 7:24.

This new power was to rise within the Roman Empire, subsequent to its division, but it was to form no part of any of the divisions. It was to have a separate existence, as well as to be diverse in nature (verse 24) from the others. Did such a power arise? It surely did. The Roman Catholic Church took its name from the empire. It established its seat in the ancient capital. It adopted the Roman tongue, and the title of its spiritual director, Pontifex Maximus, was borrowed from that of the Roman emperors. But, unlike the powers by which it was surrounded, its claim to supremacy was based, not upon force of arms, but upon the pretension of divine ordination. “Roman imperialism still survives, the most imposing of all political anachronisms, in the palace of the Pontifex Maximus in the Vatican.”

4. While at first small and weak compared with the ten kingdoms, what place did Rome quickly assume among the nations?

“That horn had eyes, and a mouth that spoke very great things, whose look was more stout than his fellows.” Daniel 7:20.

Its rise could not have been better described. From being merely one of the outposts of early Christianity, so exalted did the “little” horn become, that the greatest of earthly kings have stooped to kiss the toe of its supreme pontiff. “In a few centuries the pope had become in theory, and to a certain extent in practice, the high priest, censor, judge, and divine monarch of Christendom.” -H. G. Wells in “Outline of History,” page 526.

5. Against whom would this new and diverse power oppose itself?

“I considered the horns, and, behold, there came up among them another little horn, before whom there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots.” Daniel 7:8. “Before whom three fell.” Daniel 7:20. “He shall subdue three kings.” Daniel 7: 24.

The facts of history again testify to the accuracy of the prophecy. The first barbarian king of Rome, Odoacer of the Heruli, antagonized the Catholics by his acceptance of the heretic Arian faith and his attempt to interfere with a papal election. The pope invoked the aid of Zeno, the Eastern emperor, who permitted the Ostrogoth, Theodoric, to invade Italy and establish the Ostrogothic kingdom there (AD 493).

The Arian Vandals of Africa next offended the Papacy by persecuting the Catholics. Justinian, then Emperor of the East, sent an army under Belisarius at the pope’s request. Carthage was sacked in AD 534 and the Vandal power utterly destroyed.

Finally the Arian Ostrogoth, Theodoric, crossed swords with Rome by persecuting Romanists in his dominions. Justinian again came to the rescue (AD 533), pronounced the pope “head of all bishops and corrector of heretics,” and dispatched Belisarius to Italy. After some years of conflict the Ostrogoths were expelled, and the pope was left without rival in Rome (AD 538).

6. What blasphemies would the little horn utter?

“And he shall speak great words against the Most High.” Daniel 7:25.

“We hold on this earth the place of God Almighty.” – “The Great Encyclical Letters of Leo XIII,” page 304.

“When I heard him sing mass [the pope] I cannot explain what I felt: it was the God of earth prostrate in adoration before the God of heaven.” - Mother Margaret Mary Hallahan, quoted in “Roman Catholic Claims,” page 430.

“For thou [the pope] art the shepherd, thou art the physician, thou art the director, thou art the husbandman; finally, thou art another God on earth. “-Christopher Marcellus at the Fifth Lateran Council, 1512, quoted by Labbe and Cossart in “History of the Councils,” Volume VIX, Column 109.

“The pope is the vicegerent of Christ.”-Quoted by Leonard Woolsey Bacon in “Vatican Councils” page 220.

“The pope is not only the representative of Jesus Christ, but he is Jesus Christ Himself hidden under the veil of the flesh.” Pope Pius X when Archbishop of Venice.

“All names which in the Scriptures are applied to Christ, by virtue of which it is established that He is over the church, all the same names are applied to the pope.” - Cardinal Bellarmine.

“The pope is Jesus Christ on earth.” - Dr. Gomay Tomas in a pastoral letter to the church in Spain.

“The pope is crowned with a triple crown as king of heaven, and earth, and purgatory.” - Ferraris’ “Prompta Bibliotheca,” Volume VI, page 26, article “Papa.

7. How would the “little horn” treat the laws of God?

“And he shall think to change the times and the laws.” Daniel 7:25 (RV).

Papal Rome has surely done this, in that it has instituted feasts without divine command; it has expunged the second commandment from the ten great "words" of God, so as to permit the worship of images, and divided the tenth to preserve the number; it has decreed the transfer of the Sabbath of the Lord from the seventh day to the first day of the week, and the time of the beginning and ending of the days from sunset to midnight. It has enforced celibacy upon its priesthood, contrary to the divine institution, withheld the communion cup from the laity when Christ bade the church, "Drink you all of it"; and has sanctioned the breaking of the first commandment in the worship of the consecrated wafer at Mass.

8. What treatment would it mete out to the people of God?

"And he shall speak great words against the Most High, and shall wear out the saints of the Most High." Daniel 7: 25.

Something like fifty million souls have been exterminated by the Papacy because they have dared to oppose her claims. They have been hunted from pillar to post, tortured by Inquisitions, and killed in all manner of diabolical ways. Surely this specification has been fulfilled with terrible exactness. And but for the arresting hand of God, the pure faith would have been obliterated from Europe.

9. How precisely is the duration of this persecuting power specified?

"And they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time." Daniel 7:25.

10. In what other terms is the period of the Papacy's power elsewhere expressed?

"And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent." Revelation 12: 14. "And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she has a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days." Verse 6. "And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months." Revelation 13: 5.

In prophecy a day represents a year of actual time (Numbers 14:34; Ezekiel 4:5,6), so that the prophetic period of 1260 days, forty-two months, or a time, times, and half a time, corresponds to 1260 actual years. The natural starting point for this period is the time when the third horn (Ostrogoth) fell, and the power of the pope became established, namely A.D. 538. A period of 1260 years from this date brings us to AD 1798. In that year the French general, Berthier, at the head of a large army, marched into Italy, entered Rome, took captive the pope, and abolished the Papacy. When the hour of divine prophecy struck, the power of Rome was gone.

"The Papacy was extinct; not a vestige of its existence remained; and among all the Roman Catholic powers not a finger was stirred in its defense." - Revelation George Trevor, Canon of York, in "Rome and Its Papal Rulers," page 440.

"Multitudes imagined that the Papacy was at the point of death, and asked, would Pius VI be the last pontiff, and if the close of the eighteenth century would be signalized by the fall of the papal dynasty."-T. H. Gill in "The Papal Drama," book 10.

11. How does the revelator describe the Papacy's catastrophic fall, and what further prediction does he make as to its later course?

"And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast." Revelation 13: 3.

Today we are living in the days of this wonderful resuscitation. Once more the pope is a temporal king. Since the first World War the political power of the Papacy has been steadily increasing, and, according to the statements of keen observers, the Papacy is about to enter upon the most brilliant era since the height of its power in the thirteenth century.

12. What divine judgment, however, is pronounced upon the little horn?

"But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the end." Daniel 7: 26.

13. To what ultimate end will it come?

"I beheld then because of the voice of the great words which the horn spoke: I beheld even till the beast was slain, and his body destroyed, and given to the burning flame." Daniel 7: 11.

14. To whom will his dominion be given?

"And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the People of the saints of the Most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey Him." Daniel 7: 27.

The Battle Ground of Empires

1. In the year that Babylon fell, what further prophetic revelation was given to Daniel?

"In the third year of the reign of king Belshazzar a vision appeared unto me, even unto me Daniel, after that which appeared unto me at the first." Daniel 8: 1.

2. Standing by the side of a river, what remarkable beast did he see?

"And I saw in a vision; by the river of Ulai. Then I lifted up mine eyes, and saw, and, behold, there stood before the river a ram which had two horns: and the two horns were high; but one was higher than the other, and the higher came up last." Daniel 8: 2, 3.

3. How did the angel explain this symbolic creature?

"The ram which thou saw having two horns are the kings of Media and Persia." Daniel 8: 20.

4. In what direction would the empire of the Medes and Persians be extended?

"I saw the ram pushing westward, and northward, and southward; so that no beasts might stand before him, neither was there any that could deliver out of his hand; but he did according to his will, and became great." Daniel 8: 4.

On the victory cylinder of Cyrus are inscribed the words: "I am Cyrus, the king of the world, the great king, the mighty king, king of Babylon, king of Sumer and Akkad, king of the four quarters of the earth."

5. With what other beast did the ram come into conflict?

"And as I was considering, behold, an he-goat came from the west on the face of the whole earth, and touched not the ground: and the goat had a notable horn between his eyes." Daniel 8: 5.

6. What power did the goat represent?

"And the rough goat is the king of Grecia: and the great horn that is between his eyes is the first king." Daniel 8:21.

7. In a later vision who is specified as the instigator of the Grecian war?

"And now will I show thee the truth. Behold, there shall stand up yet three kings in Persia; and the fourth shall be far richer than they all: and by his strength through his riches he shall stir up all against the realm of Greece." Daniel 11: 2.

The successors of Cyrus were Cambyses, his son; Smerdis, an impostor; Darius Hystaspes, and Xerxes the Great. Of the fourth king it is recorded: "Xerxes thus levied his army, searching out every region of the continent... For what nation did not Xerxes lead out of Asia against Greece?" - Herodotus, Book 7, Paragraphs 19, 21.

8. How was the triumph of Alexander over the MedoPersian empire symbolized in the vision?

The he-goat with the "notable horn" charges the ram.

"And I saw him come close unto the ram, and he was moved with choler against him, and smote the ram, and brake his two horns. And there was no power in the ram to stand before him, but he cast him down to the ground, and stamped upon him: and there was none that could deliver the ram out of his hand." Daniel 8: 7.

"The wreck of Xerxes' expedition is the turning point in the history of the Persian Empire. The center of gravity in the world's history had shifted from Susa and Babylon to the Aegean Sea." -Encyclopedia Britannica, eleventh edition, article "Persia."

9. How wide was the dominion of Greece's first king?

"Therefore the he-goat waxed very great." Daniel 8:8. "And a mighty king shall stand up, that shall rule with great dominion, and do according to his will." Daniel 11: 3.

10. What tragic fate, however, would quickly overtake him and his empire?

"And when he was strong, the great horn was broken; and for it came up four notable ones toward the four winds of heaven." Daniel 8: 8. "Now that being broken, whereas four stood up for it, four kingdoms shall stand up out of the nation, but not in his power," Verse 22. (See also Daniel 11: 4.)

"A quadripartite division of Alexander's dominions was recognized, Macedonia, Egypt, Asia Minor, and Syria." - Henry Rawlinson in "The Sixth Great Oriental Monarchy," chapter 3, page 30.

11. What new power intrudes itself through one of the provinces of the divided Greek empire?

"And out of one of them came forth a little horn, which waxed exceeding great, toward the south, and toward the east, and toward the pleasant land." Daniel 8: 9.

"In the year 168 BC the Roman consul Aemilius Paulus crushed the Macedonian power for ever upon the memorable field of Pydna." - Myers' "General History," page 242.

12. How alien was this new power to Greek culture?

"And in the latter time of their kingdom, when the transgressors are come to the full, a king of fierce countenance, and understanding dark sentences, shall stand up." Daniel 8: 23.

The rise of Rome introduced the hitherto little-known Latin tongue into the almost universally Greek-speaking world.

13. Against whom in particular would this new "horn" power exalt itself?

"And his power shall be mighty, but not by his own power: and he shall destroy wonderfully, and shall prosper, and practice, and shall destroy the mighty and the holy people." Daniel 8: 24. "And he shall stand in the glorious land, which by his hand shall be consumed." Daniel 11:16.

The Holy Land was annexed by Rome as a result of its intervention between the Seleucids of Syria and the Ptolemies of Egypt.

14. What tragic action would this power take against the religious life of the Jews?

It would cause the temple service to cease. "Yea, he magnified himself even to the Prince of the host, and by him the daily sacrifice was taken away, and the place of His sanctuary was cast down." Daniel 8: 11. (See also verse 12.)

15. Against whom would this power finally oppose itself?

"He shall also stand up against the Prince of Princes; but he shall be broken without hand." Daniel 8: 25. "And with the arms of a flood shall they be over flown from before him, and shall be broken; yes, also the Prince of the covenant." Daniel 11: 22.

16. On what occasion did Jesus remind His disciples of this prophecy of Daniel?

"When you therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place (who reads, let him understand): then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains." Matthew 24: 15, 16.

17. What apostate spiritual power would pagan Rome be instrumental in bringing into prominence?

"And such as do wickedly against the covenant shall he corrupt by flatteries." Daniel 11: 32.

Deepening apostasy in the early church led to sinful compromise and union with the state and finally to the self-exaltation of the apostate church of Rome in the place of Imperial Rome, the new power continuing the work begun by the former. Papal Rome has

“cast down” the truth by the mutilation of the “commandments of God.” (see studies, “Man’s Modern Idols,” page 200, and “How Was the Sabbath Changed?” page 237), and it has diverted attention from the “continual” mediation of Christ in, the heavenly sanctuary (1 Timothy 2:5; Hebrews 6:19,20; 8:1) by the false sacrifice of the Mass. Papal Rome, moreover, has stood up against the Prince of princes by designating the pope “the Vicar of Christ,” and claiming for him all the prerogatives of the Son of God. (See also 2 Thessalonians 2: 3, 4.)

18. What triumphant faith would be manifest by the true people of God in the face of the apostate power of papal Rome?

“But the people that do know their God shall be strong, and do exploits. And they that understand among the people shall instruct many: yet they shall fall by the sword, and by flame, by captivity, and by spoil, many days.” Daniel 11: 32, 33.

19. When would the fixes of persecution be quenched?

“And some of them of understanding shall fall, to try them, and to purge, and to make them white, even to the time of the end: because it is yet for a time appointed.” Daniel 11: 35.

In the previous study the “time appointed” was shown to be 1260 years, from AD 538 to 1798. Here the term “the time of the end” or “the crisis at the close” (Moffatt’s translation) is given to the period subsequent to 1798 to indicate the approaching climax of history.

20. During the “crisis at the close- what cleansing work would God begin?

“Then I heard one saint speaking, and another saint said unto that certain saint which spoke, How long shall be the vision? And he said unto me, Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleansed.” Daniel 8: 13, 14.

21. Why was Gabriel prevented from explaining the significance of this important event?

“And I Daniel fainted, and was sick certain days; afterward I rose up, and did the king’s business; and I was astonished at the vision, but none understood it.” Daniel 8: 27.

22. Of what, however, was he assured?

a. That the vision referred to events of transcendent importance immediately preceding the end. “And he said, Behold, I will make thee know what shall be in the last end of the indignation: for at the time appointed the end shall be.” Daniel 8: 19.

b. That the prophecy would prove certain and sure. “And the vision of the evening and the morning which was told is true: wherefore shut thou up the vision; for it shall be for many days.” Daniel 8:26.

In the next study we shall see how Gabriel came back again to Daniel after his recovery to explain this important last-day event. As “zero hour” came for ancient nations which rejected the warnings of God, so it must come for every individual and for the whole world.

Heaven’s Zero Hour

1. WHAT instructions had Gabriel received concerning the vision of the eighth chapter of Daniel?

“And I heard a man’s voice between the banks of Ulai, which called, and said, Gabriel, make this man to understand the vision.” Daniel 8: 16.

2. By what, however, were his explanations brought to an abrupt end? “And I Daniel fainted, and was sick certain days.” Daniel 8: 27.

3. In what state of perplexity was Daniel consequently left? “And I was astonished at the vision) but none understood it.” Daniel 8: 27.

4. In response to his prayer whom did God again send, and what welcome announcement did he make? “And he [Gabriel] informed me, and talked with me, and said, O Daniel, I am now come forth to give thee skill and understanding.” Daniel 9: 22.

5. To what did he bid him direct his mind back?

“At the beginning of thy supplications the commandment came forth, and I am come to show thee; for thou art greatly beloved: therefore understand the matter, and consider the vision.” Daniel 9: 23.

6. By way of explanation, what new time period did he bring to Daniel’s attention?

“Seventy weeks are determined [literally, “cut off”] upon thy people and upon thy holy city.” Daniel 9: 24.

“Determined cut off are determined. The word here used occurs nowhere else in the Scriptures. It properly means, according to Gesenius, to cut off, to divide; and hence, to determine, to destine, to appoint.” - Albert Barnes.

From what was this new period “cut off? Obviously from the longer period of 2300 days left unexplained in the preceding vision given by Gabriel to Daniel, “Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleansed.” Daniel 8: 14.

7. What was to be accomplished in this final period of national probation?

“To finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the Most Holy.” Daniel 9: 24.

8. When would the seventy-week period begin?

“Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem shall be seven weeks, and three score and two weeks.” Daniel 9:25.

9. By whom would the decree permitting the rebuilding of the temple first be promulgated?

“That said of Cyrus, He is My shepherd, and shall perform all My pleasure: even saying to Jerusalem, Thou shall be built; and to the temple, Thy foundation shall be laid.” Isaiah 44: 28.

10. What later kings of Persia ratified the decree of Cyrus and helped in the rebuilding of the temple and city?

“And the elders of the Jews built, and finished it, according to the commandment of the God of Israel, and according to the commandment of Cyrus, and Darius, and Artaxerxes king of Persia.” Ezra 6: 14.

“The only decree which was capable of any wider application than the temple merely, and the text of which is preserved to us in the historic records of Scripture, is the edict which was given to us in the historic records of Artaxerxes, in 457BC.” - Revelation Stanley Leathes, DD, in “Old Testament Prophecy,” pages 219, 220.

11. What event marked the end of the sixty-ninth week?

“Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the Messiah the Prince shall be seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks.” Daniel 9: 25.

Sixty-nine prophetic weeks, or 483 literal years, from the autumn Of 457BC bring us to the autumn of AD 27, in which year Jesus began to preach with the significant declaration, “The time is fulfilled.” Mark 1:15.

“That our Lord, in thus speaking of ‘the time,’ referred to the term of sixty-nine weeks foretold in this prophecy as reaching ‘unto Messiah, the Prince,’ is recognized in our reference Bibles, and has been pointed out by the ablest commentators.”-Revelation Joseph Tanner, BA, in “Daniel and the Revelation,” page 38.

12. How precisely is the date of the commencement of the ministry of John the Baptist, and consequently that of Christ, stated in the Gospel?

“Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of Judah and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias, the tetrarch of Abilene, Annas and Caiaphas, being the high priests, the word of God came unto John the son of Zacharias in the wilderness.” Luke 3: 1, 2.

Jesus’ ministry began six months after John the Baptist’s in the same year, the fifteenth year of Tiberius Caesar. There is ample historical evidence that this year of his reign dates from the latter part Of AD 26 to the latter part Of AD 27, or exactly 483 years from 457BC.

13. To what task did Jesus give Himself during the last prophetic week of Israel’s probation? “And He shall confirm the covenant with many for one week.” Daniel 9: 27.

14. In the midst of this last week what epochal event would occur?

“And in the midst of the week He [the Messiah] shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he [the Roman emperor] shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate.” Daniel 9: 27.

After a public ministry of three and a half years Messiah was “cut off, but not for Himself,” exactly as the prophecy had foretold, in AD 31. Three and a half years after that, in AD 34, the seventy weeks ended with the stoning of Stephen and the scattering of the infant church. (See Acts 7:59; 8:1-4)

15. If the seventy weeks were “cut off” from the beginning of the 2300 days, both beginning at the same time, namely 457BC, when will the longer period end?

Stretching out the remaining 1810 years down the Christian era from AD 34, we locate their terminal point in the year 1844.

16. While Daniel had only the vicissitudes of the earthly sanctuary in mind, how do we know that God had no intention of restoring the Jewish temple after its overthrow by the Romans?

“O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killed the prophets, and stoned them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathered her chickens under her wings, and you would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate.” Matthew 23:37,38. (See also Matthew 27:50-51.)

17. To what sanctuary, then, must the “cleansing” in the year 1844 refer?

“Now of the things which we have spoken this is the sum: We have such an High Priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens; a minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pitched, and not man. Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the tabernacle: for, See, said He, that thou make all things according to the pattern showed to thee in the mount.” Hebrews 8:1-5.

In the last book of the Bible, John the revelator records several occasions when he was privileged in vision to look into the heavenly sanctuary. (Revelation 1:12; 8:3; 11:19.) The services of the earthly sanctuary, like its structure, were an “example and shadow of heavenly things,” being typical of the services which would begin in the heavenly sanctuary when the service of the earthly sanctuary came to an end and the true High Priest had been consecrated to His heavenly ministry.

18. When did the ceremony of the cleansing of the earthly sanctuary take place?

On the day of atonement. “And this shall be a statute for ever unto you. That in the seventh month, on the tenth day of the month, you shall afflict your souls, for on that day shall the priest make an atonement for you, to cleanse you, that you may be clean from all your sins before the Lord. And this shall be an everlasting statute unto you, to make an atonement for the children of Israel for all their sins once a year.” Leviticus 16: 29-34.

19. What then must be represented by the cleansing of the heavenly sanctuary?

The world’s day of atonement closing the heavenly intercession of Christ. “And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to Him; for the hour of His judgment is come.” Revelation 14: 6, 7.

Preaching in St. George's, Bloomsbury, in 1943, the Revelation W. Pym, MA, declared, 'We can place our finger upon the very point at which we have arrived in prophetic history. 'The hour of His judgment is come.' Revelation 14: 7.'

20. What further vision of the cleansing of the heavenly sanctuary was later shown to Daniel?

"I beheld till the thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of Days did sit, whose garment was white as snow, and the hair of His head like the pure wool: His throne was like the fiery flame, and His wheels as burning fire. A fiery stream issued and came forth from before Him the judgment was set, and the books were opened." Daniel 7: 9, 10.

21. By what pronouncement will the heavenly work of judgment be concluded?

"He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still." Revelation 22:11.

22. By whom will the decisions of the judgment session be announced to the world?

"Repent you therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord. And He shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you: whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God has spoken by the mouth of all His holy prophets since the world began." Acts 3: 19-2 1.

Space will not permit here to deal further with this most important prophecy of the judgment by which the heavenly sanctuary will be cleansed, but the student is referred to the study, "When Will the Judgment Begin?"

20. The World In Prophecy

Will Christianity Survive?

1. To whom is the Book of Revelation dedicated?

"What thou sees, write in a book, and send it unto the seven churches which are in Asia; unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea." Revelation 1: 11.

"Under this emblematical representation of the seven churches of Asia, the Holy Spirit has delineated seven different states of the Christian church, which would appear in succession, extending to the coming of our Lord, and the consummation of all things." - Vitranga's "Comprehensive Commentary" (1705).

2. Which church was chosen to symbolize the pure faith of the early Christians?

"Unto the angel of the church of Ephesus write; These things said He that holds the seven stars in His right hand, who walks in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks." Revelation 2:1.

Ephesus means Mesirable," an appropriate description of the Christian believers in the apostolic age (AD 31 - 100).

3. For what virtues is the early Christian church specially commended?

"I know thy works, and thy labor, and thy patience, and how thou can not bear them which are evil." Revelation 2: 2. (See also verse 3.)

4. What tendency to apostasy, however, was already beginning to manifest itself in the first century of the Christian era?

"Nevertheless I have somewhat against thee, because thou has left thy first love. Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works." Revelation 2:4, 5.

5. What appropriate name is given to the church in the days of the Roman persecutions?

"And unto the angel of the church in Smyrna write; These things said the first and the last, which was dead, and is alive." Revelation 2: 8.

Smyrna is derived from "myrrh" and means a "sweet-smelling savor," a fitting symbol for the church which stood faithful through the fearful pagan persecution (AD 100-323).

6. How were the suffering saints encouraged?

"Fear none of those things which thou shall suffer: be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life." Revelation 2:10.

7. Under what symbol is the third period of the church's history brought to view?

"And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write; These things said He which has the sharp sword with two edges." Revelation 2: 12.

Pergamos signifies "height" or "elevation." It was the center of worship of the serpent deity Esculapius, hence "Satan's seat," and also of the worship of the Divine Emperor. It therefore appropriately symbolized the period of compromise and union of Christianity with the state which led to the church's secular "elevation" but spiritual fall (AD 323-538).

8. What new danger did the cessation of persecution bring to the church?

"But I have a few things against thee, because thou has there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumbling-block before the children of Israel, to, eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication." Revelation 2: 14.

9. Of what did the sin of Balaam consist?

He compromised himself for temporal position of honor and gain. "For I will Promote thee unto very great honor, and I will do whatsoever thou says unto me: come therefore, I pray thee, curse me this people." Numbers 22: 17. "Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Bosor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness." 2 Peter 2:15.

10. What name is chosen to describe the church of the Dark Ages?

“And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira write; These things said the Son of God, who has His eyes like unto a flame of fire, and His feet are like fine brass.” Revelation 2:18.

Thyatira means “sweet savor of labor” and “sacrifice of contrition” and typifies the period of papal persecution, the “great tribulation” of Matthew 24, during which the true church was purified by suffering while the Roman apostasy or “Jezebel” achieved dominance and power (AD 538-1798).

11. How terribly had many professing Christians departed from the faith?

“Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou suffered that woman Jezebel, which called herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce My servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols.” Revelation 2: 20.

12. What did Jezebel introduce into the worship of Israel?

Idolatrous worship. “And Ahab the son of Omri took to wife Jezebel the daughter of Ethbaal king of the Zidonians, and went and served Baal, and worshipped him.” 1 Kings 16: 30, 31.

13. How appropriately is apostate Rome symbolized by Jezebel?

Evil alliance with idolatry. “Come hither; I will show unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sits upon many waters: with whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.” Revelation 17:1, 2.

14. What savage opposition did Jezebel launch against the worshippers of the true God in the days of ancient Israel?

“For it was so, when Jezebel cut off the Prophets of the Lord, that Obadiah took an hundred prophets, and hid them by fifty in a cave, and fed them with bread and water.” 1 Kings 18:4. (See also verse 13.)

15. How was this duplicated by papal Rome?

“And I saw the woman drunken with the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs blood of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration.” Revelation 17:6. (See also Daniel 7:21, 25.)

16. What counsel does the Lord give to the Reformation church emerging from the Dark Ages?

“And unto the angel of the church in Sardis write. These things said He that has the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou has a name that thou lived, and art dead. Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found thy works perfect before God.” Revelation 3:1,2.

Sardis, meaning “that which remains,” symbolizes the Reformation church which came forth from the fiery trials of the Middle Ages to proclaim with new power the “whole counsel of God.” (AD 1798-1833).

17. To what faith are they called upon to return?

“Remember therefore how thou has received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. If therefore thou shall not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shall not know what hour I will come upon thee.” Revelation 3:3.

18. What name is given to the church of the latter days?

“And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write; I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou has a little strength, and has kept My word, and has not denied My name.” Revelation 3: 7, 8.

Philadelphia means “brotherly love” and aptly represents the love and spiritual fervor which possessed the church of the early nineteenth century as the conviction of the approaching advent of Jesus deepened (AD 1833-1844).

19. How will He reward their patience and faith?

“Because thou has kept the word of My patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth.” Revelation 3:10.

20. What blessed announcement does He make to them?

“Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou has, that no man take thy crown.” Revelation 3:11.

21. What name is given to the last period of the church?

“And unto the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write; These things said the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God.” Revelation 3:14.

Laodicea means “the judging of the people” and corresponds with the present and last age of the church’s history during which the message, “The hour of His judgment is come,” is to go forth (Revelation 14: 6, 7). This period began with the year 1844. (See study entitled, “When Will the judgment Begin?”)

22. Sad to say, what false confidence possesses many?

“Because thou says, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knows not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked.” “I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou were cold or hot. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spew thee out of My mouth.” Revelation 3: 17, 15, 16.

23. What remedy does the Lord prescribe?

“I counsel thee to buy of Me gold tried in the fire, that thou may be rich; and white raiment, that thou may be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint your eyes with eye salve, that thou may see.” Revelation 3:18.

24. Why is the admonition to the Laodicean church so urgent?

“Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear My voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with Me.” Revelation 3: 20. (See also verse 14.)

25. What high privilege will the faithful remnant eternally enjoy?

“To him that overcomes will I grant to sit with Me in My throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with My Father in His throne.” Revelation 3:21.

The Future Unsealed

1. In what further vision was the story of the church through the ages revealed to John?

“And I saw in the right hand of Him that sat on the throne a book written within and on the backside, sealed with seven seals.” Revelation 5: 1.

2. By whom was the book with the seven seals opened?

“And I beheld, and, lo, in the midst of the throne and of the four beasts, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as it had been slain. And He came and took the book out of the right hand of Him that sat upon the throne.” Revelation 5: 6, 7.

3. What did John see when the first seal was broken?

“And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals, and behold a white horse: and He that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given unto Him: and He went forth conquering, and to conquer.” Revelation 6: 1, 2.

The “white” color of the first horse represents the purity of the early church (AD 31-100). Of it, Lecky says: “There can be little doubt that for nearly two hundred years after its establishment in Europe, the Christian community exhibited a moral purity which, if it has been equaled, has never for any long period been surpassed.” - “History of European Morals,” Volume II, page ii.

4. Under what symbol is the degeneracy of the primitive church revealed?

“And when He had opened the second seal, there went out another horse that was red: and power was given to him that sat thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword.” Revelation 6: 3, 4.

This horse represents the beginnings of decline and apostasy (AD 100-323). “When, relieved from the terrors of pagan persecution, the Christians became possessed of civil influence, their animosities increased. Worldly prosperity is corruptive; and instead of those halcyon days of peace and happiness which the church promised itself from the acquisition of power, a period succeeded from which history is seen to date its degeneracy and corruption. It was a change powerfully expressed by fire color succeeding to white.” - Archdeacon Woodhouse in “Annotations on the Apocalypse,” pages 128, 129.

5. To what depths of apostasy would the church sink?

“And when he had opened the third seal, I beheld, and lo a black horse; and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand. And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say, A measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny; and see thou hurt not the oil and the wine.” Revelation 6:5, 6.

The period of the church’s history leading up to the dominance of Rome and the papal apostasy (AD 323-538). “The black color of the horse and “the proclamation that a measure of wheat should be sold, unite in pointing out to us a period when the grossest darkness and ignorance prevailed when the things of God should be sold for money, and the spirit of commercialism entered the holy of holies.” - William Cunningham in “Seals and Trumpets of the Apocalypse.”

6. Of what foul deeds would the apostate church be guilty?

“And when he had opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth beast say, Come and see. And I looked, and beheld a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.” Revelation 6: 7, 8.

The period of papal supremacy up to the beginning of the Reformation (AD 538-1517). Here we enter the darkest ages of this world’s history “when the rulers of the visible church should assume the character of malignant demons and savage beasts, and of Death himself, and should extirpate, by fire and sword, all who dared to prefer death to the sacrifice of ‘a good conscience.’” - William Cunningham in “Seals and Trumpets of the Apocalypse.”

7. What glorious company was brought to view when the fifth seal was opened?

“And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the Word of God, and for the testimony which they held.” Revelation 6: 9.

This seal covers the Reformation period up to the catastrophic event which marked the opening of the next seal (AD 1517-1755).

8. What urgent question did the martyrs ask of God?

“And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, does Thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?” Revelation 6:10.

9. How long were they bidden to wait, and what did they receive in anticipation of their final reward?

“And white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow servants also and their brethren that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.” Revelation 6:11.

10. By what would divine intervention on behalf of the church be heralded?

“And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and, Lo, there was a great earthquake.” Revelation 6: 12.

“The Lisbon earthquake which occurred on November 1, 1755, is the most notable earthquake of history.” (Nelson’s Encyclopedia.) Four million square miles of the earth’s surface shuddered under the shock, and ninety thousand lives were lost in the catastrophe.

11. What signs would quickly succeed the great earthquake?

“And the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood.” Revelation 6:12.

“May 19, 1780, is distinguished as the Dark Day. The sun rose clear but soon assumed a brassy hue. About 10 o’clock AM it became unusually dark. The darkness continued to increase till about 1 o’clock. During this time, candles were necessary, the birds disappeared and were silent, fowls went to their roost, the cocks crew as at day break, and everything bore the appearance and gloom of night. The alarm produced by the unusual aspect of the heavens was great, and tradition has preserved many anecdotes of terror.”-Edwin M. Stone in “The History of Beverly.”

12. What other remarkable heavenly phenomenon would follow?

“And the stars of heaven fell unto the earth, even as a fig tree casts her untimely figs, when she is shaken of a mighty wind.” Revelation 6:13. (See also Isaiah 13:10; Amos 8:9; Ezekiel 32:7; Joe1 2:10,30,31; 3:15; Mark 13:24, 25.)

“The attention of astronomers was particularly directed to the extraordinary shower of meteors which occurred on the morning of November 13, 1833. I had the good fortune to witness these grand celestial fireworks. Probably no celestial phenomenon has ever occurred in this country since its settlement, which was viewed with such admiration and delight by one class of spectators, or with so much astonishment and fear by another class. Many others thought the last great day had come.”-Denison Olmsted in “Letters on Astronomy,” pages 346-348.

“In the shower of November 12-13, 1833, stars fell like flakes of snow, more than 240,000, it was estimated, in nine hours, some mere points of light, others as large as the moon’s diameter. All seemed to come from the region of the constellation Leo. Hence the name Leonids has been applied to them. Astronomers predicted a repetition of the star shower, November 13, 1866, and it occurred on time. In 1899 only a few meteors were observed. This year [1932] the watchers of the north-eastern sky were again unrewarded, except for four or five scattered meteors per hour.” -The Christian Advocate.

13. By what further convulsions will the advent of Christ be accompanied?

“And the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together; and every mountain and island were moved out of their places.” Revelation 6:14. (See also verses 15-17.)

14. What silence will fall upon the courts of heaven in history’s last hour?

“And when He had opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven about the space of half an hour.” Revelation 8: 1.

Dissolving Empires

1. BY what martial symbols are the political upheavals of the Christian era portrayed?

“And I saw the seven angels which stood before God; and to them were given seven trumpets.” Revelation 8: 2.

2. Why are trumpets chosen for this vision?

“I cannot hold my peace, because thou has heard, O my soul, the sound of the trumpet, the alarm of war.” Jeremiah 4: 19.

3. In what graphic way does one of the historians of Rome refer to the danger which threatened the empire? “The trumpets of. Internal disaster were sounding.” -Ammanius Marcellinus, “History,” Book 29, chap. 1.

4. By what alarm were the decadent Roman arms first aroused?

“The first angel sounded, and there followed hail and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the earth: and the third part of trees was burnt up, and all green grass was burnt up.” Revelation 8: 7.

“The invasion of Alaric, king of the Goths, AD 410.”-Dr. Albert Barnes.

“The Gothic nation was in arms at the first sound of the trumpet.” - Gibbon in “The Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire.”

“The consuming flames of war spread over the greater part of the seventeen provinces of Gaul. In the pillage and fire of Rome the flames consumed many public and private buildings and the ruins of a palace remained (after a century and a half) a stately monument of the Gothic conflagration.” - Claudion.

“The world’s glorious sun has been extinguished,” declared Jerome when Rome was taken by Alaric, the Goth.

5. Before the empire had recovered from these staggering blows, what new catastrophe was struck from the sea?

“And the second angel sounded, and as it were a great mountain burning with fire was cast into the sea: and the third part of the sea became blood. And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life died; and the third part of the ships were destroyed.” Revelation 8: 8, 9.

Genseric, the Vandal leader, “cast his eyes toward the sea; and resolved to create a naval power.” (Gibbon in “The Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire.”) His ravages in Africa and Italy occupied the period AD 428-468. The sack of Rome took place in AD 455.

6. What new continental onslaught next overflowed into the disintegrating empire?

“And the third angel sounded, and there fell a great star from heaven, burning as it were a lamp, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters; and the name of the star is called Wormwood. And the third part of the waters became wormwood; and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.” Revelation 8: 10, 11.

“The invasion of Attila, king of the Huns, ‘the scourge of God,’ AD 447.” (Dr. Albert Barnes.) His greatest battle was fought in Gaul at Chalons in AD 451.

7. By what power was the Western Empire finally disrupted?

“And the fourth angel sounded, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the stars. So as the third part of them was darkened, and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise.” Revelation 8: 12.

“The final conquest of Rome” by “Odoacer, king of the Heruli, who assumed the title of King of Italy, AD 476.” - Dr. Albert Barnes. Through the centuries nation has overthrown nation by force of arms. One day Christ will take the field and bring all conflict to an end.

8. With the collapse of Western Rome, what new woes began to fall upon the Eastern Empire?

“And I beheld, and heard an angel flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, Woe, woe, woe, to the inhabitants of the earth by reason of the other voices of the trumpet of the three angels, which are yet to sound!” Revelation 8: 13.

9. From where would Eastern Rome be attacked?

“And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit. And he opened the bottomless pit; and there arose a smoke out of the Pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of the Pit.” Revelation 9:1, 2.

The fifth and sixth trumpets “so evidently refer to the Saracens and Turks, that there are scarcely two opinions on the subject.” - J. Bicheno, MA in “Signs of the Times.”

“There is scarcely so uniform an agreement among interpreters concerning any other part of the Apocalypse as respecting the application of the fifth and sixth trumpets to the Saracens and Turks.”-Alexander Keith.

In language closely parallel to that of prophecy, Professor Davis writes: “Five years later the cloud of Saracenic invasion rolled northward from the Arabian deserts.” – “Short History of the Near East.” page 32.

10. What symbol is used to describe the Arab hordes?

“And there came out of the smoke locusts upon the earth: and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power.” Revelation 9:3. (Read also verses 7-11.)

Sir William Muir also uses a prophetic symbol to describe the Arab invaders: “Onward and still onward, like swarms from the hive, or flights of locusts darkening the land, tribe after tribe issued forth, and hastening northward, spread in great masses to the east and to the west.” – “The Caliphate,” page 44.

Against them the eight futile crusades of the eleventh to the thirteenth century were launched for the liberation of the Holy Land from their thrall.

11. For how long was the fall of the Eastern Empire delayed?

“And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented five months: and their torment was as the torment of a scorpion, when he strikes a man.” Revelation 9: 5.

“Othman,” who gave his name to the Ottoman Empire, “first entered the territory of Nicomedia on the 27th day of July, 1299,” according to the historian Gibbon, where after followed a period of “torment” for the Eastern emperors, none daring to assume the Imperial throne without the consent of the Ottoman power. Exactly 150 years later (five prophetic months, reckoning a day for a year), in 1449, John Paixologus, the last emperor of the East died, and four years later Constantinople was occupied by the Turks.

12. What second tide would flow from the same direction?

“And the sixth angel sounded, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar which is before God, saying to the sixth angel which had the trumpet, Loose the four angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates.” Revelation 9: 13, 14.

“By loosing the angels who had rule of the great river Euphrates, is signified the letting out of the east kings, that is, the Turks, out of Scythia, Tartary, Persia, and Arabia, by whom the third part of Christendom shall be destroyed, as we see it this day has come to pass.” – “Acts and Monuments,” Volume IV, page 102.

13. How numerous would the invading hordes be and of what would they be largely comprised?

“And the number of the armies of the horsemen was twice ten thousand times ten thousand: I heard the number of them.” Revelation 9: 16 (RV).

“The second woe, which even now, alas! Presses on us, calls forth the tetrachs of the Turks, with most numerous cavalry from the Euphrates, where they had long been stayed, against the Roman world.”-Joseph Mede in “Works,” page 471.

14. With what weapon was devastation spread in their path?

“And out of their mouths issued fire and smoke and brimstone. By these three was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the brimstone, which issued out of their mouths. For their power is in their mouth, and in their tails: for their tails were like unto serpents, and had heads, and with them they do hurt.” Revelation 9: 17-19.

“The fall of Constantinople, was the first event of cardinal historical importance to be wrought by the primary weapon of modern warfare, gunpowder. But for the artillery, the siege of 1453 must have failed.” - Robert Byron in “The Byzantine Achievement,” pages 290, 291.

15. For how long would the Ottoman power endure?

“And the four angels were loosed, which were prepared for an hour, and a day, and a month, and a year, for to slay the third part of men.” Revelation 9: 15.

This remarkable time period corresponds, on the basis of a day for a year, to 391 years and fifteen days. From July 27, 1449, the end of the “five months” of verse 10, this period extends to August 11, 1840, the precise date of the note from the ambassadors of four European powers to Mehemet Ali, which finally terminated the independence of the Ottoman Government and inaugurated the period of dependence, during which Turkey became known as the “Sick man of Europe.”

In 1838, two years before the fulfillment of this prophecy, Josiah Litch, a diligent student of prophecy, widely publicized his belief that Turkey would lose her independence on August 11, 1840. It is recorded that as a result of the striking fulfillment of the prophecy, great numbers of infidels were converted.

16. To what period in history does the seventh trumpet bring us?

“But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he is about to sound, then is finished the mystery of God, according to the good tidings which He declared to His servants the prophets.” Revelation 10: 7 (RV).

The “finishing” of the work of God includes the completion of the gospel witness to all the earth (Matthew 24:14), the finishing of the work of the investigative judgment in heaven (Revelation 14:6, 7), and the divine intervention which will bring to an end all earthly power and establish the everlasting kingdom of God.

17. Who will take the field on the sounding of the seventh angel for the completion of the divine purpose?

“And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of His Christ; and He shall reign for ever and ever.” Revelation 11:15.

The anthem sung by the victorious remnant before God’s throne will be as heartfelt as if is expressive, for it will arise from an experience of individual victory gained through Jesus Christ.

Through Tribulation to Triumph

1. UNDER what new symbol is the church of God through the ages portrayed?

“And there appeared a great wonder in heaven: a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars.” Revelation 12: 1.

2. Why is a woman an appropriate symbol for the church?

a. Her beauty fitly represents the glory of the church. “I have likened the daughter of Zion to a comely and delicate woman.” Jeremiah 6:2.

b. Her purity represents the righteousness of the saints. “For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.” 2 Corinthians 11:2.

c. The marriage relationship represents the union of believers with Christ. “For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and He is the Savior of the body.” Ephesians 5:23.

3. Through what travail is the woman seen to be passing?

“And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron.” Revelation 12:5.

4. Who is the Seed to which she is to give birth?

“And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her Seed; It shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise His heel.” Genesis 3:15. “Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He said not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy Seed, which is Christ.” Galatians 3: 16.

5. By whom is the woman attacked?

“And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten, horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born.” Revelation 12: 3, 4.

6. Whom does the dragon primarily represent, and whence came he?

“And there was war in heaven: and the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceived the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.” Revelation 12: 7-9.

The dragon primarily symbolizes Satan, the archenemy of Christ and His people. It is used also of powers through whom Satan works his will. In the days of Christ’s earthly life, pagan Rome constituted the “dragon.” Later, papal Rome became the instrument of Satan’s nefarious designs.

7. Did Satan succeed in frustrating the birth of the Christ child?

“And she brought forth a man Child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron.” Revelation 12:5.

8. How was Jesus delivered from the dragon immediately after His birth?

“And when they [the wise men] were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young Child and His mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word. For Herod will seek the young Child to destroy Him.” Matthew 2:13.

9. When did Satan feel that he really had Christ in his power?

“Then Jesus said this is your hour, and the power of darkness.” “And when they were come to the place, which is called Calvary, there they crucified Him, and the malefactors, one on the right hand, and the other on the left.” Luke 22:52, 53; 23:33.

10. How signally was Christ delivered from death and the tomb?

“And her Child was caught up unto God, and to His throne.” Revelation 12:5.

Satan failed to destroy the infant Jesus (Matthew 2:13), and he likewise failed to hold Him in the tomb after the crucifixion, The ascension signalized Satan’s utter defeat.

11. Where did the woman find refuge from the wrath of the dragon?

“And the woman fled into the wilderness.” Revelation 12:6. “And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness.” Verse 14.

A persecuting official, Lotivois, said: “They pretend to meet in the desert; why not take them at their word, and make the Cevennes a desert?” The period of the church’s exile described here as “a time, and times, and half a time” corresponds to the 1260 years of papal supremacy, AD 538-1798. (See study entitled, “Antichrist Unmasked,” page 580.)

12. On what earlier occasion is God’s protection of His people represented in this way?

“You have seen what I did unto the Egyptians, and how I bare you on eagles’ wings, and brought you unto Myself.” Exodus 19:4.

13. What new attempt does the dragon make to destroy the woman?

“And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood.” Revelation 12: 15.

14. How was the dragon’s plan against the persecuted church frustrated?

“And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth.” Revelation 12:16. (See also Isaiah 59:19.)

The flood of persecution was stemmed by the association of many of the European princes with the Reformation movement, and also by the opening up of the New World as a refuge for the oppressed peoples of Europe.

15. How long did the wilderness experience of the church last?

“And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she has a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred, and threescore days.” “A time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent.” Revelation 12:6, 14. “And power was given unto him to continue forty and two months.” Revelation 13:5. (Compare Daniel 7:25.)

In the study entitled “Antichrist Unmasked,” page 580, this period was conclusively shown to be 1260 literal years, beginning in AD 538 and ending in AD 1798.

“Thus was the primitive church preserved in the Alps to the very period of the Reformation. The Vaudois are the chain which unites the Reformed churches with the first disciples of our Savior. It is in vain that popery, renegade from evangelical verities, has a thousand times sought to break this chain; it resists all her efforts. Empires have crumbled, dynasties have fallen, but this chain of scriptural testimony has not been broken, because its strength is not from men, but from God.” - Muston in “The Israel of the Alps,” Volume I, Page 29.

16. Repeatedly baffled, against whom does the dragon finally vent his wrath?

“And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed.” Revelation 12: 17.

17. By what distinguishing marks may the remnant church of the last days be identified?

Faith and obedience to the commandments of God. “Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.” Revelation 14: 12.

18. With whom will be the final victory?

“These [the deluded kings of the earth] shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for He is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with Him are called, and chosen, and faithful.” Revelation 17: 14.

The Great Conspiracy

1. WHAT strange and terrible beast was John shown in vision?

“And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy. And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion.” Revelation 13: 1, 2.

2. Of what is this beast a composite form?

“And four great beasts came up from the sea, diverse one from another. The first was like a lion, and had eagle’s wings. And behold another beast, a second, like to a bear. After this I beheld, and lo, another, like a leopard. And behold a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly; it had ten horns.” Daniel 7:3-7.

The first beast of Revelation thirteen corresponds first to pagan Rome, which gathered into its empire the territories of all three previous world powers symbolized by the lion, bear, and leopard, and secondly to papal Rome, by which the pagan empire was superseded.

3. How much of the power of pagan Rome did papal Rome inherit?

“And the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority.” Revelation 13:2.

4. How are the two aspects of the Roman beast separated in a later vision?

“So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet colored beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns.” Revelation 17:3.

Here the scarlet-colored beast represents pagan Rome, while the dissolute woman symbolizes papal Rome. “The power of the Caesars lived again in the universal dominion of the popes.”-H. Grattan Guinness in “Romanism and the Reformation,” page 152.

5. What other features conclusively identify the woman of Revelation 17 and the first beast of Revelation 13 as papal Rome?

a. Luxury and idolatry. “And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet color, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication.” Revelation 17: 4.

b. Blasphemy. “And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies. And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme His name, and His tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.” Revelation 13:5, 6. (See also Revelation 17:3, and compare Daniel 7:25.)

c. Persecution of the saints. “And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them.” Revelation 13:

7. “And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration.” Revelation 17:6. (Compare Daniel 7: 25.)

6. How are we, in still another way, helped to identify the beast and its rider?

“Here is wisdom. Let him that has understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.” Revelation 13:18.

It is significant that the Douay (Catholic) Bible comments on this verse: “Six hundred sixty-six. The numeral letters of his name shall make up this number.” Actually one of the titles of the pope, “Vicarius Filii Dei” or “Vicar of the Son of God,” adds up to exactly 666.

Roman Letter Numerical Value

V	5
I	1
C	100
A	0
R	0
I	1
U	5
S	0
F	0
I	1
L	50
I	1
I	1
D	500
E	0
I	1

7. How long was the authority of the Papacy to continue?

“And power was given unto him to continue forty and two months.” Revelation 13:5. (Compare Daniel 7:25; Revelation 12: 6, 14.)

This period, elsewhere designated 1260 days and “a time, and times, and half a time,” has been shown to reach from AD 538, when papal power became supreme, to AD 1798, when it was almost brought to naught. (See study, “Antichrist Unmasked,” page 580.)

8. By what was it almost annihilated?

“And I saw one of his heads as it we’re wounded to death.” Revelation 13: 3.

“In 1798, the French republican army, under General Berthier took possession of the city of Rome, and entirely superseded the whole papal power. This was a deadly wound.” - Dr. Adam Clarke. (See also notes in the study, “Antichrist Unmasked,” page 580.)

9. What spectacular recovery, however, would the Papacy make?

“And his deadly wound was healed.” Revelation 13: 3.

“Popery cannot come back,” wrote Carlyle, “any more than paganism can.” “If Carlyle had been permitted to peer into the future for a century,” comments Bertrand Weaver in America and see the ceaseless procession of rulers, government ministers and

ambassadors who, about 1940, would have begged audience with the occupant of the papal chair, he would have torn the above piece of rhetoric into such small bits that not even an inquisitive housemaid would have discovered this evidence of his warped mind.

“Today, the Papacy is the cynosure of the world. No event in the eventful epoch has attached to it the importance that is universally attached to a papal election. Never has the first encyclical of a pope been awaited as avidly by all nations as that of the twelfth Pius. No power in the world is more influential in working toward peace than the Holy See. Those encyclicals that treat of the moral aspects of the economic order exercise an ever-growing influence upon legislative decisions. The working classes now see that their greatest protector is the Father of Christendom.”

10. How completely is its prestige to be recovered in the latter days?

a. Political ascendancy. “And the ten horns which thou saw are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the beast. These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast.” Revelation 17:12,13. (See also verse 17.)

b. Economic domination. “And he caused all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads. And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.” Revelation 13:16,17.

c. Spiritual supremacy. “And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.” Revelation 13:8. (See also verse 15.)

For evidence of these developments, see next study on “America and World Destiny.”

11. Against whom will the revived Papacy and its followers pit their strength? “These shall make war with the Lamb.” Revelation 17: 14.

12. What will be the outcome of the final conflict?

“And the Lamb shall overcome them.” Revelation 17: 14.

13. What will be the fate of the beast and those who give their allegiance to it?

“And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.” Revelation 19: 20. (See also Revelation 18:6,7; 20, 21, and compare Daniel 7:11)

America and World Destiny

1. ABOUT the time of the wounding of the papal head what new power does the revelator behold coming on to the stage of history?

“And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth.” Revelation 13:11.

Of this symbol John Wesley wrote in 1754: “He is not yet come, though he cannot be far off; for he is to appear at the end of the forty-two months of the first beast.” – “Notes on Revelation 13.”

Wesley was absolutely right in this interpretation, for not long after he wrote, the power for which he was looking began to take shape in the United States of America. The National Constitution of the United States was adopted in 1789, just nine years before the wounding of the papal beast.

2. What notable feature of the new beast does the prophet mention?

“And he had two horns like a lamb.” Revelation 13:11.

These two horns represent the basic principles of political and religious freedom upon which the new American nation was founded. “The remarks I have made will suffice to display the character of Anglo-American civilization in its true light. It is the result (and this should be constantly present to the mind) of two distinct elements, which in other places have been in frequent hostility, but which in America have been admirably incorporated and combined with one another. I allude to the spirit of religion and the spirit of liberty.” - De Tocqueville in “Democracy in America,” Volume 1, page 42.

3. In course of time how would this lamb-like beast begin to belie its appearance?

“And he spoke as a dragon.” Revelation 13:11.

As a result of later immigration and propaganda, the United States, which in its beginnings was staunchly Protestant, today has nearly two and a half times as many Roman Catholics as the largest Protestant denomination, the Baptist. According to Bertrand Russell, America is likely to be “predominantly Catholic within fifty years.

4. How completely is America to become the instrument of papal machinations?

“And he exercises all the power of the first beast before him.” Revelation 13:12.

“There are many streams of influence at work, but perhaps the most important is that the center of gravity of the Roman church is shifting rapidly from the Old World to the New. The future of Rome seems to lie in America rather than in Europe. This is true both as to members and to wealth.” - Canon Alan Simpson in the Church Times.

5. To what political eminence will the Papacy be restored in the latter days?

“And the ten horns which thou saw are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet, but receive power as kings one hour with the beast. These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast.” “For God has put in their hearts to fulfil His will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled.” Revelation 17:12,13,17.

Already there are many evidences of a desire on the part of statesmen and leaders of both the Old World and the New to invoke the aid of the Papacy in the establishment of international harmony.

“What the world needs is respect for some central authority which will be free from suspicion. The pope might be the arbitrator between the nations.” Judge of Supreme Court, New York.

“Men whose confident ideals lie buried at Geneva are discovering a tiny flicker of hope burning in that Rome which is so much more than imperial Rome - whether of yesterday or today. Time will show whether that flicker will grow into flame.” - Editorial in New English Weekly.

That the spokesmen of Rome are making the most of this growing prestige is evident from the following recent pronouncements:

“The one thing standing in the present collapse and chaotic ruin of our civilization is the central institution which made that civilization, by which that civilization has lived, and in separation from which it has increasingly weakened and declined. This central institution in Europe is the Catholic Church.” -Hilaire Belloc in the “Universe.”

“The chief hope of the world today is the Catholic Church, the only authority on law and justice left to us.” - Mgr. Fulton J. Sheen of the Catholic University of America, quoted in the “Universe.”

6. In what other sphere of life beside the political, will the inspiration of the Papacy become paramount, largely through the support of America?

“And he causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads. And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.” Revelation 13: 16, 17.

The Papacy is vitally interested in economic reconstruction and, in the great social encyclicals *Rerum Novarum* and *Quadragesimo Anno*, has her own proposals to offer as an alternative to exaggerated capitalism on the one hand and extreme communism on the other. These are making an increasing appeal among economists of many nations.

“We may take courage from the reception accorded to *Rerum Novarum* and *Quadragesimo Anno*. Here is sound Catholic social doctrine, readily accepted-as we have seen lately-by men of goodwill. The jubilee of Leo XIII’s great encyclical, *Rerum Novarum* [June, 1941], should inspire us with confidence that in God’s good time the reordering of the world will be secured by the return of mankind to the reign of reason and faith.” Cardinal Hinsley in a Pastoral Letter.

7. Having achieved world leadership in the political and economic spheres, what ambition will Rome finally seek to realize through the instrumentality of the United States?

“And caused the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.” Revelation 13: 12.

“It was the disruption of Catholic unity in Europe which let in all the evils from the extreme of which we now suffer and are therefore in peril of dissolution. Briefly we must begin by aiming at the conversion of society, failing which no scheme of stable economic freedom will stand.” - Hilaire Belloc in “Crisis of Our Civilization,” page 224.

“It is only by united and concerted action that we can foster great schemes. For that reason, we are impelled by charity to invite here the co-operation of those whom the Mother Church mourns as separated from her communion.” - Pope Pius XII in a recent encyclical to the Bishops of the United States.

8. In what other way will America also foster the revival of the Papacy?

“Saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed.” Revelation 13:14,15.

An “image to the beast” can have no other meaning than the destruction of true Protestantism, the exaltation of Catholic principles in church and state, and their enforcement under the severest penalties.

In this connection it is significant to note the assertion of Father J. A. Hyland in “Rome and the White House,” “In its framework the Constitution of the United States is modeled on that of the Constitutions of the Dominican and Jesuit Order.”

9. Upon what common ground may the schism between Protestantism and Catholicism be bridged?

Sunday observance. “Sunday observance bears a most intimate relation to all the ideals for which our Christian civilization stands. I am absolutely convinced that Sunday observance will again be returned to as a definite necessity.” - Roger W. Babson in the “Religious Digest.”

“If we could stop the rush of life; if we could still its clamor of excitement. If we could get men to know that Christ is a fact, and that eternity is more sure than tomorrow morning. If we could get them to lay hold of these values, intellectually, morally, personally-if we could do these things, we would have saved civilization. The open doorway into all these things is the Christian observance of the Lord’s day. If I were a Christian statesman, I would be more interested in a Christian observance of the Lord’s day than in battleships.” - Editorial in the Christian Advocate.

10. What last appeal will God make to those who are being drawn into the fold of Antichrist?

“And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, My people, that you be not partakers of her sins, and that you receive not of her plagues.” Revelation 18: 4.

11. What will be the particular marks which will distinguish the worshippers of God from the worshippers of the beast in the last days?

“Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.” Revelation 14:12.

Standing apart from all compromise with Rome, the last-day church will hold fast to the “faith once delivered unto the saints,” and obedience to all the “commandments of God”—including the observance of the seventh-day Sabbath of the fourth commandment rather than the unbiblical and Rome-inspired Sunday.

12. Against whom will the anti Christian confederation, dominated by the Papacy, ultimately throw its power?

“These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for He is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with Him are called, and chosen, and faithful.” Revelation 17: 14.

13. How will the faithful remnant be rewarded?

“And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire: and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, and over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glass, having the harps of God.” Revelation 15: 2.

Heaven’s Last Appeal

1. What was Paul’s message to his day and generation?

“And as he reasoned of righteousness, temperance, and judgment to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Go thy way for this time; when I have a convenient season I will call for thee.” Acts 24: 25.

2. By what message will the warning of-judgment to come” be superseded just before the Lord returns?

“And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people, saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to Him. For the hour of His judgment is come.” Revelation 14: 6, 7.

3. To what judgment does this refer?

“I beheld till the thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of Days did sit. The judgment was set, and the books were opened.” Daniel 7: 9, 10.

This judgment is not the executive judgment upon the earth at the end of time, but an investigative judgment in heaven by which the former must obviously be preceded. (See study, “When Will the judgment Begin?”)

4. What prophecy provides definite information as to the time when this message was to go forth?

“Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleansed.” Daniel 8:14.

In the study, “Heaven’s Zero Hour,” it is shown that this period began in 457 BC and ended in 1844, the latter date thus marking the beginning of the heavenly judgment session.

5. In what other vision was John shown the commissioning of God’s last-day witnesses to carry the judgment-hour message to the world?

“And I saw another angel come down from heaven, and he had in his hand a little book open: and he set his right foot upon the sea, and his left foot on the earth, and cried with a loud voice, as when a lion roars.” Revelation 10: 1-3.

6. What book was due to be opened and understood in the last days of earth’s history?

“But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased.” Daniel 12: 4.

7. Was the book opened, and did the angel announcing the hour of judgment begin to sound at the appointed time?

Yes, the message came exactly on time.

In the early decades of the nineteenth century, as if by an unseen finger, the attention of Bible students in many lands was directed to this very prophecy, and they began to proclaim mightily, “The hour of His judgment is come.”

The message had been there in the Bible ever since John wrote it down on Patmos, and the prophecy of the cleansing of the sanctuary had been in the Old Testament for centuries before that. They had been read and at times commented upon, but never before in history had preachers of the gospel throughout the world simultaneously been drawn to a study and proclamation of their solemn warning. No other conclusion can be reached than that the interpretation of the time period was correct, and that God’s Spirit was leading these hundreds of preachers in all parts of the earth to proclaim that the time of the judgment was at hand.

8. For what response does the judgment-hour message call?

“Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to Him; for the hour of His judgment is come: and worship Him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.” Revelation 14: 7.

9. What are the special characteristics of the remnant called out by the judgment-hour message?

“Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.” Revelation 14:12.

10. In which commandment is the Creator supremely recognized?

“Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy, for in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day, and hallowed it.” Exodus 20:8-11.

11. Has the proclamation of this message called out a people answering to John’s description?

Yes, it surely has.

The announcement of the judgment led Christians to look into the second apartment of the heavenly sanctuary, where the judgment was convening. As they beheld the sacred law they realized with new force that this standard of judgment was the unalterable criterion of holy living. Then, as they restudied the sacred law, they saw how it had been perverted through the centuries,

especially by the suppression of the true Sabbath and the exaltation of a counterfeit. So by faith they determined to return to a keeping of the true Sabbath of the fourth commandment. and believers began to multiply, of whom it could truly be said, "Here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus."

During the years that have passed, the company has grown and grown, so that today there are hundreds of thousands of Sabbath-keeping Christian, people witnessing to the fulfillment of the prophecy that "The hour of His judgment is come," and looking for the return of their Lord to receive them into His everlasting kingdom.

Marks of the Remnant

1. What angelic warning was quickly to succeed the first angel's message?

"And there followed another angel, saying, Babylon is fallen is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication." Revelation 14: 8.

2. What apostate power is symbolized by "Babylon"?

"I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet colored beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH." Revelation 17: 3-5.

"Babylon was the emblem of all that was haughty and oppressive, and especially of all that persecuted the church of God. Rome [pagan], like Babylon of old, was the most formidable power with which the church had to contend. Yet it is not ... Rome considered as pagan that is here meant, but Rome considered as _the prolongation of the ancient power in papal form."-Dr. Albert Barnes.

"The church which has its seat and headquarters on the seven hills of Rome, might most appropriately be-called 'Babylon,' inasmuch as it is the chief seat of idolatry under the New Testament, as the ancient Babylon was the chief, seat of idolatry under the Old." - Alexander Hislop in "The Two Babylons," page 2.

3. In what particular respects has Rome fallen away from the truth of God?

a. Fall from the truth into apostasy. "Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition." 2 Thessalonians 2: 3.

b. Defection from loyalty to God. "Who opposes and exalted himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sits in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God." 2 Thessalonians 2: 4.

c. Tampering with the law of God. "And he shall speak great words against the Most High, and think to change times and laws [literally "the law"]." Daniel 7: 2 5.

d. Union with political power. "So he carried me away in the Spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman [papal Rome] sit upon a scarlet colored beast [pagan Rome] full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns." Revelation 17:3.

e. Hatred of the true church. "And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration." Revelation 17:6. (See also Daniel 7:25.)

"I ask those of you who have read the history of the last eighteen centuries, Did not Rome Christian become a harlot? Did not papal Rome ally itself with the kings of the earth? Did it not glorify itself to be as a queen, and call itself the mistress of the world? Did it not ride upon the body of the beast and govern its actions for centuries? Did not papal Rome array itself in purple and scarlet, and deck itself -with gold and precious stones and pearls? Is not this its allure still?" - H. Grattan Guinness, DD, in "Romanism and the Reformation."

4. Who are the daughters of modern Babylon, and how do they share her iniquities?

The Protestant churches which have ceased to "protest" and are seeking reunion again with Rome " the mother and mistress of all the churches," and are following her apostate faith and practices.

"New dangers and new trials within now threaten and afflict the Protestant churches, by the defection of some of their own ministers from the Reformation: certain clergymen of the English and Irish Episcopal churches having openly renounced the testimony of the Reformers against, papal Rome from the prophetic Scriptures. We do charge them with apostasy to such an extent as to have fallen from the character of the witnesses of God against papal Rome, by denying the true sense of the prophetic denunciations against that church and her head, the pope. And, therefore, we do affirm, that they have also fallen from the true name of Protestant." - William Cunninghame in the preface to "The Church of Rome the Apostasy," page 13.

5. In what ways will the daughters follow in the steps of their apostate mother?

a. By making an image to her. "And deceived them that, dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast. Saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as-would not worship the image of the beast should be killed." Revelation 13:14,15.

b. By accepting her mark. "And he caused all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads." Revelation 13:16.

The "image to the beast" is the result of abandonment of the Protestant principles of civil and religious freedom and the remaking of the Protestant churches after the pattern of Rome (see study, "America and World Destiny," page 633). While the "mark of the beast" constitutes the features which distinguish the apostate church from the true church of God. (See study, "The Two Seals.")

“An astonishing thing is taking place right here in my store,” declared a dealer in religious goods not long ago. “A few years ago I used to sell candles, incense, and embroidered chasubles to Roman Catholic priests. Protestants would pause briefly before my window, glance at it disapprovingly, and then walk away. But what a change today! That gentleman with the clerical collar and black rabat who has just left the store is a Lutheran. He bought a whole carton of pure beeswax candles, a pound of Jerusalem incense, and there is a richly embroidered green cope in the glass case upstairs that always catches his eye. Episcopalians not only buy beautiful prayer-books, but lately they are buying rosaries and even plaster images of the Blessed Virgin. A Methodist parson, also dressed in clericals, came in last week and bought a brass cross for his altar. I sold a pair of seven-branched floor candlesticks to a Presbyterian church a month ago, and a processional crucifix and a censer to a Lutheran parish. Nowadays when a man in clericals comes in, he may be a Roman Catholic priest, or an Episcopalian, or a Lutheran, or even a Methodist or a Presbyterian.” - F. R. Webber, in the Christian Century.

6. With what solemn warning does a third angel supplement the message of the second angel?

“And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand, the same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of His indignation.” Revelation 14: 9, 10.

7. In what other way is Heaven’s last appeal expressed?

“And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, My people, that you be not partakers of her sins, and that you receive not of her plagues.”

“Let your mind come free of the sectarianism which would bind you to a dead church of one denomination rather than release you to living vital worship with a congregation of another order. Many are for a time obliged to attend services which do not satisfy their spiritual needs, but there comes, to most, the hour of possible release. Seize it courageously, and act fearlessly, remembering the word of Christ: Let the dead bury their dead. Follow thou, Me.” - Misses Cable and French in “Toward Spiritual Maturity.”

8. With what appeal to ancient Babylon does this last call correspond?

“Flee out of the midst of Babylon, and deliver every man his soul: be not cut off in her iniquity; for this is the time of the Lord’s vengeance; He will render unto her a recompense.” Jeremiah 51: 6.

9. How are those who refuse to worship the beast described?

“Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.” Revelation 14:12.

10. By what means does God distinguish His own?

“And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads.” Revelation 7:2, 3.

11. What record is kept of those who refuse to worship the beast?

“And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him [the beast], whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.” Revelation 15: 8.

12. What trials will those who refuse to make obeisance to the beast be called upon to endure?

“And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the, remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.” Revelation 12: 17.

13. What remembrance does God cherish of those who pay for their witness by their blood?

“And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto-me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: yes, said the Spirit, that they may rest from their labors; and their works do follow them.” Revelation 14:1, 3.

14. How suddenly will modern Babylon’s judgment come?

“Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine. For in one hour so great riches is come to naught.” Revelation 18: 8-17. (Compare Isaiah 13: 19.)

15. How irrevocable will it be?

“And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all.” Revelation 18: 21. (See also verse 20.)

16. What similar fate will befall all who associate in her idolatries?

“And the smoke of their torment ascended up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever received the mark of his name.” Revelation 14:11.

17. Where will the victory of the remnant be celebrated?

“And I, saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire: and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, and over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glass, having the harps of God.” Revelation 15: 2. Passing over the homes of the Israelites sealed with the blood of the Passover sacrifice the angel of death visits the household of Pharaoh.

The Two Seals

1. BEFORE God poured out His judgment upon Egypt, how were the children of Israel separated from the Egyptians?

“And they shall take of the blood [of the Passover sacrifice], and strike it on the two side posts and on the upper door-post of the houses. And the blood shall be to You for a token: and when I see the blood, I will pass over you, and the plague shall not be upon you to destroy you, when I smite the land of Egypt.” Exodus 12:7-13.

2. What vivid picture have we also of a heavenly sealing work in the days of captivity?

“And he called to the man clothed with linen, which had the writer’s ink horn by his side. And the Lord said unto him, Go through the midst of the city, through the midst of Jerusalem, and set a mark upon the foreheads of the men that sigh and that cry for all the abominations that be done in the midst thereof.” Ezekiel 9:3, 4.

3. Prior to the coming of Christ in judgment, what final sealing work will be carried out?

“And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads.” Revelation 7:2,3.

4. What is the essential nature of this seal?

The Spirit. “In whom also after that you believed, you were sealed with that Holy Spirit of Promise, which is the earnest of our inheritance.” Ephesians 1:13, 14. (See also Ephesians 4: 3 0.)

5. By what outward manifestation will the saints give evidence of the invisible spiritual seal upon their hearts?

“Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.” Revelation 14:12.

Says Dr. Albert Barnes concerning the seal of God: “It would be something that would be conspicuous or prominent. It would not be merely some internal sealing, or some designation by which they would be known to themselves and to God.”

6. What does the observance of God’s law thus become? “Bind up the testimony, seal the law among My disciples.” Isaiah 8:16.

7. Which commandment is in a special sense the seal of the law?

“Moreover also I gave them My Sabbaths, to be a sign between Me and them, that they might know that I am the Lord that sanctify them.” Ezekiel 20:12. (See also Exodus 31:13.)

Again to quote Dr. Barnes on the seal: “It would be natural to suppose that the name of the living God would be engraved on it; so that name would appear on anyone to whom it might be affixed.” The Sabbath is the one commandment in the law in which the name of God is mentioned. Hence it is more than any other commandment the “seal” of the law.

8. In contrast with the saints of the last days, what mark will the wicked bear?

“And he caused all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads.” Revelation 13: 16. (See also Revelation 14: 9.)

9. Of what will the mark of the beast be a counterfeit?

Of the Spirit of God. “And every spirit that confessed not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of Antichrist, whereof you have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.” 1 John 4:3.

10. How will this counterfeit spirit in the heart influence the outward conduct of the wicked? “The Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with His mighty angels, in flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of -our Lord Jesus Christ.” 2 Thessalonians 1:7,8.

11. What counterfeit law will this spirit of Antichrist seek to impose upon men?

‘And he shall speak great words against the Most High, and shall wear out the saints of the Most High, and think to change times and laws’ (literally the law). Daniel 7: 25.

12. What counterfeit Sabbath has Antichrist set up in opposition to the Sabbath of the law of God?

Sunday, the first day of the week, in place of the seventh day, the Sabbath of the fourth commandment and the seal of the law of God. (See study, “How Was the Sabbath Changed?”)

13. When the sealing of the people of God is completed, what decree will go forth?

“He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.” Revelation 22:11.

14. What will then be poured out?

“And, I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvelous, seven angels having the seven last plagues; for in them is filled up the wrath of God.” Revelation 15:1.

15. What last appeal is now offered to all?

“And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, My people, that you be not partakers of her sins, and that you receive not of her plagues.” Revelation 18:4. (See also 2 Timothy 2:19.) -

When the Storm Breaks

1. WHEN God’s patience with Pharaoh was exhausted, what terrible judgments were poured out upon Egypt?

The ten plagues. (Read Exodus 7: 1 to 10: 29.)

2. In what will His wrath against a wicked world culminate?

“And I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvelous, seven angels having the seven last plagues; for in them is filled up the wrath of God.” Revelation 15: 1.

Commenting on the falling of the last plagues Dr. Albert Barnes says: “The agents or instrumentalities in this fearful work have now been sent forth, and they will by no means be recalled. The mercy-seat, in this respect, is inaccessible; the time of judgment of the great foe has come, and the destruction of the grand enemy of the church is certain.”

3. Upon whom does the first vial fall?

“And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the earth; and there fell a noisome and grievous sore upon the men which had the mark of the beast, and upon them which worshipped his image.”, Revelation 16: 2.

4. Of what will the righteous be assured in that day?

“Surely He shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler, and from the noisome Pestilence.” Psalm 91:3 (See also verses 5, 6, 9, 10.)

5. What terrible effects have the second and third plagues?

“And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea; and it became as the blood of a dead man: and every living soul died in the sea. And the third angel poured out his vial upon the rivers and fountains of waters; and they became blood.” Revelation 16: 3, 4.

6. How appropriate will this judgment be upon a world which through the, ages has spilt rivers of innocent blood?

“They have shed the blood of saints and prophets, and thou has given them blood to drink; for they are worthy.” Revelation 16: 6.

7. At what does the fourth plague strike?

“And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon the sun; and power was given unto him to scorch them with fire. And men were scorched with great heat.” Revelation 16: 8, 9.

8. Where will the righteous dwell in the day of fierce heat?

“He that dwells in the secret place of the Most High shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty.” Psalm 91:1.

9. What judgment does the fifth angel bring?

“And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast; and his kingdom was full of darkness; and they gnawed their tongues for pain.” Revelation 16:10. (See also Joel 2:1, 2.)

10. As with Israel of old, what light in the darkness will the righteous in that day enjoy?

“They saw not one another, neither rose any from his place for three days: but all the children of Israel had light in their dwellings.” Exodus 10: 23.

11. Upon what is the sixth vial poured out?

“And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates; and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared.” Revelation 16: 12.

12. By what satanic agencies are the nations incited to gather?

“And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet. For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty.” Revelation 16:13,14.

“It sometimes looks, the world over, as if it were, for the present, under the dominion of evil spirits.” - Dr. Lang, Archbishop of Canterbury.

“Satanic forces seem today to be in the saddle. Not only have the impulses of violence, cruelty, and lust broken loose in the world, but apart from the foreboding which these awaken, many people have a growing sense of a hostile element in the universe, a power of evil which wages malicious war against their spirits.” - Dr. J. H. Oldham in the Christian News-letter.

“Since the beginning of the Great War events have given a sinister meaning to these words of the Revelation of St. John, ‘Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! For the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knows that he hath but a short time.’ There is something demonic in the madness which besets the earth.” - Editorial in the Church Times.

13. Where are the kings of the earth gathered together?

“And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon.” Revelation 16:16.

“Megiddo was the military key of Syria; it commanded at once the highway northward to Phoenicia and Coele-Syria and the road across Galilee to Damascus and the valley of the Euphrates. The vale of Kishon and the region of Megiddo were inevitable battle-fields. Through all history they retained that qualification; there many of the great contests of South-western Asia have been decided. It was regarded as a predestined place of blood and strife; the poet of the Apocalypse has clothed it with awe as the ground of the final conflict between the powers of light and darkness.”-George Cormack in “Egypt in Asia,” page 83.

14. What intimation of imminent divine intervention in the days of the sixth plague is the prophet given? “Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watches, and keeps his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame.” Revelation 16:15.

15. As the seventh angel pours his vial into the air; what tremendous announcement does God make? “And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, It is done.” Revelation 16:17.

16. What catastrophic events take place when the seventh angel pours out his judgment?

“And there were voices, and thunders, and lightning; and there was a great earthquake, and the cities of the nations fell: and great Babylon came in remembrance before God and every island fled away, and the mountains were not found. . . . And there fell

upon men a great hail out of heaven.” Revelation 16: 18-21. (See also Revelation 6:14; Haggai 2:21; Hebrews 12:26; Isaiah 30:30; Job 38: 22, 23.)

17. Who will be the refuge of the saints in the day of calamity?

“God is our refuge and strength, a very present help in trouble. Therefore will not we fear, though the earth be removed, and though the mountains be carried into the midst of the sea; though the waters thereof roar and be troubled, though the mountains shake with the swelling thereof.” Psalm 46:1-3. (See also Isaiah 26:20,21.)

18. What vision has the prophet of the saints after their deliverance?

“And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire: and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, and over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glass, having the harps of God. And they sing the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb.” Revelation 15:2,3.

21. The Return of Jesus

The “Blessed Hope”

1. FOR what purpose did Jesus come to dwell among men?

“For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.” Luke 19:10.

2. As He hung on the cross, what triumphant claim was He able to make concerning His earthly mission? “When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, He said, It is finished: and He bowed His head, and gave up the ghost.” John 19:30.

3. Since His return to heaven, what further phase of His work has occupied Jesus?

“We have such an High Priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens.” Hebrews 8:1. “He ever lives to make intercession.” Hebrews 7:25.

4. By what act will the great plan of salvation be consummated?

“So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for Him shall He appear the second time without sin unto salvation.” Hebrews 9:28.

“The whole of history before Christ gravitates toward His appearance in time. That is the watershed of world history. Since the life of Christ on earth, the world moves on to its climax in the second coming of Christ, when He will exercise judgment and wind history up. From zero to the appearance of Christ in Judea; from the appearance of Christ as a man in Judea to His reappearance at the consummation of history as Lord and judge of all mankind—that is the real clue to world development.” D. R. Davies in “On to Orthodoxy.”

5. What solemn promise to this effect did Jesus give His disciples before He left them? “I will come again, and receive you unto Myself; that where I am, there you may be also.” John 14: 3.

6. How long has the hope of the Lord’s coming in triumph been cherished by His people?

“And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord comes with ten thousands of His saints, to execute judgment upon all.” Jude 1:14,15. Actually the hope may be traced back to Eden, for the promise in Genesis 3:15 is of the triumph of Christ.

7. Of what was Job confident?

“And though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God.” Job 19: 26. (See also Job 14:14, 15.)

8. For what did the psalmist look?

“Our God shall come, and shall not keep silence: a fire shall devour before Him, and it shall be very tempestuous round about Him. He shall call to the heavens from above, and to the earth, that He may judge His people.” Psalm 50:3, 4.

9. What hope did the followers of Jesus entertain while He was yet with them?

“When they therefore were come together, they asked of Him, saying, Lord, will Thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel?” Acts 1:6.

10. What assurance were the disappointed disciples given immediately after the ascension?

“This same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as you have seen Him go into heaven.” Acts 1:11.

11. What became the keynote of their evangelist?

“For yet a little while, and He that shall come will come, and will not tarry.” Hebrews 10: 37.

12. What has the second advent thus been to the church through the ages?

“Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Savior Jesus Christ.” Titus 2: 13.

“Ah, loving God, defer not Thy coming. The Lord be praised, who taught us to sigh and yearn after that day. I hope that day is not far off.” - Martin Luther.

“Has not the Lord Jesus, in despite of Satan’s malice, carried up our flesh into heaven? And shall He not return? We know that He shall return, and that with expedition.” - John Knox.

“You have the same authority for the second coming of Christ that we have for His birth, His death, and resurrection.” - D. L. Moody.

“The day of our Lord’s appearing is the day around which our chief hopes must center.” - C. H. Spurgeon.

“Somewhat deliberately I confessed my expectation (not hastily formed) that ere very long the return, in manifested majesty, of the risen and ascended Christ, the one true King of men, will rise on the human scene. No symbolical mystery, but a supreme event.” - Dr. Handley Moule, Bishop of Durham, in “A Challenge to the Bishops!”

“The coming of Christ is a great reality in the New Testament. It is the goal of all things individual and corporate. The Christian man and the Christian church are depicted as ‘looking for that blessed hope.’” -Dr. W. H. Griffith Thomas.

13. Into what experience should a realization of the imminent advent of Christ lead us?

“Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world; looking for the glorious appearing of the great God and our Savior Jesus Christ.” Titus 2:12, 13.

Will Christ Really Come?

1. WHAT solemn promise did Jesus give His disciples?

“I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto Myself; that where I am, there you may be also.” John 14:2, 3.

2. What assurance was given at the ascension that Jesus intended personally to return?

“And while they looked steadfastly toward heaven as He went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel; which also said, You men of Galilee, why stand you gazing up into heaven? This same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as you have seen Him go into heaven.” Acts 1:10, 11.

3. What terms are applied to Christ’s return which clearly indicate that it is an actual moment in history?

a. The last day. “And this is the Father’s will which has sent Me, that of all which He has given Me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.” John 6:39.

b. The day of the Lord. “For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so comes as a thief in the night.” 1 Thessalonians 5:2.

4. How real will Christ’s coming be?

a. He will “appear.” “Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it does not yet appear what we shall be. But we know that, when He shall appear, we shall be like Him; for we shall see Him as He is.” 1 John 3: 2.

This word means literally, a “shining upon.” All the spotlights of heaven will indeed be focussed upon Jesus in that day. There will be no mistaking the chief Figure in that last great pageant of time.

b. He will be “revealed.” “Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ.” 1 Peter 1:13.

This is the word used in the title of the last book of the Bible and may literally be rendered “unveiling.” When our Lord came to earth at His first advent, His glory was veiled in human flesh. When He comes again there will be nothing between. He will stand unveiled in all the majesty of His heavenly glory.

c. His “presence” will be manifest. “To the end He may establish your hearts unblamable in holiness before God, even our Father, at the coming [presence] of our Lord Jesus Christ with all His saints.” 1 Thessalonians 3: 13.

“The remaining expression used of the return of Jesus is generally translated by the word “coming.” The original word here is “parousia,” or “presence.”

First-century papyrus documents use this word to indicate the personal visit of a king or other personage.

Among other uses of the term we find in one papyrus, “The repair of what has been swept away by the river requires my parousia.” “We await your parousia,” writes a man to his brothers. A legal document makes reference to an individual swearing in the parousia of the bishops. The historian Polybius speaks of the “parousia of Hannibal.” The word always has reference to an appearance in person (See also Diessmarm’s “Light from the Ancient East.”)

5. Against what false advent teachings did Jesus warn His disciples?

“Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, He is in the desert; go not forth: behold, He is in the secret chambers; believe it not.” Matthew 24: 26.

From time to time suggestions have been made that Jesus will appear in this or that remote place, and temples have been built for His reception. All such hopes are vain. The reference to the “secret chamber” undoubtedly has reference to the secrecy of the spiritualist seance. But Satan, not Christ, will be found there.

6. Where will He appear?

“For the Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the Archangel, and with the trump of God. Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air.” 1 Thessalonians 4:16, 17.

7. By how many will He be seen?

“Behold, He comes with clouds; and every eye shall see Him, and they also which pierced Him: and all kingdoms of the earth shall wail because of Him.” Revelation 1:7.

8. How spectacular will His coming be?

a. With fire. “In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ.” 2 Thessalonians 1:8.

From east to west Christ's glorious return will be visible, like the lightning's blinding flash.

b. Like lightning. "For as the lightning comes out of the east, and shines even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be." Matthew 24:27.

c. In power and glory. "They shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory." Matthew 24: 30.

9. On what occasion were the disciples given a miniature picture of the second advent?

"And it came to pass about an eight days after these sayings, He took Peter and John and James, and went up into a mountain to pray. And as He prayed, the fashion of His countenance was altered, and His raiment was white and glistening." Luke 9:28, 29.

10. How did Peter later recall this preview of the advent?

"For we have not followed cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eyewitnesses of His majesty." 2 Peter 1:16.

11. By what glorious retinue will He be accompanied on His return?

"When the Son of man shall come in His glory, and all the holy angels with Him, then shall He sit upon the throne of His glory." Matthew 25:31.

12. Beside being seen by all, what audible accompaniment will herald His approach?

"For the Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the Archangel, and with the trump of God." 1 Thessalonians 4: 16.

13. What will be brought to a sudden end by the appearance of Christ?

This present world order. "And as He sat upon the Mount of Olives, the disciples came unto Him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? And what shall be the sign of Thy coming, and of the end of the world [age]?" Matthew 24:3. "Who gave Himself for our sins, that He might deliver us from this Present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father." Galatians 1: 4.

Our minds may find it difficult to conceive the "beginning" of the world, but we know that there must have been a "first day." So likewise, though it is outside the range of our personal experience, we know that there will be a last day" as real as the first, when this world order will come to an end and a new world order will be inaugurated.

14. What will at that time be ushered in?

"And tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the age to come." Hebrews 6:5, RV.

15. How unexpected will the coming of Christ be to the wicked?

"For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so comes as a thief in the night." 1 Thessalonians 5: 2.

16. Who will not be taken unawares by the Lord's return, and why?

"But you, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief. You are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkness. Therefore let us not sleep as do others; but let us watch and be sober." 1 Thessalonians 5: 4-6.

Is the End Near?

1. As Jesus approached Jerusalem from the mount of Olives on the occasion of His triumphal entry, to what sorrowful thoughts did He give expression?

"And when He was come near, He beheld the city, and wept over it, saying, If thou had known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace! But now they are hid from your eyes." Luke 19: 41, 42.

2. What fate did He pronounce upon it?

"For the days shall come upon thee, that your enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side, and shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee. And they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another; because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation." Luke 19:43, 44.

3. With what did the disciples associate the predicted fall of Jerusalem?

"And as He sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto Him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? And what shall be the sign of Thy coming, and of the end of the world?" Matthew 24: 3.

4. How did Jesus correct this wrong impression and dissociate the two events?

"And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in My name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many. And you shall hear of wars and rumors of wars: see that you be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet." "All these are the beginning of sorrows." Matthew 24:4-6, 8.

5. What vicissitudes would the church have to face and endure?

"Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and you shall be hated of all nations for My name's sake. And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold." Matthew 24:9-12.

See study, "Through Tribulation to Triumph."

6. What reward would endurance bring?

"But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved." Matthew 24:13.

7. Returning to their first question, how did Jesus forewarn the disciples of the destruction of Jerusalem? “And when you shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh.” Luke 21: 20.
8. To what prophecy was He here drawing attention?
 “When you therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (who so reads, let him understand:) then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains.” Matthew 24: 15, 16.
9. Taking the fall of Jerusalem as the starting-point again, what further details did He supply of the interim period between this catastrophe and the end of the world?
 “For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.” Matthew 24: 21. (Compare verses 9-12.)
10. How perilously near to extinction would the church come?
 “And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect’s sake those days shall be shortened.” Matthew 24: 22.
11. Upon what internal perils of the church through the ages, did Jesus next enlarge?
 “Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe it not. For there shall arise false christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect. Behold, I have told you before.” Matthew 24:23-25.
12. With the close of the persecution, what period in earth’s history would be reached?
 “And some of them of understanding shall fall, to try them, and to purge, and to make them white, even to the little of the end: because it is yet for a time appointed.” Daniel 11:35.
13. What spectacular signs in the natural world would be associated with this momentous period? “Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken.” Matthew 24:29. See study, “Dissolving Empires.”
14. What signs in the earth would further proclaim the imminence of the advent? a. International upheavals. “Amid upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring.” Luke 21:25.
 b. Universal fear. “Men’s hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken.” Luke 21:26.
 c. Widespread moral depravity. “But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were before the Flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and knew not until the Flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.” Matthew 24:37-39.
 d. World-wide evangelism. “And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.” Matthew 24:14.
 See study, “What Do These Things Mean?”
15. By what event will the end be ushered in?
 “And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.” Matthew 24:30.
16. Why did Jesus give His disciples this outline of history?
 “Now learn a parable of the fig tree; When his branch is yet tender, and puts forth leaves, you know that summer is nigh: so likewise you, when you shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors.” Matthew 24:32, 33.
17. Is the precise time of Christ’s return revealed?
 “But of that day and hour knows no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but My Father only.” Matthew 24:36.
18. In what state of preparedness, therefore, must the church of the last days be?
 “Therefore be you also ready: for in such an hour as you think not the Son of man comes.” Matthew 24: 44.
19. What feelings will possess the believers as they see, by the fulfillment of prophecy, the advent drawing near?
 “And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draws nigh.” Luke 21:28.
20. On the other hand, what tragic fate will befall those who have failed to prepare to meet God?
 “But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayed his coming; the lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looked not for him, and appoint him his Portion with the hypocrites.” Matthew 24: 48-51.
21. How assured may we be of the certainty of the prophetic word?
 “Heaven and earth shall pass away, but My words shall not Pass away.” Matthew 24:35.

What Do These Things Mean?

1. Has God revealed the exact time when Christ will return in triumph?
 “But of that day and hour knows no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but My Father only.” Matthew 24:36.

2. Though God has not stated precisely the time of His Son's return, what guidance has He given us whereby we may know that His coming is near?

"Now learn a parable of the fig tree; when his branch is yet tender, and puts forth leaves, you know that summer is nigh: so likewise you, when you shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors." Matthew 24:32, 33.

While He has specified neither "the day nor the hour" of Christ's return, He has provided certain prophetic landmarks along the highway of history, whereby succeeding generations might recognize God's overruling hand in the kingdoms of men and see the day of the Lord draw on.

3. What remarkable progress in culture and civilization did Daniel declare would characterize the latter days of earth's history?

"But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased." Daniel 12:4.

In an article entitled, "Contrasts," in a recent year book, Lord Askwith delineates some of the remarkable changes which have come over the world during the past century. "If one might select two as most important," he says, "I would suggest restlessness and a wider knowledge. Restlessness is obvious to any observer. Men travel to the North and South Poles, across Australia, and link the world together by rapid transit over sea and land. Wider knowledge and interest in the world, to which restlessness and movement contribute largely, are perhaps still more striking features of the present day as compared with the Victorian age." Lord Askwith's words were written without any thought of Bible prophecy. Yet unconsciously he chooses the very words of Daniel to describe the outstanding features of our time.

4. While the last days would see a phenomenal advance in civilization, what tragic deterioration of international relations would also take place?

"And you shall hear of wars and rumors of wars: see that you be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom." Matthew 24: 6, 7.

5. In what desperate situation would the anarchy of nations culminate in the last days?

a. Universal strife. "Proclaim you this among the Gentiles; Prepare war, wake up the mighty men, let all the men of war draw near; let them come up: beat your plough shares into swords, and your Pruning hooks into spears: let the weak say, I am strong." Joel 3:9, 10.

"Henceforth whole populations will take part in war. Mankind has never been in this position before." - Winston Churchill in "Aftermath," page 483.

"More people have been killed and there have been more wars in the present age of scientific civilization than at any previous period."-Fr. Vincent McNabb in the Universe.

b. Universal distress and fear. "And there shall be upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth." Luke 21:25, 26.

"In the present condition of this disordered world we are beholding a judgment day. Hear the words in which the greatest of the prophets-our Lord Himself-described the signs. 'Upon the earth distress of nations, ... men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth.' Is not this a picture of what men are seeing and feeling now?" - Dr. Lang, Archbishop of Canterbury.

"Anyone who thinks about the future must live in fear and terror." - Professor Einstein.

"We go about with fear in our hearts. We fear war with its train of sorrow and pain and death. But even more than war itself, we fear what may come after." - Canon J. O. Hannay in "The Potter's Wheel."

"It is no overstatement to say that the world is filled with fear and is void of hope today. There is some reason for trembling. Wherever we look we discover the helplessness of the world to solve its problems."-Dr. A. Keller in "Five Minutes to Twelve."

6. What does Paul declare men would seek in vain?

"For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction comes upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape." 1 Thessalonians 5:3. "Behold, their valiant ones shall cry without: the ambassadors of peace shall weep bitterly." Isaiah 33:7.

The latest report of the work of the League of Nations reveals that between May 19, 1920, and May 19, 1939, no fewer than 4,568 "treaties and international agreements" were registered in Geneva. But they did not prevent the outbreak of the second World War.

"I shall do whatever lies within my power," declared President Roosevelt, one of the world's greatest peacemakers, "to hasten the day foretold by Isaiah, when men shall beat their swords into plough shares, nation shall not lift up the sword against nation, and neither shall they learn war any more."

7. In what conflict will all the nations finally be involved?

"For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty." "And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon." Revelation 16:14, 16.

8. What unparalleled developments would occur in the economic life of the nations in the last days? Prodigious increase of wealth and its concentration in the hands of a few. "Go to now, you rich men, you have heaped treasure together for the last days." James 5:1-3.

It has been estimated that ninety per cent of the wealth of Britain is in the hands of ten per cent of the population, and in America the same proportion of wealth is in the hands of two per cent of the people. One-eighth of the annual income of Great Britain is received by less than one-fifth of one per cent of the population.

9. By what unjust means have many of these fortunes been accumulated?

Exploitation of the workers. "Behold, the hire of the laborers who have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, cries: and the cries of them which have reaped are entered into the ears of the Lord of sabaoth." James 5: 4.

10. Before the end, however, what reversal in the fortunes of the rich would develop?

"Go to now, you rich men, weep and howl for your miseries that shall come upon you. Your gold and silver is cankered; and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire." James 5: 1-3.

Not only have the rich today to contend with those whom they formerly exploited, but they are facing the dissolution of the economic system which has given them their wealth. "It is my business to know how the great world machine of finance is working," said the noted economist, Sir George Paish, shortly before the war. "It is in danger of complete collapse."

11. With what terrible period of history does Jesus compare the social conditions of the last days? "But as the days of Noah were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be." Matthew 24: 37.

12. By what were the days before the Flood particularly marked?

a. Riotous pleasure-seeking. "For as in the days that were before the Flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark." Matthew 24: 38.

Since the days of Noah there has never been an age in which thrill, excitement, and riotous pleasure have been so sought after as the supreme good. One of the most stupendous machines which this machine age has brought into existence is the "machinery of amusement." Millions of the world's workers are ceaselessly providing pleasures for their fellow creatures who, in their turn, are paying billions of the world's wealth for them.

According to the Inquirer, "estimates of the turnover on the principal popular gambling practices in Great Britain" just before the war ranged from "£350,000,000 to £500,000,000 made up as follows: Horse-racing, £250,000,000 to £350,000,000; greyhound racing, £50,000,000 to £70,000,000; football pools, £40,000,000 to £60,000,000; gaming machines, £10,000,000 to £20,000,000."

The United States spends £1,200,000,000 a year on amusements, or 110 for every man, woman, and child. This represents about twelve per cent of the national income.

b. Iniquity. "And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. The earth also was corrupt before God." Genesis 6:5-11. (See also verse 12.)

"A lowering of human values and a debasing of moral standards are taking place across the world on a vast scale and with increasing momentum." - The Very Revelation Professor Daniel Lamont, DD.

c. Violence. "And God said unto Noah, The end of all flesh is come before Me; for the earth is filled with violence through them; and, behold, I will destroy them with the earth." Genesis 6:13.

"Except in a few dark, barbarous periods many years ago, I do not think Europe has ever suffered more from merciless pride, cruelty, and barbarism now ravaging peaceful countries." - Dr. Lang, Archbishop of Canterbury.

"Never in our memory has brute force held such wide sway." - Sir Samuel Hoare.

"The condition of the world is a bitter reflection on our boasted civilization. The pillars have been thrown down. Liberty, truth, and compassion have been ruthlessly destroyed. Europe resembles a garden which has been trampled down by furious beasts." - Dr. Richard Pyke, president of the Methodist Church.

13. What answer do these indisputable evidences give to the question "How long?"

"So likewise you, when you shall see all these things, know that it [the return of Jesus] is near, even at the doors." Matthew 24:33.

"It is five minutes to twelve! The world cannot wait very much longer."-Dr. A. Keller in "Five Minutes to Twelve."

Will the World Be Converted?

1. DID Jesus expect that the people of the last days would be eagerly awaiting His return? "Nevertheless when the Son of man comes, shall He find faith on the earth?" Luke 18: 8.

2. On the contrary, what would be the spiritual condition of the world in the last days?

"For men shall be ... lovers of Pleasures -more than lovers of God." 2 Timothy 3: 2, 4.

"If Victorians of the seventies were to come back again they would be struck with the restlessness of the times, the disappearance of family worship, the lessened attendance at places of worship, the neglect of the Bible, the waning influence of the church on the community, the lowering of the sanctity of marriage, and the lowering of the standard of morals." - Doctor Charles Brown (Baptist).

So divided as the world by hate and racial animosities that any sizable gathering of nations is hailed as a noteworthy achievement.

“Organized religion, as practiced and expressed through churches of whatever denomination, is fast coming to an end. People in all classes of society are simply not coming to church. We are a dwindling body of churchgoers, and soon we shall not even be able to afford the luxury of maintaining the ministry.”-T. N. Veitch (Congregationalist).

“The brutal fact is that in this Christian country not one person in a hundred has the faintest notion what the church teaches about God or man or society or the person of Jesus Christ.”-Miss Dorothy Sayers (Church of England).

3. What fatal apathy, even among professed Christians, did the Apostle Paul predict?

“Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof.” 2 Timothy 3:5.

“The arch-heresy today in the Christian church is non-redemptive Christianity, though you cannot call it Christianity in these circumstances-Christianity from which the redemptive truths have dropped out.”-The Bishop of Chelmsford in the Church Times.

4. How will the last-day church be subverted from its primitive faith?

a.Scorn of divine revelation. “Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts.” 2 Peter 3: 3.

According to the dictionary definition, the term “scoffer” combines a “sense of superiority, resentment, and aversion,” which manifests itself in “contemptuous ridicule.” It is usually directed against “something deserving reverence or consideration,” and commonly arises “in connection with an ungrounded arrogant sense of self-esteem.”

Certainly no word could have been selected more perfectly to describe the modernist school of thought, whose most constantly reiterated boast is that it has on its side all the intellectual and thinking people, while those who disagree have “manifestly ignorant, prejudiced, and superstitious minds.”

b. Acceptance of man-made fables. “For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.” 2 Timothy 4:3,4.

Most prominent among the “fables” which have been offered to our generation in place of the “truths” of God’s Word are the doctrines of evolution, illimitable and endless progress, humanism or the sufficiency of man, salvation by education, social reform, and the like.

The doctrine of evolution from one original form of life Wassman calls “a delightful dream without any scientific support,” while T. Burroughs’ asserts that Darwin has been “shorn of his selection theories as completely as Samson was shorn of his locks.”

Referring, among other things, to the doctrine of endless progress, Dr. W. R. Inge says: “To those who have been brought up in the unquestioning worship of nineteenth century fetishes it must be a shock to see those venerable idols shaking on their pedestals or lying prostrate at the foot of them.” The Fall of the Idols,” page 17.

5. By what other impostors will many be led astray?

“For there shall arise false christs, and false prophets.” Matthew 24:24. (See also verses 4, 5, 11)

“We are cursed today by too many bogus Messiahs, who maintain that their creed is the divine revelation.” - Lord Tweedsmuir at Edinburgh University.

6. From where will these evil influences emanate?

“Now the Spirit speaks expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils.” 1 Timothy 4:1.

7. What effect will these false teachings have upon the life of the church?

“And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.” Matthew 24: 12.

“This is an age of great spiritual crisis. All around can be seen the marks of great anxiety, with, in some countries, great apostasy. We see the beginnings and in some countries the full realization of great tribulation, and many people feel that this is now the time foreshadowed in the New Testament.” - Lord Hugh Cecil.

8. Does the prophetic word hold out any possibility of a universal change of heart before the end?

“But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.” 2 Timothy 3: 13. “As it was in the days of Noah, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man.” Luke 17:26. (See also verses 27-30.) .

9. In this time of terrible apostasy, what final opportunity will be given to the world?

“And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.” Matthew 24: 14. (See also Revelation 14: 6,7.)

This age, which has seen the greatest apostasy in all time, has also seen the gospel going as never before to the uttermost ends of the earth. The modern art of printing has enabled the Bible to be multiplied more rapidly than ever before. Modern means of communication have made it possible for the ambassadors of Jesus to speed to earth’s remotest bounds. And the Spirit of God has raised up men with hearts aflame for God to buy up the opportunities of our time and preach the gospel to every creature under heaven.

“The Christian missionary movement is the greatest expansion since the first generation of the church.” - Dr. Matthews, Dean of St. Paul’s, in the British Weekly.

10.Viewing these further spiritual signs, to what conclusion must we come? “When you shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors.” Matthew 24:33.

11.What should a realization of the imminence of the end arouse in us?

“Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought you to be in all holy conversation and godliness, looking for and hastening unto the coming of the day of God.” 2 Peter 3:11,12.

12. What preparation should we be diligently seeking?

“And every man that has this hope in him purifies himself, even as He is pure.” 1 John 3:3. “It is time to seek the Lord, till He come and rain righteousness upon you.” Hosea 10:12.

God's Strange Act

1. WHEN Jesus came the first time, what reception had He at the hands of a wicked world?

"He came unto His own, and His own received Him not." John 1:11. "And they cried out all at once, saying Away with this man." Luke 23:18.

2. What solemn warning did He utter as He was led to Calvary?

"But Jesus turning unto them said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for Me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children. For, behold, the days are coming, in the which they shall begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us. For if they do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the dry?" Luke 23:28-31.

3. What will produce this terrible fear in the hearts of the wicked?

"And they shall go into the holes of the rocks, and into the caves of the earth, for fear of the Lord, and for the glory of His majesty, when He arises to shake terribly the earth." Isaiah 2:19. (See also Revelation 6:14-17.)

4. How are their feelings in the presence of the Lord elsewhere described?

a. Mourn. "And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory." Matthew 24: 30.

b. Weep bitterly. "The great day of the Lord is near, it is near, and hastens greatly, even the voice of the day of the Lord: the mighty men shall cry there bitterly." Zephaniah 1:14.

c. Hearts will melt. "Therefore shall all hands be faint, and every man's heart shall melt: and they shall be afraid: pangs and sorrows shall take hold of them; they shall be in pain as a woman that travailed: they shall be amazed one at another; their faces shall be as flames." Isaiah 13:7, 8.

5. By what inexorable judgment will they be overtaken?

"When the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with His mighty angels, in flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ." 2 Thessalonians 1: 7, 8.

6. What will the day of Christ's return thus be to the wicked?

"That day is a day of wrath, a day of trouble and distress, a day of wasting and desolation, a day of darkness and gloominess, a day of clouds and thick darkness." Zephaniah 1:15. "Howl you; for the day of the Lord is at hand; it shall come as a destruction from the Almighty." Isaiah 13: 6.

7. How incongruous to God is this work of judgment?

"For the Lord shall rise up as in mount Perazim, He shall be wroth as in the valley of Gibeon, that He may do His work, His strange work; and bring to pass His act, His strange act." Isaiah 28:21.

8. By what expression is the strangeness of God's judgment on the wicked further emphasized?

"And said to the mountains and rocks. Fall on us, and hide us from the face of Him that sits on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb: for the great day of His wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand?" Revelation 6:16, 17.

9. With what work has the Lamb of God" hitherto been associated?

"The next day John sees Jesus coming unto him, and said, Behold the Lamb of God, which takes away the sin of the world." John 1: 29.

10. Will He tolerate forever the spurning of His offer of mercy?

"The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us ward not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance. But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night." 2 Peter 3: 9, 10.

11. In what will God's wrath be filled up?

"And I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvelous, seven angels having the seven last plagues; for in them is filled up the wrath of God." Revelation 15:1.

12. The judgment ended, in what company is the Lamb once more seen?

"And I looked, and, lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Zion, and with Him an hundred forty and four thousand, having His Father's name written in their foreheads. And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps." Revelation 14:1, 2. (See also Revelation 15:2, 3.)

13. What appeal does a contemplation of mercy and judgment evoke from the Apostle Paul?

"Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in His goodness: otherwise thou also shall be cut off." Romans 11:22.

"Enter thou into the joy of thy lord." Matthew 25: 21, 23.

The Saints' Reward

1. WITH what anticipation do the righteous look forward to the day of Christ's return?

"Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Savior Jesus Christ." Titus 2: 13.

2. How will they feel when they behold their Lord?

"And now, little children, abide in Him; that, when He shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before Him at His coming." 1 John 2:28. "Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment." 1 John 4:17.

3. What will He bring to them?

a. Rewards. "And, behold, I come quickly; and My reward is with Me, to give every man according as his work shall be." Revelation 22: 12.

b. Praise, honor, and glory. "That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perished, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honor and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ." 1 Peter 1: 7.

4. What will be restored to the righteous dead when Christ returns?

"For the Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the Archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first." 1 Thessalonians 4:16.

5. What wonderful change will the living righteous likewise undergo?

"Behold, I show you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump. For the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed." 1 Corinthians 15:51, 52.

6. What swift command will Jesus issue to His angel retinue?

"Gather My saints together unto Me; those that have made a covenant with Me by sacrifice." Psalm 50: 5.

7. From where will the saints be gathered?

"And He shall send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other." Matthew 24:31.

8. Where will the translated and risen saints meet their Lord?

"Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air.. and so shall we ever be with the Lord." 1 Thessalonians 4:17.

9. What will be the privilege of all in that glorious day?

"Your eyes shall see the King in His beauty: they shall behold the land that is very far off." Isaiah 33:17.

10. How will they be welcomed by their Savior and Lord?

"Then shall the King say unto them on His right hand, Come, you blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world." Matthew 25:34.

11. From what will creation in that day finally emerge?

"Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. For we know that the whole creation groaned and travailed in pain together until now." Romans 8:21, 22.

Jesus, the King of kings, will welcome His people with the proclamation, "Come, you blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world." Matthew 25:34.

12. What words suggest that the day of Christ's return will be a day of new life for the redeemed creation?

a. The regeneration. "And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That you which have followed Me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of His glory, you also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel." Matthew 19:28.

b. Restitution of all things. "Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God has spoken by the mouth of all His holy prophets since the world began." Acts 3: 21.

13. With what glorious ceremony will the day of the Lord culminate?

"And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, saying Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honor to Him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come." Revelation 19:6, 7.

14. On what occasion did Jesus refer to this supper?

"But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in My Father's kingdom." Matthew 26:29.

15. How privileged will those be who are present at this wonderful feast?

"And he said unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he said unto me, These are the true sayings of God." Revelation 19:9.

16. What preparation is necessary for attendance at that supper?

a. Trimmed lamps. "Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps." Matthew 25:7. (Read verses 1-13.)

b. Wedding garment. "Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honor to Him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and His wife has made herself ready." Revelation 19:7. (See also Matthew 22:1-14.)

Satan's Last Battle

1. THROUGH the long ages of sin, how active has Satan been?

"And the Lord said unto Satan, Whence comes thou? Then Satan answered the Lord, and said, From going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it." Job 1:7. "Your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walks about, seeking whom he may devour." 1 Peter 5:8.

2. How intense does his attack become as the end draws near?

“Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! For the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knows that he has but a short time.” Revelation 12:12.

3. At Christ’s Second Advent, how will Satan’s machinations be brought to a temporary end?

“And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years.” Revelation 20:1, 2.

4. What are the links of which Satan’s chain is forged?

a. The wicked are all destroyed and out of his reach. “A noise shall come even to the ends of the earth; for the Lord has a controversy with the nations, He will plead with all flesh; He will give them that are wicked to the sword, said the Lord.” Jeremiah 25:31.

b. The righteous have been taken to heaven and beyond temptation. “The dead in Christ shall rise first: then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.” 1 Thessalonians 4:16, 17.

c. There is no one on earth for Satan to tempt. “I beheld, and, lo, there was no man, and all the birds of the heavens were fled.” Jeremiah 4:25.

The immediate consequences of the coming of Christ will be the destruction of the wicked, the desolation of the earth, the raising of the blessed dead, and their translation with the living righteous from the earth to join the hosts of heaven in the celebration of the marriage supper of the Lamb. The depopulation of the earth thus provides a fitting prison-house for Satan where, for a thousand years, he has ample opportunity to meditate upon the ruin he has caused.

5. In what condition is the earth itself?

“I beheld the earth, and, lo, it was without form, and void; and the heavens, and they had no light.” Jeremiah 4:23. (Compare Genesis 1:2.)

In the second verse of the Bible the earth in its primeval condition “without form and void” is described as the “abyss” or “bottomless pit.” The earth at the Second Coming of Christ will return to the same chaotic state, and is thus again aptly designated by the same term. (Revelation 20:1.) The idea that the earth during the millennium will be the abode of Christ and the saints is thus entirely unbiblical.

6. How long will the translated saints remain in heaven?

“And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.” Revelation 20:4.

7. In what occupation will they be engaged during this period?

“Know you not that we shall judge angels? How much more things that pertain to this life?” 1 Corinthians 6: 3.

8. How long do the wicked dead continue to sleep?

“But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished.” Revelation 20:5.

9. For how long, therefore, will Satan be prevented from tempting men?

“And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled.” Revelation 20: 3.

10. At the end of the millennium, what further period of freedom will be granted to Satan? “And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his Prison.” Revelation 20:7.

11. What circumstances will loose his chains?

“And they [the wicked dead] shall be gathered together, as prisoners are gathered in the pit, and shall be shut up in the prison, and after many days shall they be visited.” Isaiah 24: 22.

12. To what task will Satan immediately address himself?

“And [he] shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea.” Revelation 20:8.

13. What spectacular event will synchronize with Christ’s third coming?

“And I John saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.” Revelation 21:2.

14. Where will the feet of Christ rest, and with what effect?

“And His feet shall stand in that day upon the mount of Olives, which is before Jerusalem on the east, and the mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof toward the east and toward the west, and there shall be a very great valley. And half of the mountain shall remove toward the north, and half of it toward the south.” Zechariah 14: 4.

15. What desperate manoeuvre will Satan adopt?

“And they [the wicked] went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city.” Revelation 20: 9.

16. How signally will his attack be foiled?

“And fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them.” Revelation 20: 9.

17. To what end will Satan at last come?

“And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.” Revelation 20:10.

18. What judgment will fall also upon the wicked?

“And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.” Revelation 20:13-15.

19. How extensive will be the fires of divine wrath?

“But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night. In the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up.” 2 Peter 3:10.

20. How utterly will sin and sinners be destroyed?

“He will make an utter end: affliction shall not rise up the second time.” Nahum 1:9.

21. What will emerge from the flames of judgment and purification?

“And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away.” Revelation 21:1.

22. To whom will the renewed earth be given for an everlasting possession? “Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.” Matthew 5:5.

22. Life After Death

Is Death the End?

1. To what are all men reduced by death?

“As he came forth of his mother’s womb, naked shall he return to go as he came, and shall take nothing of his labor, which he may carry away in his hand.” Ecclesiastes 5:15.

2. In consequence how does life appear to many?

“All things come alike to all: there is one event to the righteous, and to the wicked; to the good and to the clean, and to the unclean; to him that sacrificed, and to him that sacrificed not. As is the good, so is the sinner; and he that swears, as he that fears an oath. This is an evil among all things that are done under the sun, that there is one event unto all.” Ecclesiastes 9:2, 3.

3. What reactions does the apparent futility of life arouse?

a. Abandonment to unrestrained pleasure. “Let us eat and drink; for tomorrow we die.” 1 Corinthians 15: 32.

b. Pessimism and gloom. “Therefore I hated life; because the work that is wrought under the sun is grievous unto me: for all is vanity and vexation of spirit. Yea, I hated all my labor which I had taken under the sun: because I should leave it unto the man that shall be after me.” Ecclesiastes 2:17, 18. “If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable.” 1 Corinthians 15:19.

“Brief and powerless is man’s life; on him and all his race, the slow, sure doom falls pitiless and dark. The life of man is a long march through the night, surrounded by invisible foes, tortured by weariness and pain, toward a goal that few can hope to reach, and where none may tarry long. One by one as they march, our comrades vanish out of our sight, seized by the silent orders of omnipotent death.” - Bertrand Russell in “Mysticism and Logic,” page 56.

4. What question really determines the worth while basis or futility of life? “If a man die, shall he live again?” Job 14:14.

5. Is it reasonable to suppose that the God who created man should be able to raise him again from the dead?

“Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the dead?” Acts 26:8.

6. What power are we assured God does possess?

“God quickened the dead, and called those things which be not as though they were.” Romans 4:17.

7. Who shares with Him the power of revivifying the dead?

“For as the Father raised up the dead, and quickened them; even so the Son quickened whom He will.” John 5:21. (See also 1 Corinthians 15:22.)

During His earthly life, Jesus many times demonstrated His power to raise the dead. He raised Jairus’ daughter (Matthew 9:18-26), the widow’s son of Nain (Luke 7: M-17), Lazarus the brother of Martha and Mary (John 11:1-46), and no doubt many others whose names are not recorded. And more convincing even than His miracles is the fact that He Himself died and rose again. By going down into the grave and coming forth again, He conclusively demonstrated His power to release all who put their trust in Him.

8. To whom does God give hope of a blessed hereafter?

a. To those who believe in Christ. “And this is the will of Him that sent Me, that every one which sees the Son, and believes on Him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.” John 6: 40.

b. To those who seek after wisdom and righteousness. “And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake. And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever.” Daniel 12:2, 3.

9. What comforting assurance does God give of His regard for the righteous dead? “Precious in the sight of the Lord is the death of His saints.” Psalm 116:15.

10. Will anything worthy be lost through death?

“And this is the Father’s will which has sent Me, that of all which He has given Me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.” John 6:39.

11. What will be the portion of the righteous in the resurrection day?

“And thou shalt be blessed; for they cannot recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just.”

Luke 14:14.

12. In consequence of God’s promises, how does express his faith in the resurrection life?

“For I know that my Redeemer lives, and that He shall stand at the latter day upon the earth: and though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God: whom I shall see for myself, and mine eyes shall behold, and not another; though my reins be consumed within me.” Job 19:25-27.

Mary and Martha at the tomb of Lazarus ponder the question which has come to all the bereaved since death entered our world-is death the end?

13. What did he ask God to do?

“O that Thou would hide me in the grave, that Thou would keep me secret, until Thy wrath be past, that Thou would appoint me a set time, and remember me!” Job 14:13.

14. How did he promise to respond to God’s call?

“Thou shalt call, and I will answer Thee: Thou wilt have a desire to the work of Your hands.” Job 14: 15.

15. What satisfaction was the psalmist also sure the resurrection would bring?

“As for me, I will behold Thy face in righteousness: I shall be satisfied, when I awake, with Thy likeness.” Psalm 17:15.

16. Unto what, with Paul, should we long to attain?

“That I may know Him, and the power of His resurrection, and the fellowship of His sufferings, being made conformable unto His death; if by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead.” Philippians 3:10, 11.

17. What will an understanding of this vital, truth bring to believers?

a. Comfort. “But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that you sorrow not, even as others which have no hope. Wherefore comfort one another with these words.’ Thessalonians 4:13-18.

b. Fortitude. “Death is swallowed up in victory. Therefore, my beloved brethren, be you steadfast, unmovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as you know that your labor is not in vain in the Lord.” 1 Corinthians 15:54-58.

c. Hope. “Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to His abundant mercy has begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead.” 1 Peter 1:3.

18. Is there an after-life also for the wicked?

“Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear His voice.” John 5:28. “There shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust.” Acts 24:15.

19. How short and tragic, however, will it be for them?

“And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.” John 5:29.

20. Who only has hope in death?

“The wicked is driven away in his wickedness: but the righteous has hope in his death.” Proverbs 14:32.

Are the Dead Alive?

1. Of what was man formed in the beginning?

“And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground.” Genesis 2: 7.

2. How was life communicated to the inanimate clay?

“And [God] breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.”

Genesis 2:7.

Dr. John Kitto deliberately translates this passage, “And man became a living animal,” and adds this comment: “Some of our readers may be surprised at our having translated Nephesh Chaiyah by ‘living animal.’ There are good interpreters and preachers, who, confiding in the common translation, ‘living soul,’ have maintained that here is intimated a distinctive pre-eminence of men above the inferior animals, as possessed of an immaterial and immortal spirit. But we should be acting unfaithfully if we were to affirm its being contained or implied in this passage.” “Cyclopedia of Biblical Literature,” article, “Adam,” page 58.

3. Is the physical life of man any different from that of the beasts?

“They have all one breath; so that a man has no Preeminence above a beast.” Ecclesiastes 3: 19.

4. In what way does death come about?

a. God requires of man the spirit of life. “But God said unto him This night thy soul shall be required of thee.” Luke 12: 20.

b. Man surrenders the spirit of life. “Yea, man gives up the ghost, and where is he?” Job 14:10. “And the spirit shall return unto God who gave it.” Ecclesiastes 12:7.

5. What process of dissolution thereafter takes place?

“But man dies, and wastes away.” Job 14:10. “Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was.” Ecclesiastes 12:7.

6. How does Job describe the condition of man in death?

“He comes forth like a flower, and is cut down: he flees also as a shadow, and continues not.” Job 14: 2. “That the soul is naturally immortal is contradicted by Scripture, which makes our immortality dependent on the will of the Giver.” - Richard Watson, in “Theological Institutes,” Page 405.

7. Do any of the mental faculties “continue” in death?

a.No knowledge of God. “For in death there is no remembrance of Thee.” Psalm 6:5.

b.No knowledge of the world or of men. “His sons come to honor, and he knows it not; and they are brought low, but he perceived it not of them.” Job 14:21.

c.No knowledge of anything. “For the living know that they shall die: but the dead know not anything.” Ecclesiastes 9:5.

d.No thought. “His breath” goes forth, he returns to his earth; in that very day his thoughts, perish.” Psalm 146:4.

8. Do any of the emotions persist?

“Also their love, and their hatred, and their envy, is now perished.” Ecclesiastes 9:6.

9. Are the dead capable of either pleasure or pain?

a.No reward. “Neither have they any more a reward; for the memory of them is forgotten.” Ecclesiastes 9: 5.

b.No torment. “There the wicked cease from troubling; and there the weary be at rest.” Job 3:17.

The righteous are not participating in the joys of heaven, nor are the wicked enduring the pains of any “hell” of torment or “purgatory” of remedial punishment. All, both good and evil, await in the grave the next act in the plan of God.

10. Can the dead render worship to God?

“The dead praise not the Lord, neither any that go down into silence.” Psalm 115:17.

11. Have they any part in the life of the earth?

“Neither have they any more a Portion for ever in any thing that is done under the sun.” Ecclesiastes 9: 6.

What then is death? The answer of the Bible is simple and explicit. It is the opposite of life. It is a return to what man was before God breathed into him the breath of life. Death is the withdrawal of life and all that it implies. Life implies thought and consciousness. In death there is neither thought nor consciousness. Life suggests activity. Death means the cessation of activity. In death all connection with life is broken off.

12. What else is absent from the abode of the dead?

a.No light. “A land of darkness, as darkness itself; and of the shadow of death, without any order, and where the light is as darkness.” Job 10:22. “Before I go whence I shall not return, even to the land of darkness and the shadow of death.” Job 10:21.

b.No sound. “The dead go down into silence.” Psalm 115:17.

13. While death is thus seen to be a state of complete unconsciousness and inactivity, what terms are used to indicate that it is only a temporary condition?

a.The dead only fall asleep. “And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. “And when he had said this, he fell asleep.” Acts 7:60. “These things said He: and after that He said unto them, Our friend Lazarus sleeps.” John 11:11.

b.They rest. “And there the weary be at rest. There the prisoners rest together; they hear not the voice of the oppressor.” Job 3:17, 18.

“The dead are altogether asleep, and think of nothing. They lie, not reckoning days nor years, but when awakened will seem to themselves to have slept scarcely a moment.” - Martin Luther.

14. Where is the sleeping chamber of the dead?

“Yet shall he be brought to the grave, and shall remain in the tomb.” Job 21:32. “If I wait, the grave is mine house.” Job 17:13.

15. Is there any separation between the righteous and the wicked in the sleep of death? “All go unto one place; all are of the dust., and all turn to dust again.” Ecclesiastes 3: 20.

16. What distinction, however, is retained in the mind of God between the righteous and the wicked? “Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord.” Revelation 14:13. “For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with Him.” 1 Thessalonians 4: 14.

17. Can there be any contact between the living and the dead?

“Have the gates of death been opened unto thee? Or has thou seen the doors of the shadow of death?” Job 38: 17.

Being devoid of consciousness the dead cannot be prayed to. Prayers of invocation to the Virgin Mary or to the saints fall on deaf ears, for Mary and the saints, like the rest of the dead, are asleep. Sleeping the sleep of death, the dead likewise have neither desire nor ability to communicate with the living. Whatever messages may come to the sitters at a seance, they are not communications from the dead. (See study, “Spiritualism-Ancient and Modern,” page 405.)

18.When and by whom only will the dead be awakened out of their sleep?

“Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live.” John 5: 25.

19. What will the sleepers at the appointed time do?

“And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt.” Daniel 12: 2.

When Will the Dead Rise?

1. WHAT definite plan has God laid for the resurrection of the dead?

“For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. But every man in his own order.” 1 Corinthians 15: 22, 23.

2. Of what was the resurrection of Jesus a token?

“But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the first-fruits of them that slept.” 1 Corinthians 15:20. The righteous dead will rise in response to the call in glory of Jesus when He returns

3. Who will be next in order of resurrection, and when will they be raised?

“Christ the first fruits; afterward they that are Christ’s at His coming.” 1 Corinthians 15:23.

Jesus did not teach that we receive either reward or punishment at death, but that the dead wait unconscious in the tomb until the human race comes to the end of its day of grace. Then, in the “last day,” He will return to the earth in triumph to call forth all the righteous dead in glorious resurrection from their earthy beds.

4. How is the resurrection of the righteous dead described by Paul?

“For the Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the Archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first.” 1 Thessalonians 4:16.

5. What will be the signal for the resurrection?

a. Trumpet of God. “In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.” 1 Corinthians 15:52.

b. Voice of Christ. “Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear His voice, and shall come forth.” John 5:25-29.

6. What question relating to the resurrection body did Paul anticipate?

“But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? And with what body do they come?” 1 Corinthians 15:35.

7. How does Paul explain the relation between the earthly and resurrection bodies?

“All flesh is not the same flesh: but there is one kind of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds. There are also celestial bodies and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another.” 1 Corinthians 15:39,40.

“A frame suited to man’s earthly life argues a frame suited to his heavenly life.” - Professor Findlay.

8. How different will the resurrection body be in its origin?

“For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.” 2 Corinthians 5:1.

9. In what way will it differ in nature from the earthly body?

“It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body. Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual.” 1 Corinthians 15:44-46.

10. How much more glorious will the resurrection body be?

a. Incorruptible. “In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.” 1 Corinthians 15: 52.

b. Immortal. “This mortal shall put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory.” 1 Corinthians 15: 54.

What a body that will be! Immortal, incorruptible! No marks of disease or age, no scars of sin will mar that glorious frame. “Man is at last what God originally intended him to be.”

11. In whose likeness will it be fashioned?

“Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto His glorious body, according to the working whereby He is able even to subdue all things unto Himself.” Philippians 3: 21.

12. While not desiring death, for what, nevertheless, may we rightly yearn?

“For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven.” 2 Corinthians 5:2.

13. What experience will come to the living righteous immediately following the resurrection of the righteous dead?

“Behold, I show you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed.” 1 Corinthians 15:51.

14. From where will the resurrected and translated saints be gathered and by whom?

“And He shall send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.” Matthew 24:31.

15. Where will they be taken?

“Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.” 1 Thessalonians 4:17.

16. How long after the resurrection of the righteous will the wicked remain dead?

“But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished.” Revelation 20:5.

An interval of one thousand years will separate the resurrection of the righteous from the resurrection of the wicked. This period, commonly known as the “millennium,” is dealt with in the study, “Satan’s Last Battle.”

17. From where will the wicked dead come?

“And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell [the grave] delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.” Revelation 20:13.

18. For what will they be finally raised?

“And I saw a great white throne, and Him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.” Revelation 20:11-15.

The first resurrection is a resurrection to immortal, incorruptible, and endless life. The second is a resurrection for judgment. The life conferred by the first resurrection is for ever. The life of those who will rise in the second resurrection is but for a brief season, to be finally taken away in the “second death” (Revelation 20:14) from which there is no return.

19. In what resurrection, therefore, should we, by grace, seek to have part? “Blessed and holy is he that has part in the first resurrection.” Revelation 20:6.

20. How may we attain unto the resurrection of life?

“He that overcomes shall not be hurt of the second death.” Revelation 2:11.

23. The Judgment

Will There Be a Day of Reckoning?

1. Amid all the activities of life, what should we remember?

“It is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment.” Hebrews 9:27.

“The most startling change in Christian preaching is the almost total disappearance of references to future reward and punishment in sermons and religious literature.” - Dr. W. R. Inge in “The Fall of the Idols,” page 279.

“How long is it since we preached a sermon on heaven, or the hereafter, or the judgment seat of Christ, or what death means! How is it that almost complete silence has fallen on our teaching concerning this great theme?” - Dr. Charles Brown in the Baptist Times.

2. To whom are all ultimately accountable?

“So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God.” Romans 14:12.

“Home with its joys and grief, business, the use of the world, must be carried on as under notice to quit, by men prepared to cast loose from the shores of time.” - Professor Findlay.

3. Into whose hands has God committed the judgment of men?

“And He commanded us to testify that it is He [Jesus] which was ordained of God to be the judge of quick and dead.” Acts 10:42.

“For we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ.” Romans 14:10. (See also John 5:22, 27.)

“If we look upon ourselves which are to be judged, whom can we desire to appear before, rather than Him who is of the same nature with us?” - Bishop Pearson in “The Creed.”

“Every one of us shall give account of himself to God.” Therefore let us present our bodies “a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God” - the “reasonable service” of a loving heart. Romans 14:12; 12:1.

4. What classes will be represented at the judgment bar?

a. Righteous and wicked. “I said in mine heart, God shall judge the righteous and the wicked.” Ecclesiastes 3: 17.

b. Quick and dead. “The Lord Jesus Christ, shall judge the quick and the dead at His appearing and His kingdom.” 2 Timothy 4:1.

5. Upon what evidence will the judgment be based?

a. Works. “For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he has done, whether it be good or bad.” 2 Corinthians 5:10.

b. Words. “But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. For by thy words thou shall be justified, and by thy words thou shall be condemned.” Matthew 12:36, 37.

c. Secret counsels of the heart. “I the Lord search the heart, I try the reins, even to give every man according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings.” Jeremiah 17: 10.

6. How comprehensive will be the evidence before the heavenly court?

“Great in counsel, and mighty in work: for Your eyes are open upon all the ways of the sons of men: to give every one according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings.” Jeremiah 32: 19.

7. Are any relevant facts likely to be forgotten?

“The Lord has sworn by the excellency of Jacob, Surely I will never forget any of their works.” Amos 8: 7.

8. Wherein is the evidence recorded?

“The books were opened: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.” Revelation 20:12.

9. Against what standard will the lives of men be judged?

“So speak you, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty.” James 2:12.

Jesus come to seek and to save the lost, but when He cleansed the temple. He showed that one day He would be the judge of sinners.

10. To whom will Jesus extend His advocacy?

“If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.” 1 John 1: 9. “We that overcomes, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before MY Father, and before His angels.” Revelation 3: 5. “Whosoever therefore shall confess Me before men, him will I confess also before My Father which is in heaven.” Matthew 10: 32.

11. How will He relate Himself to those who have rejected His proffered aid?

“But whosoever shall deny Me before men, him will I also deny before My Father which is in heaven.” Matthew 10:33.

12. How scrupulously fair will the judgment be?

“He comes to judge the earth: He shall judge the world with righteousness, and the people with His truth.” Psalm 96: 13.

13. How perfectly will life’s harvest correspond with the sowing?

“Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man sowed, that shall he also reap. For he that sowed to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that sowed to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.” Galatians 6:7, 8.

14. Into how many classes will men be separated in the judgment?

“Then hear Thou in heaven, and do, and judge Thy servants, condemning the wicked, to bring his way upon his head; and justifying the righteous, to give him according to his righteousness.” 1 Kings 8:32.

15. Where are the names of the saved recorded?

“And another book was opened, which is the book of life.” Revelation 20:12. “Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven.” Luke 10:0. (See also Philippians 4: 3; Revelation 3:5.)

16. What will God do with the names of the wicked?

“And the Lord said unto Moses, Whosoever has sinned against Me, him will I blot out of My book.” Exodus 32:33.

17. Will God take pleasure in passing sentence upon sinners?

“Say unto them, As I live, said the Lord God, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked; but that the wicked turn from his way and live.” Ezekiel 33:11.

18. By what has His mercy been shown?

“The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.” 2 Peter 3:9.

19. Of what, however, are the wicked warned?

“Though a sinner do evil an hundred times, and his days be prolonged, yet surely it shall not be well with the wicked, neither shall he prolong his days, which are as a shadow; because he feared not before God.” Ecclesiastes 8:12, 13. (See also Ezekiel 18:24.)

20. What should a knowledge of the judgment therefore lead us to do?

a. Turn ourselves from the path to ruin. “Therefore I will judge you, O house of Israel, every one according to his ways, said the Lord God. Repent, and turn yourselves from all your transgressions; so iniquity shall not be your ruin.” Ezekiel 18:30.

b. Accept God’s way of salvation. “For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believes in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.” John 3:16. As the blowing of the shofar horn urged Israel to prepare for the final judgment of Yom Kippur, so God’s last message declares, “The hour of His judgment is come.”

When Will the Judgment Begin?

1. WHAT preparation has God made for the Great Assize?

“But the Lord shall endure for ever: He has prepared His throne for judgment.” Psalm 9:7.

2. Is Jesus ready for His part in the judgment?

“Who shall give account to Him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead.” 1 Peter 4:5.

3. Has the time of its commencement been fixed?

“We has appointed a day, in the which He will judge the world in righteousness by that Man whom He has ordained.” Acts 17:31.

4. By what symbolic representation are we able to glimpse the unseen activities of heaven?

“For every high priest is ordained to serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the tabernacle: for, See, said He, that thou make all things according to the Pattern showed to thee in the mount.” Hebrews 8:3-5.

The earthly sanctuary comprised two apartments: the first, called the “holy place,” in which the high priest interceded for the sins of Israel day by day through the year, and the second, the “most holy place,” into which the high priest entered once each year on the day of atonement to dispose finally of all the sins confessed by the Israelites through the year.

5. When He ascended to heaven, what priestly ministry did Jesus take up?

“For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us.” Hebrews 9:24. (See also Hebrews 4:14.)

The ministry which Jesus began when He ascended was a continual intercessory ministry on our behalf, and corresponds with the continual service in the first apartment of the sanctuary on earth. "Seeing then that we have a great High Priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God," says the writer of the Epistle to the Hebrews let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need." Hebrews 4:14-16.

6. What momentous service took place on the day of atonement, and what did it typify?

a. Repentant sinners pronounced clean. "For on that day shall the priest make an atonement for you, to cleanse you, that you may be clean from all your sins before the Lord." Leviticus 16:30.

b. Probation of unrepentant comes to an end. "For whatsoever soul it be that shall not be afflicted in that same day, he shall be cut off from among his people." Leviticus 23:29.

Of the ancient day of atonement the Jewish Encyclopedia says: "God, seated on His throne to judge the world opened the book of records; it is read, every man's signature being found therein. The great trumpet is sounded; a still small voice is heard; the angels shudder, saying, 'this is the day of judgment.' On New Year's Day the decree is written; on the day of atonement it is sealed who shall live and who are to die." - Volume XI, Page 286.

As the continual service in the first apartment of the sanctuary beautifully portrays the intercessory work of Christ since His return to heaven, so this service in the second apartment of the sanctuary on the day of atonement vividly emphasizes that the patience of God will one day have an end, and mercy will give place to judgment.

7. What constituted the central ceremony of the day of atonement services?

a. The selection of two goats. "And he [Aaron] shall take of the congregation of the children of Israel two kids of the goats for a sin offering. And Aaron shall cast lots upon the two goats; one lot for the Lord, and the other lot for the scapegoat." Leviticus 16:5-8.

b. The shedding of the blood of the Lord's goat. "And Aaron shall bring the goat upon which the Lord's lot fell, and offer him for a sin offering." Leviticus 16:9.

c. The carrying of the blood into the most holy place. "Then shall he kill the goat of the sin offering, that is for the people, and bring his blood within the veil, and sprinkle it upon the mercy seat, and before the mercy seat." Leviticus 16:15.

"The one goat was sacrificed as a sin offering; its blood was carried into the holy place, and the mercy seat was sprinkled with it. Guilt was therefore cancelled; by this shedding of blood there was remission." - Eadie's Biblical Cyclopedia, Page 577.

8. In what spectacular event did the cleansing of the earthly sanctuary culminate?

"And there shall be no man in the tabernacle of the congregation when he goes in to make an atonement in the holy place, until he come out." Leviticus 16:17.

The emerging of the high priest from the sanctuary to pronounce the congregation "clean" from all their "sins before the Lord" most fitly foreshadows the "appearance" of Jesus in the clouds of heaven at His second advent. From this it becomes obvious that the investigative judgment of the heavenly day of atonement precedes the second coming of Christ. The return of Jesus is for the purpose of announcing the outcome of this solemn judgment session. When the trump of God sounds the distinction between the dead "in Christ" and the wicked dead, as also between the living righteous and the living wicked, will already have been made.

9. With what symbolic act did the day of atonement end?

"And Aaron shall lay both his hands upon the head of the live goat, and confess over him all the iniquities of the children of Israel, and all their transgressions in all their sins, putting them upon the head of the goat, and shall send him away by the hand of a fit man into the wilderness: and the goat shall bear upon him all their iniquities unto a land not inhabited: and he shall let go the goat in the wilderness." Leviticus 16:21, 22.

This symbolic act fittingly portrays the final judgment of Satan by which the execution of divine justice will be consummated.

"The phrase 'scapegoat,' by which the strange term Azazel is rendered in our version, came from the hircus emissarius of the Vulgate. The term Azazel may mean the 'apostate one' a name which Satan merits, and which he seems to have borne among the Jews. It was Satan that brought sin into the world; and this seduction of man adds to his guilt, and consequently to his punishment. Sin, though pardoned, is yet hateful to God, and it cannot dwell in His sight: it is removed away to a 'land not inhabited'-severed from God's people, and sent away to man's first seducer. The sins of a believing world are taken off them, and rolled back on Satan, their prime author and instigator. Though the penalty is remitted to believers, it is not remitted to him who brought them into apostasy and ruin. The tempted are restored, but the whole punishment is seen to fall on the arch tempter." - Eadie's Biblical Cyclopedia, article "Scapegoat," page 577.

10. Did the Israelites know the precise time of the symbolic day of atonement?

"Also on the tenth day of this seventh month there shall be a day of atonement: it shall be an holy convocation unto you; and you shall afflict your souls, and offer an offering made by fire unto the Lord." Leviticus 23:27.

11. What prophetic intimation as to the date of the world's day of atonement was actually given centuries before Christ?

"And he said unto me, Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the [heavenly] sanctuary be cleansed." Daniel 8:14.

As the date of the day of atonement was definitely specified in the calendar of the Jewish year, so the time of the heavenly judgment session is as definitely indicated in the calendar of time. As shown in the study, "Heaven's Zero Hour," page 592, this period of 2300 literal years began in the year 457 BC and terminated in AD 1844.

12. How was Israel warned of the imminent approach of the day of atonement?

“Speak unto the children of Israel, saying, In the seventh month, in the first day of the month, shall you have a Sabbath, a memorial of blowing of trumpets, an holy convocation.” Leviticus 23:24.

“The month of Ellul is here, and the monitory sounds of the shofar [the trumpet that was to be blown from the first to the tenth day of the seventh month, Psalm 81:3, 4] are to be heard every morning in the orthodox synagogues, advising preparation for the day of memorial, and the final judgment of Yom Kippur.” - The Jewish Exponent.

Thousands today are seeking nothing but the fleeting things of this world. The Word of life advises, “Before the decree bring forth, seek you the Lord.”

13. Will there be a warning of imminent judgment in the latter days corresponding to the blowing of the trumpets before the day of atonement?

“And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to Him; for the hour of His judgment is come.” Revelation 14:6, 7.

“This angel flying in the midst of heaven may refer to an organized society of Christians who carry the burden of preaching the everlasting gospel to all the world.” - Dr. Adam Clarke.

14. Who would be called out by this judgment-hour message?

“Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.” Revelation 14:12.

15. Did such a warning message develop at the appointed time? It surely did, as has been shown in the study, “Heaven’s Last Appeal,” page 640.

16. By what proclamation will Heaven’s judgment session be concluded?

“He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.” Revelation 22:11.

17. What urgent appeal should therefore be heeded by all? .

“Before the decree bring forth. Seek you the Lord all you meek of the earth, which have wrought His judgment; seek righteousness, seek meekness: it may be you shall be hid in the day of the Lord’s anger.” Zephaniah 2:2, 3.

Elijah is a type of God’s last-day messengers who will announce the coming of “the day of the Lord.”

The Day of the Lord

1. BESIDE presiding over the investigative judgment in heaven, what other work is committed to Jesus? “The Father has given Him authority to execute judgment also, because He is the Son of man.” John 5:26, 27.

“A drama, however long drawn out, must have a last act. The last act of the drama of history is The Day of the judgment.” Bishop of Derry in “Primary Convictions,” page 137.

2. When will the execution of God’s judgments begin?

“And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord comes with ten thousands of His saints, to execute judgment upon all.” Jude 14, 15.

“As Christ stands in the center of history, so also He stands at the beginning and the end; He is the Logos, by whom and in whom all that is was created. He is Judge of the world in the power of the Father. Because He is thus the Mediator of creation and the consummation, He can be Lord of all ages, like God Himself, the Beginning and the End.”-H. D. Wendland in “The Kingdom of God,” page 151.

3. By whom will the work of separation between the righteous and the wicked be carried out? “The angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just.” Matthew 13: 49.

4. What will the judgment day be to the wicked?

“Blow you the trumpet for the day of the Lord comes, for it is nigh at hand; a day of darkness and of gloominess, a day of clouds and of thick darkness, as the morning spread upon the mountains.” Joel 2:1,2. (See also Joel 1:15; Zephaniah 1:14, 15; 2:2, 3.)

For the wicked it will be a terrible day, for at long last they will drink to the dregs the cup of the wrath of God.

5. What will be their fate?

“The Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with His mighty angels, in flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ.” 2 Thessalonians 1: 7, 8.

6. How will the righteous feel in the day of Christ’s return?

“Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as He is, so are we in this world.” 1 John 4: 17.

7. With what will they be rewarded?

a. Praise, honor, and glory. “That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perished, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honor and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ.” 1 Peter 1:7.

b. An inheritance. “Then shall the King say unto them on His right hand, Come, you blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world.” Matthew 25:34.

The “crowning day that’s coming by and by” will be a crowning (lay not only of Christ, but of His people as well. And the crown that we, if faithful, will then receive will not be like the laurel wreath given to the victors in ancient Greece, which after a time became faded and limp, but a “crown of glory that fades not away.” 1 Peter 5:4.

8. Where will the righteous be taken?

“In My Father’s house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto Myself; that where I am, there you may be also.” John 14:2, 3.

9. For how long will they dwell in the heavenly mansions?

“They lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.” Revelation 20: 4.

10. What further judgment will take place during the millennium?

a.Saints investigate the cases of the wicked. “Do you not know that the saints shall judge the world?” 1 Corinthians 6: 2.

b.They judge also the wicked angels. “Know you not that we shall judge angels?” 1 Corinthians 6:3.

During this period God will convene a last judgment session to pronounce final sentence upon the wicked, upon Satan, the instigator of the great rebellion, and upon the angels who associated with him. The hearts of the saints will be solemnized as they learn more of the desperate revolt which brought such terrible consequences to heaven and earth.

11. What vision of the final judgment scene at the end of the millennium was shown to John?

“And I saw a great white throne, and Him that sat on it, and I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life. And the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.” “And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.” Revelation 20:11, 12, 15.

12. In what parables does Jesus add further details of the last judgment?

The parables of the wheat and tares (Matthew 13: 24-30), and the sheep and goats (Matthew 25:31-46).

13. What should a knowledge of the judgment lead us to do?

“Because I will do this unto thee, Prepare to meet thy God, O Israel.” Amos 4:12. “Him that comes to Me I will in no wise cast out.” John 6: 37.

Like a mountain torrent, the wafer of life is abundant and free. “Whosoever will. let him fake the water of life freely,” is Christ’s invitation. Revelation 22:17.

How Will God Punish the Wicked?

1. How remote is salvation from the wicked?

“Salvation is far from the wicked: for they seek not Thy statutes.” Psalm 119: 15 5.

2. What is reserved for sinners?

“But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasured up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God.” Romans 2:5.

3. In what will their fate consist?

a.Cut off and rooted out. “But the wicked shall be cut off from the earth, and the transgressors shall be rooted out of it.” Proverbs 2:22. (See also Psalm 37:9, 22.)

b.Cast out. Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.” Matthew 22:13. “For such as be blessed of Him shall inherit the earth; and they that be cursed of Him shall be cut off.” Psalm 37:22.

“What must it be to be rejected and cast away from the presence of God and from the glory of His power, thrown out upon the waste-heap of the universe, for ever given up!” - C. H. Spurgeon

4. To what will they be consigned?

“The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God.” Psalm 9:17.

5. Will “hell” consist of life in torment?

“He that believes on the Son has everlasting life: and he that believes not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abides on him.” John 3:36. “For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.” Romans 6:23. “But Thou, O God, shall bring them down into the pit of destruction.” Psalm 55:23.

“The appropriate punishment of an evil life is not to be baked in an oven; it is to become incapable of seeing God here or hereafter.” - Dr. W. R. Inge.

6. By what illustrations is their utter end vividly portrayed?

a.Dashed in pieces like a potter’s vessel. “Thou shall dash them in pieces like a potter’s vessel.” Psalm 2: 9.

b.Vanish as early dew. “Therefore they shall be as the early dew that passes away.” Hosea 13:3.

c.Fly away as dreams. “He shall fly away as a dream, and shall not be found: yes, he shall be chased away as a vision of the night.” Job 20:8.

7. What will become of their name and their memory?

“The face of the Lord is against them that do evil, to cut off the remembrance of them from the earth.” Psalm 34:16.

8. How irrevocable will their end be?

“There are the workers of iniquity fallen: they are cast down, and shall not be able to rise.” Psalm 36:12. “Therefore shall his calamity come suddenly; suddenly shall he be broken without remedy.” Proverbs 6:15.

9. How enduring will be their punishment?

a. Everlasting punishment. “And these shall go away into everlasting Punishment.” Matthew 25:46.

b. Everlasting judgment. “Of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment.” Hebrews 6:2.

The greatest punishment of the wicked will be the consciousness of being shut out for ever from the kingdom of God.

c. Everlasting banishment. “But if thou forsake Him, He will cast thee off for ever.” 1 Chronicles 28: 9.

d. Everlasting death. “The man that wandered out of the way of understanding shall remain in the congregation of the dead.” Proverbs 21:16.

e. Everlasting destruction. “Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of His power.” 2 Thessalonians 1:9.

f. Everlasting contempt. “And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt.” Daniel 12:2.

g. Everlasting darkness. “These are wells without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest; to whom the mist of darkness is reserved for ever.” 2 Peter 2:17.

Good words from the Good Book. “He that overcomes shall not be hurt of the second death.”

h. Everlasting oblivion. “Thou has rebuked the heathen, Thou has destroyed the wicked, Thou has Put out their name for ever and ever.” Psalm 9:5.

10. What death, then, is most to be feared?

“And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear Him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.” Matthew 10:28.

11. Who only will be safe from it?

“He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit said unto the churches; He that overcomes shall not be hurt of the second death.” Revelation 2:11. “Blessed and holy is he that has part in the first resurrection: on such the second death has no power.” Revelation 20:6.

Will Hell Burn For Ever?

1. WHAT will be God’s instrument of judgment upon the wicked?

“But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.” 2 Peter 3:7.

2. What will be its source?

“For our God is a consuming fire.” Hebrews 12:29.

3. What special name is given to these fires of divine wrath?

“And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear Him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell [Gehenna].” Matthew 10:28.

Gehenna means the “valley of Hinnom,” and has reference to a valley on the south side of Jerusalem which was “used as a place to cast carcasses of animals and malefactors, which were consumed by fire constantly kept up.” - Liddell and Scott’s Greek Lexicon.

4. For whom are they prepared?

“Depart from Me, you cursed [sinners], into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels.” Matthew 25:41.

5. In what ways will the fire burn the wicked?

a. It will rain upon them. “Upon the wicked He shall rain snares, fire and brimstone, and an horrible tempest: this shall be the portion of their cup.” Psalm 11:6. (See also Revelation 20:9.)

b. Earth will melt beneath them. “The heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heart, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up.” 2 Peter 3:10.

Lot and his daughters flee from Sodom. The utter destruction of the cities of the plain is used in the Scriptures as a type of the eternal punishment of sinners.

6. What will become of the wicked engulfed in the fire?

a. Destroyed. “And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of His mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of His coming.” 2 Thessalonians 2:8.

b. Consumed. “But the wicked shall perish, and the enemies of the Lord shall be as the fat of lambs: they shall consume; into smoke shall they consume away.” Psalm 37:20.

c. Not be. “For yet a little while, and the wicked shall not be: yes, thou shall diligently consider his place, and it shall not be.” “Yet he passed away, and, lo, he was not: yes, I sought him, but he could not be found.” Psalm 37:10, 36.

“There are plenty of representations from the earliest times of the judgment of the individual, of the bringing of the soul before the enthroned Christ but no hint or suggestion that the tortures of hell entered into their thoughts either in the cemeteries or at home.” - Clement F. Rogers, MA, in “The Fear of Hell,” pages 35, 36.

7. By what vivid illustrations is their utter end emphasized?

a. Like chaff or stubble. “He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.” Matthew 3:12. (See also Malachi 4:1.)

b. Like smoke and wax. “As smoke is driven away, so drive them away: as wax melts before the fire, so let the wicked perish at the presence of God.” Psalm 68:2. (See also Psalm 37:20.)

8. From what expressions has the notion wrongly arisen that the fires of judgment will burn for ever?

“Then shall He say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from Me, you cursed, into everlasting fire.” Matthew 25: 41. (See also Matthew 18:8.) “Where their worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched.” Mark 9:44.

“Everlasting fire” does not mean fire that will burn for ever, but which will produce everlasting results, that is, the eternal destruction of sinners. Similarly “unquenchable fire” does not mean fire which will not be put out, but which cannot be put out until it has done its work.

9. What other statement is erroneously quoted as an evidence of the endless existence of the wicked in torment, and how is it to be understood?

“And the smoke of their torment ascended up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever received the mark of his name.” Revelation 14:11.

This passage has reference not to the last judgment, but to the “torment” of the wicked when the plagues are poured out upon them. (Revelation 16:1,2.) The Greek word “aeon” here translated “for ever” does not always mean “without end,” but is to be understood by the context. In 1 Samuel 1:22,28, for instance, “for ever” means “as long as he lives.” (See also Exodus 21:6; Jonah 1:17; 2:6) Thus torment “for ever” means while ever life lasts. When life ceases the torment will cease.

10. What examples have we of “everlasting destruction,” which corroborate the fact that neither sinners nor the fires of hell burn for ever?

“Even as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.” Jude 7. (See also 2 Peter 2:6.)

The wicked population of Sodom and Gomorrah were utterly destroyed and the cities of the plain turned to ashes (2 Peter 2:6). Thus will it be in the final judgment by fire. Not eternal torment, but eternal destruction, will be the fate of the wicked.

11. What name given to the fiery judgment finally settles for us the fate of the wicked?

“And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.” Revelation 20:14. (See also Revelation 21:8.)

24. The Kingdom of God

Shall We Go to Heaven?

1. WHAT is “heaven”?

a. God’s dwelling-place. “Is not God in the height of heaven?” Job 22:12. “Hear Thou in heaven Thy dwelling- place.” 1 Kings 8: 30.

b. The place of His throne. “And immediately I was in the Spirit: and, behold, a throne was set in heaven, and One sat on the throne.” Revelation 4: 2. “The Lord’s throne is in heaven.” Psalm 11:4.

2. Who dwell with the Father in heaven?

a. Christ. “Who being the brightness of His glory, and the express image of His person, and upholding all things by the word of His power, when He [Jesus] had by Himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high.” Hebrews 1:3.

b. The angels. “A fiery stream issued and came forth from before Him: thousand thousands [angels] ministered unto Him, and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before Him.” Daniel 7:10.

c. Certain saints translated without seeing death. “By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death.” Hebrews 11:5. “And there appeared a chariot of fire and horses of fire, and parted them both asunder; and Elijah went up by a whirlwind into heaven.” 2 Kings 2:11. (See also Matthew 17:3.)

d. Certain others who have been raised from the dead and translated. “And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose, and came out of the graves after His resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.” Matthew 27:52, 53. (See also Matthew 17:1-3.)

The glorious hope of the eternal home shines brighter with the passing of the years.

3. What is Jesus’ desire for all who love and serve Him?

“Father, I will that they also, whom Thou has given Me, be with Me where I am; that they may behold My glory, which Thou has given Me.” John 17:24.

4. What is He now preparing in heaven for them? “I go to prepare a place for you.” John 14: 2.

5. How may we co-operate in storing up treasure in heaven?

“But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust does corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal.” Matthew 6: 20.

6. When will the saints be privileged to enter the heavenly mansions?

“If I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto Myself; that where I am, there you maybe also.” John 14: 3.

7. Is it intended that the righteous should dwell for ever in heaven?

“The heaven, even the heavens, are the Lord’s: but the earth has He given to the children of men.” Psalm 115:16. (See also Isaiah 45:18.)

8. Where are they to enjoy their eternal reward?

“Behold, the righteous shall be recompensed in the earth: much more the wicked and the sinner.” Proverbs 11:31.

“God’s kingdom is a kingdom for the earth, for the whole of creation; it aims at becoming a kingdom on earth. It is not a metaphysical realm behind or above this world, lying behind the things of this world or hovering over them that is the direct and simple import of the New Testament message of the kingdom of God.” - H. D. Wendland in “The Kingdom of God,” page 146.

As Christ fulfilled prophecy by entering Jerusalem in triumph, so will it be when with His redeemed He enters the gates of heaven. Psalm 24.

9. For how long will heaven be their temporary home?

“And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.” Revelation 20:4.

10. At the end of the millennium what will become of the present earth?

“But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night. In the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up.” 2 Peter 3:10. “The world passes away, and the lust thereof.” 1 John 2:17.

11. How will the earth be prepared for the reception of the saints?

“For as the new heavens and the new earth, which I will make, shall remain before Me, said the Lord, so shall your seed and your name remain.” Isaiah 66:22.

12. How spectacular will be their return to the renewed earth?

“And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.” Revelation 21:1, 2. (See also Revelation 21:10.)

13. What promises will then be fulfilled?

a. Saints inherit the earth. “For evildoers shall be cut off: but those that wait upon the Lord, they shall inherit the earth.” Psalm 37: 9.

b. They will dwell there forever. “The righteous shall inherit the land, and dwell therein for ever.” Psalm 37:29.

Thinking of every trusting child of God, both young and old, Jesus prayed: “Father, I will that they also, whom Thou has given Me, be with Me where I am; that they may behold My glory.” John 17:24.

“Thy Kingdom Come”

1. FOR what purpose did Jesus become incarnate?

“Pilate therefore said unto Him, Art Thou a king then? Jesus answered, Thou says that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world.” John 18:37.

2. What kingdom did He come to retrieve?

“And thou, O tower of the flock, the stronghold of the daughter of Zion, unto thee shall it come, even the first dominion; the kingdom shall come to the daughter of Jerusalem.” Micah 4:8.

“Civilization has proved bankrupt in the power to save itself. That power must come from that other sphere of the spirit.” Dr. Lang, Archbishop of Canterbury.

3. By whom was Christ’s future sovereignty acclaimed at His birth?

The angels. “For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Savior, which is Christ the Lord.” Luke 2:11.

4. How did God recognize the efficacy of Christ’s life and death?

a. Anointed Him. “Thou has loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, even Thy God, has anointed Thee with the oil of gladness above Thy fellows.” Hebrews 1:9.

b. Seated Him at His own right hand. “Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God; angels and authorities and powers being made subject unto Him.” 1 Peter 3:22.

5. What has He conferred upon Christ?

“And Jesus came and spoke unto them, saying, All Power is given unto Me in heaven and in earth.” Matthew 28:18. “Thou has put all things in subjection under His feet.” Hebrews 2:8.

6. By what names is His sovereignty indicated?

a. Prince. “Him has God exalted with His right hand to be a Prince and a Savior.” Acts 5:31.

b. King. “Who is this King of glory? The Lord strong and mighty, the Lord mighty in battle.” Psalm 24:8.

c. Lord and Christ. “And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of His Christ; and He shall reign for ever and ever.” Revelation 11:15.

d. King of kings and Lord of lords. "Which in His times He shall show, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords." 1 Timothy 6:15.

7. Has He yet attained the exalted place to which He is ordained? "But now we see not yet all things put under Him." Hebrews 2:8.

8. What promise of ultimate triumph has God made to Him?

"The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit Thou on My right hand, until I make Thy foes Thy footstool." Acts 2:34, 35.

9. For what is He, therefore, waiting expectantly?

"From hence forth expecting till His enemies be made His footstool." Hebrews 10:13.

10. What spectacle will one day be seen by an amazed world?

a. Christ coming, seated upon His throne. "When the Son of man shall come in His glory, and all the holy angels with Him, then shall He sit upon the throne of His glory." Matthew 25:31.

b. Crowned with a golden crown. "And I looked, and behold a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat like unto the Son of man, having on His head a golden crown, and in His hand a sharp sickle." Revelation 14:14.

11. Who will constitute Christ's royal retinue?

"And the armies which were in heaven followed Him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean." Revelation 19:14.

12. By whom will His triumph be announced?

"And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of His Christ; and He shall reign for ever and ever." Revelation 11:15.

13. What authority will Christ assume?

a. Higher than the kings of the earth. "Also I will make Him My Firstborn, higher than the kings of the earth." Psalm 89:27.

b. Government on His shoulder. "For unto us a Child is born, unto us a Son is given: and the government shall be upon His shoulder: and His name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace." Isaiah 9:6.

14. Of what will Christ's throne be a continuation?

"He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto Him the throne of His father David." Luke 1:32.

15. What names indicate that Christ's kingdom will be radically different from the kingdoms of the world which it supersedes?

a. Kingdom of heaven. "And saying, Repent you: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand." Matthew 3:2. (See also 4:17.)

b. Kingdom of Christ and God. "For this you know, that no whore monger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, has any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God." Ephesians 5:5.

16. How wide will His kingdom be?

"He shall have dominion also from sea to sea, and from the river unto the ends of the earth." Psalm 72:8.

17. How many will it include?

"And there was given Him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all People, -nations, and languages, should serve Him." Daniel 7:14.

18. By what familiar name will the metropolis of the kingdom of God be called?

"But you are come unto mount Zion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels." Hebrews 12:22.

19. In what spectacular way will it be established in the earth?

"And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and showed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God." Revelation 21:10. (Read verses 11-26.)

20. By what will Christ's rule be characterized?

a. Righteousness. "Behold, a king shall reign in righteousness, and princes shall rule in judgment." Isaiah 32:1. "And He shall judge the world in righteousness, He shall minister judgment to the people in uprightness." Psalm 9:8. Across the centuries the prophets have descried with joy the coming kingdom of God.

b. Peace. "And the work of righteousness shall be peace; and the effect of righteousness quietness and assurance forever." Isaiah 32:17.

21. How enduring will be the kingdom of God?

"Of the increase of His government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever." Isaiah 9:7. "His dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and His kingdom that which shall not be destroyed." Daniel 7:14.

22. What will be the feelings of the redeemed when Jesus is Governor of the nations?

"O let the nations be glad and sing for joy: for Thou shall judge the people righteously, and govern the nations upon earth." Psalm 67:4.

God's "New Order"

1. How completely will the earth be renovated for the occupation of the redeemed?

"For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind." Isaiah 65:

17.

"The creation of the new heavens and the new earth began with the gospel, and is consummated at the second advent." - Vitringa.

2. What transformations will God effect in inanimate nature?

a. Productivity restored. "The wilderness and the solitary place shall be glad for them; and the desert shall rejoice, and blossom as the rose." Isaiah 35:1. (See also Isaiah 32:15.)

b. All trace of the curse removed. "Instead of the thorn shall come up the fir tree, and instead of the brier shall come up the myrtle tree." Isaiah 55:13.

c. Extremes of climate eliminated. "Neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat." Revelation 7:16.

d. Nature will again rejoice and sing. "The mountains and the hills shall break forth before you into singing, and all the trees of the field shall clap their hands." Isaiah 55:12.

"The whole creation is to undergo a corresponding change and become the fit scene of the glory of God's children." - Dr. Gifford.

3. What harmony will be restored among the animal creation?

"No lion shall be there, nor any ravenous beast shall go up thereon, it shall not be found there." Isaiah 35:9.

"The wolf and the lamb shall feed together, and the lion shall eat straw like the bullock: and dust shall be the serpent's meat. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain, said the Lord." Isaiah 65:25. (See also Isaiah 11:6-9.)

4. How abundant will be the sustenance of the redeemed?

"They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters." Revelation 7:16, 17.

5. Of what, in particular, will they be privileged to partake?

a. The tree of life. "Blessed are they that do His commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city." Revelation 22:14.

b. Water of life. "And He said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely." Revelation 21:6.

6. What perfection of health will they enjoy?

a. All disease eliminated. "And the inhabitant shall not say, I am sick." Isaiah 33:24. "Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped. Then shall the lame man leap as an hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing." Isaiah 35:5, 6.

b. All pain banished. "Neither shall there be any more Pain." Revelation 21:4.

7. How developed will be their knowledge and understanding?

"For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known." 1 Corinthians 13:12.

8. Above all, what will have been removed from the hearts of men?

"And an highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called the way of holiness; the unclean shall not pass over it." Isaiah 35:8. "And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defiles, neither whatsoever worked abomination, or makes a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life." Revelation 21:27.

"Heaven's gates are wide enough to admit of many sinners, but too narrow to admit of any sin." - Howells.

9. How will the redeemed occupy themselves?

a. Build and inhabit. "And they shall build houses, and inhabit them." Isaiah 65:21.

b. Sow and reap. "And they shall plant vineyards, and eat the fruit of them." Isaiah 65:21.

The sun is about to set on the old order of sin and death. God's promise reads: "Behold, I make all things new." Revelation 21:5.

c. Administer their great inheritance. "Then shall the King say unto them on His right hand, Come you blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world." Matthew 25:34.

10. What security of possession will all enjoy?

a. Possessions will be secure to all. "And My people shall dwell in a peaceable habitation, and in sure dwellings, and in quiet resting places." Isaiah 32:18.

b. None will be robbed of the reward of their labor. "They shall not build, and another inhabit; they shall not plant, and another eat: for as the days of a tree are the days of My people, and Mine elect shall long enjoy the work of their hands." Isaiah 65:22.

11. What harmony will reign among men?

a. Wars will have ceased forever. "He makes wars to cease unto the end of the earth; He breaks the bow, and cuts the spear in sunder; He burns the chariot in the fire." Psalm 46: 9.

b. Peace will have come to stay. "And the work of righteousness shall be peace; and the effect of righteousness quietness and assurance forever." Isaiah 32: 17.

12. What joy will the redeemed find in the life and occupations of the kingdom?

“This is the day which the Lord has made; we will rejoice and be glad in it.” Psalm 118:24. “For you shall go out with joy, and be led forth with peace.” Isaiah 55:12. (See also Zephaniah 3:16, 17.)

13. What will pass for ever from their experience?

“And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.” Revelation 21:4. “And there shall be no more curse.” Revelation 22:3.

14. With Joshua of old, what will be the triumphant testimony of the redeemed?

“Not one thing hath failed of all the good things which the Lord your God spoke concerning you; all are come to pass unto you, and not one thing hath failed thereof.” Joshua 23:14.

15. What will be the greatest privilege of the kingdom?

“And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself shall be with them, and be their God.” Revelation 21:3. “The throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and His servants shall serve Him: and they shall see His face.” Revelation 22:3, 4.

“What passage of Scripture conveys the sweetest description of heaven?” a teacher asked a class in which the famous Thomas A Kempis was a pupil. One student replied, “There shall be no more sorrow there.” Another, “There shall be no more death.” Another, “They shall see His face.” But Thomas, the youngest in the class, responded, “And His servants shall serve Him.”

16. How will they express their feelings of gratitude to God?

“Therefore the redeemed of the Lord shall return, and come with singing unto Zion; and everlasting joy shall be upon their head: they shall obtain gladness and joy; and sorrow and mourning shall flee away.” Isaiah 51:11.

17. How long will the life of the redeemed endure?

“The righteous shall inherit the land, and dwell therein for ever.” Psalm 37:29.

18. What satisfaction will Jesus have for all His suffering? “He shall see of the travail of His soul, and shall be satisfied.” Isaiah 53:11.

Who Will Be There?

1. WHAT did Jesus promise to His disciples?

“And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as My Father has appointed unto Me; that you may eat and drink at My table in My kingdom.” Luke 22:29, 30.

2. To what does Paul declare the redeemed are called?

“That you would walk worthy of God, who hath called you unto His kingdom and glory.” 1 Thessalonians 2:12.

3. How universal did he declare the gospel invitation to be?

“For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon Him. For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.” Romans 10:12,13.

Among the kingdoms of men there are discriminations as to who may or may not be granted the privileges of citizenship. Some nationalities are completely barred to certain countries. But in the kingdom of God there are no prohibitions. “All” are invited. “Whosoever will” may come.

4. What transfer of citizenship will God effect on behalf of those who seek an entrance into His kingdom?

“Giving thanks unto the Father, which has made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: who has delivered us from the power of darkness, and has translated us into the kingdom of His dear Son.” Colossians 1: 12, 13.

5. What price has Jesus paid for our spiritual “naturalization”?

“Forasmuch as you know that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers; but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot.” 1 Peter 1: 18, 19.

6. How may we indicate our acceptance of the divine invitation?

a. Love to God. “The seed also of His servants shall inherit it: and they that love His name shall dwell therein.” Psalm 69: 36.

b. Obedience to His commandments. “Blessed are they that do His commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city.” Revelation 22:14.

7. Into what spiritual fellowship are the subjects of Christ’s kingdom even now being gathered?

“But you are a chosen generation, a royal Priesthood, an holy nation, a Peculiar people. That you should show forth the praises of Him who has called you out of darkness into His marvelous light: which in time past were not a people, but are now the People of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.” 1 Peter 2:9, 10.

Yes, “Blessed are they that do His commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city.” Revelation 22:14.

Amidst the kingdoms of men there is in process of formation another kingdom, not outward and temporal, but invisible and spiritual. It is called the “kingdom of grace” to distinguish it from the future “kingdom of glory,” its visible and final expression. Its subjects are scattered over the face of the earth. They differ in color, and dress, and customs. They speak many tongues.

Yet they are bound together by the ties of a common allegiance to the coming King and a common citizenship in the coming kingdom of God.

8. What privileges of the kingdom are already theirs?

“And have tasted the good Word of God, and the powers of the world to come.” Hebrews 6:5.

Though the subjects of the kingdom must wait a little longer for their full inheritance, the spiritual privileges of the kingdom are immediately available. Its joy lights up their faces and shines forth from their countenances. Its peace possesses their hearts in the midst of the clash and confusion of the kingdoms of men.

9. What has God also given to the redeemed as a hope of their full inheritance?

“In whom also after that you believed, you were sealed with that Holy Spirit of Promise, which is the hope of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of His glory.” Ephesians 1:13, 14.

10. With what universal proclamation will the gospel invitation, close?

“And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached all the world for a witness unto all nations.” Matthew 24:14.

11. From where will the subjects of the kingdom be drawn?

“And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven.” Matthew 8:11.

12. What epoch-making event will immediately follow the close of the gospel witness? “And then shall the end come.” Matthew 24:14.

13. What wonderful day will then dawn for the saints?

“The Ancient of Days came, and judgment was given to the saints of the Most High; and the time came that the saints possessed the kingdom.” Daniel 7:22.

14. What welcome will they receive at the hands of the King?

“Then shall the King say ‘Unto them on His right hand, Come, you blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world.’” Matthew 25:34.

15. How will they feel as they enter into the promised inheritance?

“And the ransomed of the Lord shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away.” Isaiah 35:10.

www.CreationismOnline.com